

AN EXEGETICAL EXPOSITION ON THE SPIRITUAL
AND PSYCHOLOGICAL WARFARE OF ABUSE
PERTAINING TO TRAUMA



PHILOSOPHIAE DOCTOR

URSULA STEYN



PHILOSOPHIAE DOCTOR

AN EXEGETICAL EXPOSITION ON THE
SPIRITUAL AND PSYCHOLOGICAL WARFARE
OF ABUSE PERTAINING TO TRAUMA

by

URSULA STEYN

Master In Theology Of Counselling

Submitted in accordance with the requirements for the degree

PHILOSOPHIAE DOCTOR IN THEOLOGY OF COUNSELLING

At the

ST CLEMENTS PRIVATE SWISS UNIVERSITY

PROMOTOR

PROF DR CONNIE M J BRAND (DLitt PhD Mth)

OCTOBER 2013

OWNERSHIP AND RIGHTS TO INTELLECTUAL PROPERTY

This research business model and intellectual property contain herein, “An Exegetical Exposition On The Spiritual And Psychological Warfare Of Abuse Pertaining To Trauma”, is the property of Ursula Steyn.

The degree course of Master of Theology in Counselling undertaken at the St Clements Private Swiss University in Switzerland is conditional upon all intellectual property of this researcher, Ursula Steyn.

Ursula Steyn

Date

oooOooo

DECLARATION OF AUTHENTICITY

I, the undersigned, URSULA STEYN, declare that this thesis is my original work, gathered and utilized especially to fulfil the purposes and objectives of this study, and has not been previously submitted to any other university for a higher degree.

Ursula Steyn

Date

oooOooo

DEDICATION

I dedicate this thesis to the **Lord, Jesus Christ**, from whom I initially received this concept, and opened unknown doors to gain knowledge to prepare myself to help others and be an instrument for Him. I thank Him for protecting me and showing His grace by buying me time to compile this thesis.

I further dedicate this thesis to my foundation in life, my husband, **Jacques**; and the four cornerstones in our lives, our children: **Tiana, Shaun Herman, Chanel**, and **Jacques Phillip**. I thank all of you for the encouragement and faith you had in me to deliver this thesis.

oooOooo

ACKNOWLEDGEMENT

I would like to express my gratitude to my promotor, Professor Doctor Connie MJ Brand for giving me the opportunity to complete this thesis.

To the professionals who insisted not to be named: thank you for the psychological insight; sharing research papers and surveys; the lawyers; the women in charge of the Shelters; the welfare workers; counsellors and therapists for your opinions and the brainstorming.

A special word of gratitude to the people who took part in interviews, small scale surveys, sharing the traumatic past, and keeping me posted on new updates. Thank you to all my new teenage friends for your opinions on everything that we discussed – remember our prayers.

Thank you to all the parents who gave permission and gave access to their children's opinions.

Thank you to my mother, **Tina**, and siblings, **Ionita** and **Olga**, who shared their traumatic life experiences, and encouraged me to finish the thesis. You are very precious and close to my heart. Remember: even if the seas are rough, only Jesus can make it still. To my brother-in-law, **Anton**, thank you for reminding me to look up.

oooOooo

SUMMARY

AN EXEGETICAL EXPOSITION ON THE SPIRITUAL AND PSYCHOLOGICAL WARFARE OF ABUSE PERTAINING TO TRAUMA

By

Ursula Steyn

PROMOTOR : Prof Dr Connie MJ Brand (DLitt PhD MTh)

DEGREE : Philosophiae Doctor of Theology

INSTITUTION : St Clements Priate Swiss University

Keywords: Abuse; Abusive Spirits; Child Abuse; Cults; Domestic Violence; Incestuous Family; Misogynist; Misandrist; Women Abuse.

As the title of this thesis indicates, this thesis relates to interpret or explain the spiritual and psychological warfare of abuse pertaining to trauma. This thesis will present an overview of all the different forms of abuse that is destroying the family unit as such.

Chapter One will be a discussion on Abuse by making use of historical recordings as case studies to show that Abuse does not exist since the first official diagnosis in psychology of fifty years ago. Biblical case studies were exposed to show that sexual abuse existed since the beginning. This chapter further discuss statistics in South Africa according to police stations across the country.

Chapter Two examined and defines cults across the world to expose them for abusing the Bible by calling themselves Christians. Cults share characteristics that could not be overlooked by this thesis and are discussed. Active cults were compiled in a

compendium that is under radar at this point in time. Reports of cult leader or member abusers are exposed.

Chapter Three is an understanding of the mental state of the abused and the abuser. Both were psychologically clarified to give an explanation of the origin of the abusive behaviour and the psychological trauma the abuse inaugurates.

Chapter Four expose the causes and consequences of abuse. This thesis discovered the consequences of Incest and the role it plays in the child's adulthood. This chapter construed on children who murder their own parents. Abuse in all its forms were examined to discover the impact it has on the health of the abused.

Chapter Five interpret the law protecting women in the case of domestic violence. This leads to the thought of investigating cyber bullying and sexting, and its legal implications for a child.

Chapter Six investigated the evil supernaturalism of the enemy's objective behind all forms of abuses. The image of God is under attack by the enemy, and this chapter interpret its motive. Abuse spirits was identified and discussed.

oooOooo

TABLE OF CONTENTS (Abbreviated)

Theme	i
Ownership and Rights of Intellectual Property	iii
Declaration of Authenticity	vii
Dedication	ix
Acknowledgements	xi
Summary	xiii
Table of Contents (Abbreviated)	xvii
Table of Contents	xix
Prolegomena	1
CHAPTER I : A Pedagogical on Abuse in Global History	21
CHAPTER II : An Examination on Religions and Cult Abuse	77
CHAPTER III : An Interpretation of the Mental State of the Abused and the Abuser	139
CHAPTER IV : An Exposé on the Causes and Consequences of Abuse ...	207
CHAPTER V : An Interpretation of the Law Protecting Abused Women and Children	279
CHAPTER VI : An Investigation of the Evil Supernaturalism of the Enemy's Objective Behind Abuse	341
CONCLUSION	415
BIBLIOGRAPHY	423
ABBREVIATIONS	449
TERMS & DEFINITIONS	467
LIST OF FIGURES	477
CERTIFICATE OF EDITING	485



PHILOSOPHIAE DOCTOR

TABLE OF CONTENTS

Prolegomena	1
 <i>Chapter I : A Pedagogical on Abuse in Global History</i>	
1. INTRODUCTION	21
1.1 The Origin of Abuse	22
2. ABUSE IN THE BIBLE	29
2.1 Biblical Case Studies	29
2.1.1 Dinah, Daughter of Jacob	30
2.1.2 The Rape of the Unknown Concubine	31
2.1.3 Tamar, Daughter of King David	32
2.1.4 Lot and his daughters	34
2.1.4.1 Synchronized Menstrual Cycles Explained	35
2.1.5 Child Sacrifices in the Old Testament	36
2.1.5.1 Jephtah's Triumph	37
2.1.5.2 Mennaseh	38
2.1.5.3 Abused for Spreading the Gospel	40

2.2	Abusers Twist the Bible	46
2.2.1	Scripture That Is Being Abused By Occult Movements	47
2.2.1.1	The Freemasons	47
2.2.1.2	The International Order of the Rainbow for Girls	48
2.2.1.3	The Jehovah's Witnesses	48
2.2.1.4	Individuals Twisting the Bible	49
3.	GLOBAL HISTORIC CASE STUDIES AND STATISTICS	51
3.1	Nero, 5 th Emperor of Rome	51
3.2	Vlad Dracula	52
3.3	King of France, Louis XIII	53
3.4	Genghis Kahn	54
3.5	Leopold II of Belgium	56
3.6	Josef Mengele	57
3.7	Idi Amin Dada	59
3.8	Aileen Wournos	60
3.9	Advocate Barbie	61
3.10	The Modimolle Monster	63
3.11	New Delhi Bus Drive	65
3.12	Bredasdorp Rape and Murder	67
3.13	Police Brutality – SAPS	71
3.13.1	Statistics of Police Brutality	71
4.	CONCLUSION	74

Chapter II : An Examination on Religions and Cult Abuse

1.	INTRODUCTION	77
2.	DEFINING CULTS	79
2.1	Characteristics of Cults	81
2.2	What is a Cult?	82
3.	A COMPENDIUM OF CULTS AND RELIGIONS OF REPORTED ABUSE CASES	83

3.1	Children of God / The Family International	84
3.2	The Davidian Branch	85
3.3	Devadasi	87
3.4	Jesus-Amen	88
3.5	Mormons	89
3.5.1	Mormon School: West Ridge Academy – The Utah Boys Ranch	90
3.6	Sangomas	91
3.6.1	The Sangoma of South Africa	93
3.7	Scientology	95
3.8	Catholic Church	97
3.8.1	A Survey for the U.S. Conference of Catholic Bishops	97
3.9	Breslav Sect	99
3.10	Da Free John	100
3.11	The Twelve Tribes	101
3.12	The Church of Satan; Satanism; Related Satanic Cults	103
3.12.1	Satanic Abuse Cases Reported Globally	105
3.13	Jehova’s Witnesses	112
3.14	Macombe And Candomblè	113
3.15	Martial Arts	114
3.16	Muktananda Paramahansa	115
3.17	Forum	116
3.18	Kashi Church Foundation	117
3.19	Reverend Ike	119
3.20	The Rites of Passage	119
3.20.1	The Australian Mardudjara Aborigines	120
3.20.1.1	Initiation – Symbolic Death, Spiritual Rebirth	121
3.20.2	Other Australian Aborigine	122
3.20.3	Barabaig of East Africa	122
3.20.4	Luiseño Indians of Southern California, USA	122

3.20.5	The Satere Mawe Tribe of the Amazon	124
3.21	The Amish	125
3.22	Female Genital Mutilation	128
4.	CHRISTIAN LEADERS AND ABUSE	129
4.1	Reported Cases of Pastors and Sexual Abuse	129
4.2	The Abuse of the Word of God	131
4.2.1	Karma	132
4.2.2	Reincarnation	133
4.2.3	Communication	134
4.2.4	Men are God	135
5.	CONCLUSION	137

Chapter III : An Interpretation of the Mental State of the Abused and the Abuser

1.	INTRODUCTION	139
1.1	Statistics On Sex Offenders	141
2.	THE MENTAL STATE OF THE ABUSER	143
2.1	The Excuses Of Abusive Behaviour	144
2.2	Coercive Control	145
2.2.1	The Misogynist	147
2.2.2	Characteristics Of A Misogynist	149
2.2.3	The Misandrist	151
2.2.3.1	Characteristics Of A Misandrist	152
2.3	Sexual Abuse	153
2.3.1	Sexual Brutality Within The Marriage Between Man And Wife	154
2.3.2	Sexual Brutality Between A Man And A Woman	156
2.3.3	Inside the Mind of a Child Sex Offender	157
3.	THE MENTAL STATE OF THE ABUSED	159
3.1	The Genesis Of Abuse	159

3.2	The Resilience Of The Abused	163
3.2.1	The Social Status	163
3.2.2	The Financial Implication	164
3.2.3	The Failing Support System	164
3.2.4	The Emotional Status	165
3.2.4.1	Abused Women and Depression	165
3.2.4.1.1	Forms of Depression	166
3.3	The Exodus Of Abuse	168
3.3.1	Hotlines In Major Countries	169
3.3.2	Help, Assistance And Legal Aid	170
4.	WHEN PARENTS MAKE THEIR CHILDREN THEIR SEXUAL PARTNERS	172
4.1	The Father And His Daughter	172
4.1.1	Techniques Adults Use To Prepare A Child	176
4.1.1.1	The Kiss-It-Better Factor	177
4.1.1.2	A Mother's Voice	177
4.1.2	The Indirect Abuser	179
4.2	The Mother And Her Son	181
4.3	Incestuous Families	183
5.	PSYCHOLOGICAL TRAUMA OF THE ABUSED	184
5.1	The Effects Of Domestic Violence On Children	184
5.1.1	Research Studies On Negative Effects By Mothers	185
5.2	The Effects On Children's Behaviour Towards The Mother	187
5.2.1	Blaming The Mother For Leaving The Abusive Father	187
5.3	The Effects On Children's Behaviour Towards The Father	189
5.4	When the Abused Abuse Themselves	190
5.4.1	Self-Mutilation as a Result of Abuse	191
5.4.2	Suicidal Tendencies of Victims	191
5.4.2.1	Myths About Suicide	193
6.	SOLUTIONS FOR THE ABUSIVE BEHAVIOUR	195

6.1	Rehabilitation For Sexual Offenders	195
6.1.1	Cognitive Therapy In Group Sessions	196
6.1.2	Chemical Castration	197
6.1.3	Sexual Fantasies Of Sexual Offenders	199
6.2	Rehabilitation For Women Abusers	200
6.2.1	Anger Management	201
6.2.1.1	Physiological Anger Indications	202
7.	CONCLUSION	204

Chapter IV : An Exposé on the Causes and Consequences of Abuse

1.	INTRODUCTION	207
2.	CAUSES AND CONSEQUENCES OF ABUSE	209
2.1	Causes of Abuse	210
2.1.1	The Motive of Rape and Sexual Assault	211
2.1.1.1	The Anger Rape	212
2.1.1.2	The Power Rape	213
2.1.1.3	The Sadistic Rape	214
2.1.1.4	Stranger Rape	215
2.2	Consequences of Abuse	216
2.2.1	The Effect on Children From A Domestic Violence Home	217
2.2.2	Childhood Trauma and the Consequences in Adulthood	219
3.	AN OVERVIEW ON CHILDREN WHO ABUSE THEIR PARENTS	220
3.1	Causes of Abusive Behaviour from Teenagers	221
3.2	Typical Model of Interaction between parent and a Teenager	222
3.3	Children Who Kill Their Parents	225
3.3.1	Children Who Killed	227
4.	VICTIMS OF ABUSE AVENGING THEIR ABUSERS	229
4.1	Forgiving the Abuser	230
4.2	Forgiving Oneself	233

4.2.1	Characteristics of Depression	234
4.3	Forgiving the Sexual Abuse Perpetrator	235
5.	PHYSICAL, SEXUAL AND VERBAL ABUSE AS A HEALTH RISK	237
5.1	Physical Reports of Domestic Violence Victims	238
5.1.1	Domestic Violence Reports	239
5.1.2	Sexual Abuse Reports	239
5.1.3	Head Trauma Reports	242
5.1.3.1	Shaken Baby Syndrome	244
5.1.3.2	The Developing Brain and Abuse	245
5.2	Child Sexual Abuse and Its Consequences	246
5.2.1	Child Sexual Abuse and Health Risks	247
5.2.2	Borderline Personality	248
5.2.2.1	Causes of Borderline Personality Disorder	249
5.2.2.2	Symptoms of Borderline Personality Disorder	250
5.2.2.3	Treatment of Borderline Personality Disorder	251
5.2.3	Sexually Transmitted Diseases and Sexually Abused Children	253
5.2.4	Child Sexual Abuse and The Crime Investigator	254
5.3	Verbal Abuse as a Mental Health Risk	256
5.3.1	Types of Verbal Abuse	257
5.4	Physical Abuse As A Result Of Verbal Abuse In the Next Generation	272
6.	CONCLUSION	275

Chapter V : An Interpretation of the Law Protecting Abused Women and Children

1.	INTRODUCTION	279
2.	DIFFERENT FORMS OF WIFE BATTERING	282
3.	THE LEGAL PROCESS AND THE DOMESTIC VIOLENCE ACT	285
3.1	Battered Women's Syndrome	286

3.1.1	The Cycle of Violence	289
3.1.1.1	First Phase: Tension Building	289
3.1.1.2	Second Phase: Explosion	290
3.1.1.3	Third Phase: Contrition	290
3.1.2	The Effect of the Cycle of Violence on Women	291
3.2	Coercive Control	293
3.2.1	Methods and Techniques of Coercive Control	295
3.2.1.1	Pseudo-Guilt	296
3.2.1.2	Emotional and Physical Depletion	297
3.2.1.3	Basic Necessities	298
3.2.1.4	Pregnant Women	298
3.2.1.5	The Children's Response	299
3.2.1.6	The Abused Woman's Response	299
3.2.1.7	The Emotional Bond	300
3.2.1.8	Returning to the Abuser	301
3.2.2	Statistics of Woman Battering in South Africa	301
3.3	Post-Traumatic Stress Disorder	303
3.3.1	Symptoms of PTSD	303
3.3.2	Emotional Distresses	305
4.	THE LEGAL PROCESS AND THE DOMESTIC VIOLENCE ACT OF SOUTH AFRICA	306
4.1	The Legal Process	307
4.1.1	The Protection Order	307
4.1.2	The Application	308
4.1.3	The Court Hearing	309
4.1.4	Breaching the Protection Order	311
4.1.5	Criminal Charges	311
4.1.6	The Role of the SAPS	312
4.1.6.1	Implementation Problems of the SAPS	314
4.1.7	Reasons for Dropping the Charges	315

5.	LEGISLATION ON TECHNOLOGY IN CYBER BULLYING	316
5.1	Cyber Bullying	317
5.1.1	Types of Cyber Bullying	318
5.1.1.1	Sexting and Child Pornography	321
5.1.1.2	The Association between Cyber Bullying and Sexting	322
5.1.2	The Effect of Cyber Bullying	323
5.1.3	Cyber Bullying in South Africa	324
5.2	Reported Cases of Cyber Bullying and Sexting in South Africa	325
5.3	Legislation of Cyber Bullying in South Africa	328
5.3.1	Crimen Injuria	329
5.3.2	Assault	330
5.3.3	Criminal Defamation	330
5.3.4	Extortion	331
5.3.5	An Interdict And A Defamation Claim	331
5.4	Legislation of Sexting in South Africa	332
6.	SHELTERS AND HOMES FOR BATTERED WOMEN AND THEIR CHILDREN IN SOUTH AFRICA	335
7.	CONCLUSION	338

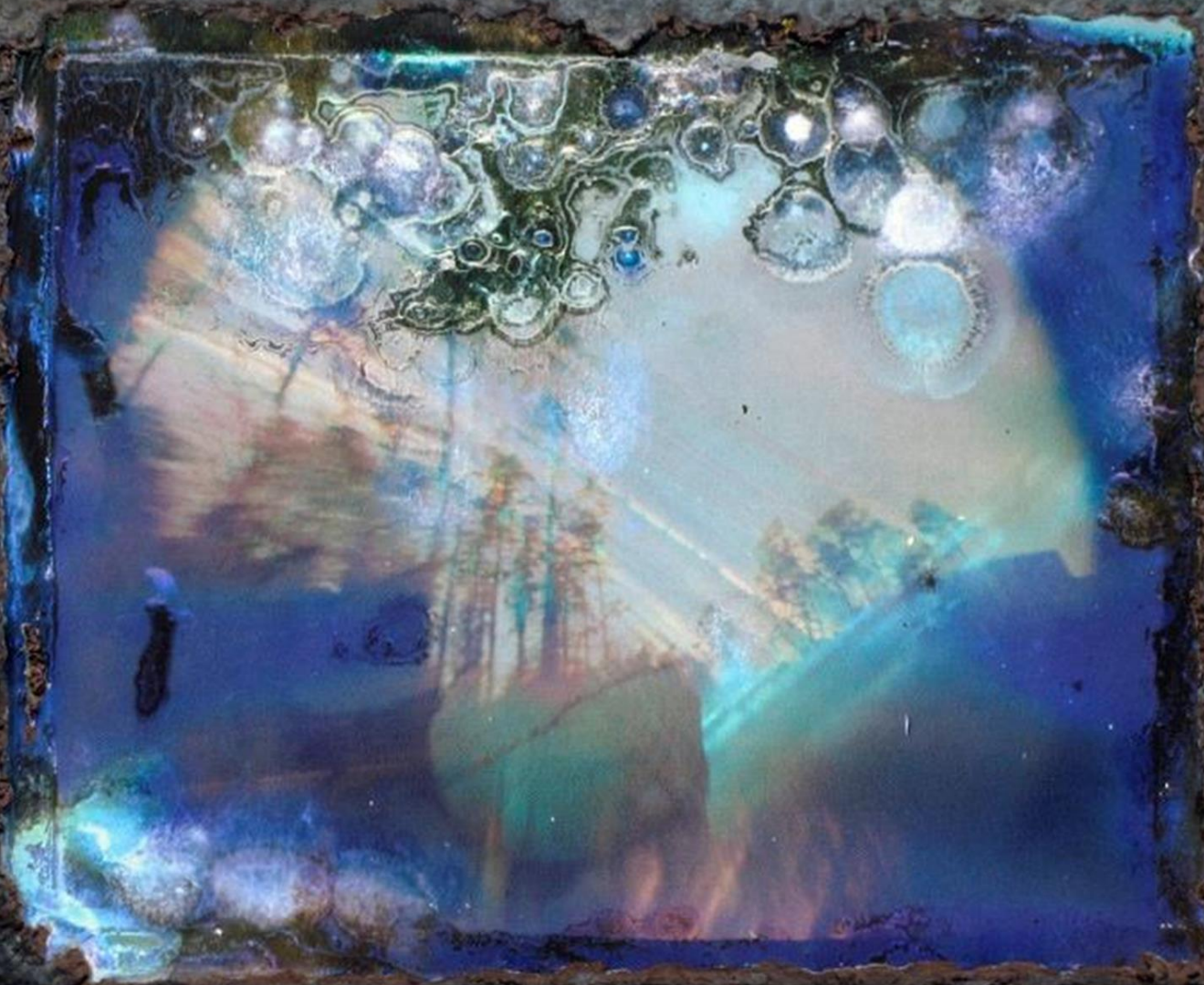
Chapter VI : An Exploration on Healing the Spirit and the Mind and the Abuser

1.	INTRODUCTION	341
2.	THE WORKS OF THE SPIRITUAL ENEMY IN ABUSE	342
2.1	Jezebel And Unforgiveness	345
2.1.1	Jezebel and Bitterness	346
2.2	Jezebel's Right Wings	348
2.2.1	The Spirit of Religion	348
2.2.2	The Spirit of Athaliah	350
2.2.3	The Spirit of Manipulation	351
2.2.4	The Spirit of Self Righteousness	352

2.2.5	The Spirit of Rejection	352
3.	THE SPIRITUAL MOTIVE BEHIND ABUSE	354
3.1	The Methods of Satan	357
4.	THE IMAGE OF GOD AND MAN'S SUPPORT SYSTEM	360
4.1	The Image of God	361
4.2	Man's Support System	363
5.	DEMONOLOGY OF PHYSICAL ABUSE	364
5.1	The Cycle of Abuse	365
5.1.1	The Explosion Phase	365
5.1.2	The Honeymoon Phase	367
5.1.3	The Build Up Phase	368
5.1.3.1	The Spirit of Division	369
5.1.3.2	The Spirit of Separation	369
5.1.3.3	The Spirit of Repetition	370
5.2	The Control behind physical abuse	372
6.	DEMONOLOGY OF VERBAL AND EMOTIONAL ABUSE	372
6.1	The Spirit of Pride and its Adherents	373
6.2	The Spirit of Contention and its Adherents	374
6.2.1	The Misogynist and Misandrist's Demonic Influences	375
6.2.1.1	The Spirit of Jealousy	376
6.2.1.2	The Spirit of Perversion	379
7.	DEMONOLOGY OF SEXUAL ABUSE	381
7.1	Succubus And Incubus	382
7.1.1	The Spirit of Eroticism	382
7.1.2	The Spirit of Salacious	383
7.1.3	The Spirit of Wanton	383
7.1.4	The Spirit of Incest	384
7.1.5	The Spirit of Fear	384
7.1.6	Unclean Spirits	385

7.1.7	The Spirit of Rape	385
7.1.8	The Spirit of Bondage	386
7.2	The Water Spirits	387
7.2.1	The Characteristics of Water Spirits	387
7.3	Spirits Attacking the Victim of Sexual Abuse	393
7.3.1	The Spirit of Perversion	394
7.3.2	The Spirit of Haughtiness	395
7.3.3	The Spirit of Jealousy	396
7.3.4	The Spirit of Spider Spirit	398
7.3.5	The Spirit of Shame	399
7.4	Sexual Demonic Spirits From A Global Point of View	400
7.4.1	Aliens – America	401
7.4.2	Angels – The Nephilim, Hebrew Bible	402
7.4.3	Alp – German Folklore	404
7.4.4	Orang Minyak – Malaysia	404
7.4.5	Liderc – Hungary	405
7.4.6	Lilu – Jewish Folklore	405
7.4.7	Encantado – Amazon, Brazil	406
7.4.8	Incubus and Succubus – World Belief	407
7.4.9	Trauco and La Fiura – Chiloè, Chile	408
7.4.10	Popobawa – Zanzibar, Africa	409
8.	CONCLUSION	410
	CONCLUSION	415
	BIBLIOGRAPHY	423
	ABBREVIATIONS	449
	TERMS & DEFINITIONS	467
	LIST OF FIGURES	477
	CERTIFICATE OF EDITING	485

PROLEGOMENA





PHILOSOPHIAE DOCTOR

PROLEGOMENA

1. INTRODUCTION / BACKGROUND

The proposed intend of the thesis will deem to spiritually elucidate Abuse in its various forms. Abuse encompasses a multitude of issues including, but not limited to, physical, sexual, and emotional trauma to the spirit.

The impact of abuse upon later psychological behaviour have however, only recently be addressed. The trauma of abuse are widely accepted to be life-altering experiences; however connecting such experiences to later violent behaviour creating a circle of abuse for example, can be challenging.

The Bible does exhort Christians to forgive, but it does not insist to return to the abusive circumstances. Forgiveness does not imply reconciliation and not necessarily to continue on as before. This thesis' aim is to deliver meaning to the controversial question of why women return to their abusers or furthermore, why children unconditionally love an abusive parent.

Therefore, this thesis deems to bring an understanding on the trauma of Abuse in its spiritual, mental, emotional and physical classifications bringing coherent awareness on its spiritual effects in later life that is resultant in psychological effects.

In spite of the fact that abuse has been viewed as a private matter, one needs to understand the significant negative effects, especially from a spiritual point of view, that is stagnantly acknowledged. One might say that society's attention is focused on violence between strangers. Family violence or domestic violence occurs in numerous forms, and emotional and psychological trauma can be caused by a single occasion.

The thesis deems to expose the evil principalities that are actively inducing abuse in every abusive situation. The spiritual entities are being overlooked and not directly identified.

Researchers cannot explain why a woman accepts the abuse; they seem passive and await the blows to rain upon them without protecting herself. The argument of *misogynistic* behaviour in men must therefore be investigated and the Control factor must be addressed.

The fact that there are men who love to hate women to take control over his woman cannot be overlooked in the spiritual sense. Therefore this proposed thesis will investigate this behaviour to expose the demonic activity of this control factor in men and passive factor in women for example that is present.

It can be thus far assumed that The *Spirit of Passivity* and the *Spirit of Intimidation* are working along with the *Spirit of Stupor* and the *Jezebel Spirit*, causing the abused woman to be numb, blank, in a trance of daze, and unable

to protect herself emotionally and physically as the abuse climax. Stupor would hypnotize an abused woman into a drunken stare, a deep sleep state or trance. Stupor hardens the heart and blinds the eyes and deafens the ears to God.

An abused woman is not able to cry out to God for help as she is spiritually numb. She will not be able to renew her mind and defend herself against her abuser. The abuser however, is overpowered by the Spirit of Religion and a Jezebel Spirit that is leading to be in control.

The Spirit of Religion is Satan's secret weapon. Men are still under the old religious influence of being dominant over women. Jesus Christ said that man and woman are equal more than two thousand years ago. Men cannot treat their wives as obedient objects.

The Spirit of Fear cannot be ignored, due to the fact that he creates the abusive incident. A spirit that is born from this situation is the *Woman-Hating Spirit*. Abusers almost always possess this spirit; they are under the Spirit of Religion that caused them to hate his woman as soon as she became his wife, the mother of his children. Abusers have these spirits in their bloodline and are diagnosed as the generational cycle of abuse in psychological case studies.

Abuse in women, the elderly and children creates emotional and psychological symptoms of trauma such as shock, denial, or disbelief, uncertainty, anxiety, fear, depression, guilt, shame and self-blame; these mental states in the field of psychology will be discussed in depth; parallel to this discussion is the evil spirits that is born and active from the abuse.

The proposed proposal deems to elaborate on these symptoms an abused person may spiritually suffer, following a traumatic abusive event, which goes

unattended without therapy resulting in unforgiveness that causes bitterness. It is important to stress that abuse not only has psychological effects, but extreme spiritual effects that is liable for the cycle of abuse.

The importance of the effects of abuse in its spiritual form can occur even in utero. Words are spoken upon the unborn child almost always causes spiritual impairment; in the case where the unborn child is unwanted, it senses the rejection that forms the stronghold for that spiritual aftermath. This early traumatic experience intensifies the object of separation and alienation from a beloved (or the lack thereof) caused by loveless parenting and divorce.

An expectant woman that endures physical abuse has magnitudes of trauma, not only for her, but for the unborn human life developing in her abdomen. Trauma in utero can be the root cause of rejection. This leads to the rejection of the self, and result in the broken self-image, due to the fact that man was made in the image of God; therefor the spirit of the child is distorted from his identity in God and later, gender identity.

The human is firstly spirit, and live within a physical body, the spirit needs to be filled with the precise nourishment to receive the love of God. The Lord wants to feed the abused with His words of Truth, and the Spirit and life contained in those words. He wants the abused to live in the power of the cross, knowing that in the giving of His body, Jesus made every provision for the physical and material well-being; and in the giving of His blood he has met every spiritual need, cleansing the abused from sin and breaking every power of the enemy.

The abusive patriarch is not only abusing his wife, but use the Bible as a defence in twisting Scriptures, which leads to global disbelief in Christianity. God is not abusive, the abuser is at fault:

No, in your heart you devise injustice, and your hands mete out violence on the earth.

Psalm 58:2 (NIV)

Women and children have considerable psychological importance in the household. Abuse occurs within primary relationships that are expected to be protective, supportive, and nurturing. Women and children's ties to their families, even to the abuser, are very important; child victims may feel torn between a sense of belonging and a sense of fear and apprehension.

Even if a child is in a foster home, the parents of that household are considered his father and mother. Boys are targets in such cases, as they would experience physical and sexual assault. Adult men who were abused tend to block the childhood abuse, and it manifests later in his adult life with dramatic consequences.

"The man who hates and divorces his wife," says the LORD, the God of Israel, "does violence to the one he should protect," says the LORD Almighty...

Malachi 2:16 (NIV)

Many divorced couples are prey for perpetrators. Children are unprotected from the mother's new companion. In many reported cases of sexual abuse, young girls experienced a sexual encounter with the stepfather. Boys are also targets for an outsider.

Divorces not only damages the family home, it leave doors open for abusers. Statistics has shown that children cannot be trusted with an adult that is close to the household, due to the fact that molested children knew the perpetrator.

Anger, resentment, and bitterness often develop before or after birth in response to abuse of oneself or of one parent by the other. The anger of many women toward men is traceable to their awareness from inside the womb of the abuse of their own fathers against their mothers. If that abuse is sexual, the child in the womb experiences it first hand.

Children who experience abuse from a parent, who feel they were not protected from the other parent, often feel anger toward both parents. Psychologists and therapist testified how the mother was indirectly rejected for not protecting her child against sexual abuse. She was seen as a co-abuser.

Anger and resentment can develop at any time, over any issue. Anger at others often involves self-blame as well, especially if the root events occur early in life, since young children tend to blame themselves for anything that goes wrong around them.

In addition, the boundaries between marital conflict and women abuse can be blurred in general population surveys, minimizing the true impact of women abuse on adult victims and their children.

Also, symmetry between the rates of violence reported by men and women are likely to occur when an episode of violence within the context of severe marital conflicts is grouped together with the patterns of intimidation, domination, and threat that characterize women abuse.

The greater the power, the more dangerous the abuse.

Edmund Burke¹

The Biblical mandate that “every man should be master in his own house” is being abused for eternity. The head of the household could have respect due to the fact that he was a loving protector and provider for his household, or he could have respect due to the fear inflicted upon his household. The authority of the head of the household can be abused, and therefor spiritually in err.

2. PROBLEM STATEMENT

The statistics of Abuse are in question. Certain statistics display different types and forms of abuse within the family home, the church, the educational institution and foster care homes for example. The problem here is how accurate are the statistics? Many women stated in research surveys that they do not want to report or cannot report any form of abuse for different reasons.

In a South African context, some cases are never being reported to the South African Police Department, due to the officers’ lack of knowledge and training of the personnel, especially in the rural areas. Abuse victims from rural areas are having physical difficulty reporting their cases to the police as it seems to be common, or they are rejected to file a complaint by the police.

In addition to the problem, abused women in South Africa, along with their children, almost always have a lack of resources or they are unaware of their legal rights. Police officials’ respond to abuse cases are insufficient and problematic. Women that expects an abusive attack but is not in the middle of

¹ Abuse Quote: <http://www.brainyquote.com/quotes/keywords/abuse.html>

an attack, has no police assistance. Even if abuse is persistent, there is no guarantee to obtain a protection order. The South African legal system and law enforcement do little to help abused women with their children; the legal process for abused children is an endless court case with a minimum percentage of convictions.

Studies revealed that women feared to ask police for assistance due to the fact that their partner might have a violent response afterwards. This study alone is in conflict with the Statistics of South Africa as abuse cases are under-reported.

From a spiritual point of view, this proposed thesis will evaluate the spiritual problem, which of the evil spirits is responsible for abuse; the question however is which spirit must be addressed in deliverance to set the abuser free from his abusive natures.

A woman and child's spirits are vulnerable to the attacks of the spiritual enemy. The spiritual enemy is consistently interfering in a child's life to prevent the child to have trust and believe in God, and women to become man-haters. Abuse and trust is in conflict.

Therefore, the candidate will investigate the spiritual impact of the abused to expose that the spiritual enemy is establishing demonic strongholds in the heart of the family, the wife, and from a very early age of human life, the child.

In various religions and believe systems in South Africa, women and children are being abused in all forms, and it is acknowledged as their "culture." This proposed thesis tends to concentrate on this field to prevail that women and children are overwhelmed with trauma to be accepted in their culture or even religion to earn the respect of the elders.

Certain adults are still in inner conflict due to a traumatic event in their childhood. The questions however arise, how can they be healed of the trauma of abuse? Which evil spirit should be addressed in deliverance?

3. PURPOSE & RESEARCH QUESTIONS

The objective of this thesis is to study different forms of abuse, portray the causes and consequences of abuse, and expose the evil spirits of abuse to address it in deliverance by its name.

It is hypothesized that the spiritual enemy desires to annihilate the spiritual imminece of a child to circumvent the child to live in the sovereignty of God's ways, and that he is a family eradicator. The purpose here will illustrate that Satan, the spiritual enemy has no mercy when he activate the evil spirits to cause abuse to attack the innocent that will be hurt spiritually.

This proposed thesis will also examine the opinions of the Psychology, Science and Criminological fields that frame the trauma in the event of Abuse. The purpose is not to discard their opinions, but to advance potential healing techniques.

3.1 Research Questions

The thesis tended to answer the following questions:

- What are the most likely spiritual causes of abuse?

- What are the most likely consequences of abuse?
- What are the traumatic consequences of incest where the parent sexually abused his/her child?
- What role does rejection, bitterness, wrath, unforgiveness, hatred and rebellion etc. play in abuse?
- Can the abuser be rehabilitated from his abusive nature, what is this abusive nature, can this nature be characterised?
- Which demonic entities are actively focussing on Abuse?
- Does the Word of God address Abuse, Can God be liable for Women and/or Child Abuse?
- Can Spiritual Warfare make a difference against Abuse?
- Can this trauma of the abused be healed through Biblical counselling, where can women be counselled, what is the availability options?
- Why do the abused remain in the abusive relationship, why is she passive and numb, why is she unable to defend herself?
- How can a mother turn a deaf ear to the abuse of her own child's cries?
- Are women, with their children, supported in the legal system of South Africa? What does the Law say about online bullying amongst children?

3.2 Aims

The aims will include the following actions as a prospective contribution to the field.

- To provide an overview of the effect of trauma on women and child abuse in a spiritual sense.

- To unveil the strategies of the spiritual enemy with regard to the purity of children in their fragile stage of life, or by pacifying women in the event of abuse.
- To spiritually expound abuse in cults and religions from a global perspective
- To educate people of the spiritual enemy's strategy and plan to defile family relationships, and to demonstrate the possible evil tactic to result in delinquency.
- To exegete on abuse and investigate the twisting of God's Word to justify abuse.

4. OBJECTIVES

The thesis will corroborate that the abused can overcome the trauma of abuse opposed to those who reject healing of the soul through the Holy Spirit of God. This proposed thesis will deliver confirmation that even though Psychology, Science and Criminological acknowledge trauma in all its forms, they do not recognize the demonic activity involved during abuse, and therefore cannot heal the abused's spirit comprehensively.

5. DEMARCATION OF THE FIELD OF STUDY (SCOPE AND LIMITATIONS)

This thesis will investigate the spiritual context of Abuse in a family context. The abused is exposed to the spiritual destruction of the spiritual enemy, and when his dark forces are active.

It will prove that there is a deficiency on post-treatment due to the lack of knowledge. The thesis will expose the evil spirits that are actively responsible for physical, sexual and verbal abuse.

It will not be limited to the head of the household as the father, in single parent homes, the mother is the head of the household, and she can be an abuser herself; the abuse a mother imposes upon her children cannot be overlooked. The fact that there are mothers, who are spectators of their own child's abuse, that must be investigated.

This proposed thesis will exclude the following:

- Parenting skills on child rearing, child nutrition and education
- Detailed studies of the physical development of a child
- Intensive overviews on the Physical and Medical examinations in determining extend of abuse
- Women and children in human-trafficking scenarios
- Children that are trained in military and used in combat
- Legal Recommendations will not be included
- The South African Legislation of the Domestic Violence Act will be investigated
- Political environments, poverty related issues and Apartheid might be referred to, but not discussed in depth
- Discussions on the meaning of marriage or its Biblical meaning

The thesis will prove that the spiritual enemy wants to disrupt the family unit's spiritual wealth through the trauma of abuse, due to the fact that abuse creates fear and the enemy feasts on fear.

The proposed thesis are not limited to a specific race or age group. The women of South Africa, and many women across the globe, are being abused in all forms, and this proposed thesis will investigate the reasons why this abuse is not taken seriously, even if there are strong awareness groups. The fact of the matter is, abuse is not only a health risk, it is a spiritual health risk as well.

This thesis will not refer to homosexual relationships as husband and wife or man and woman; it is not the view of the candidate to recognize such a relationship as a Biblical marriage.

6. THESIS / HYPOTHESIS / RESEARCH STATEMENT

This proposed thesis will examine several abridged hypotheses. This proposed thesis will look into the argumentative controversies of expert's opinion of the abuse and trauma a woman and child must endure in their abusive household circumstances.

The first hypothesis is that the demonic interference during abuse is preventing women and children to believe and trust in the head of the household, which leads to the cynicism in God. The spiritual trauma of Abuse remains, this proposed thesis will prove that the Spirit must be healed and not just the psyche. If the victim were not counselled and ministered, bitterness, hatred, rebellion and wrath might rematerialize in later life. Whether the abused child will become a perpetrator himself or avenge his perpetrator cannot be specified, but enough motivation to be examined.

The second hypothesis is that abuse in religions and cults exists. The thesis will prove that certain rituals and customs can be defined as *par se* abuse.

The third hypothesis is that women in certain countries have no voice against abuse. They are not protected by the law or the government. This thesis will focus on those countries who recently made a difference and stood up against their leaders to protect the abused.

The Fourth Hypothesis is that the spiritual enemy is fighting his spiritual battle in the most gruesome ways, and that he has no remorse. The fact that some mothers turn away from their own child's cries, prove that there is something not only mentally, but spiritually, that is essential to be addressed and the possibility of a traumatic event must be investigated.

7. RESEARCH METHODOLOGY

For the purpose of this study a qualitative research methodology, where possible and available will be used; a quantitative research methodology will be used where applicable.

Statistics will be studied and historic data will be included. This study will acknowledge the viewpoints in the field of Psychology, Criminology and Science; Apologetic Material will be investigated to prove the truth of the Theology.

7.1 Qualitative Research

An extensive literature and internet study will represent in the fields of Psychology, Science, Criminology, Hermeneutics and Theology. This thesis will expose the purpose of Abuse in the spiritual realm.

This thesis will study the published statistics on Abuse. This form of research might be difficult to collect data, as the law protects the victim and the perpetrator's identity; it depends only on reported data. Those who are willing and comfortable with interviews will be acknowledged under an alias.

7.2 Quantitative Research

Statistical data and previous case studies will be examined to show that the given percentage could be higher in certain fields. It is important to note that only applicable published statistics for this research will be studied and challenged.

The opinion of the fields of Psychology, Criminology and Trauma Therapy will be interviewed and recognized. The candidate deems to investigate the South African Police Department on reception of abuse cases.

Shelters and Homes will be interviewed and expectantly co-operate to a questionnaire drawn up by the candidate. The candidate intends to have interviews with lawyers who protect a perpetrator or a victim of abuse. Data were collected to provide an idea of the relationship between parent and adolescent. Research studies were done on a small scale due to participants who does not want to be identified.

7.3 Biblical Research

An exegetical research will be done on references to Women and Child Abuse and its traumatic effects and the persuasion of the Bible. The argumentative

suggestions of abuse will be challenge by the candidate to prove God's goodness despite the existence of evil.

7.4 Literature Research

This proposed thesis will include the following Literature Studies:

- Data collection (books, magazine articles, internet resources, academic publications and papers, conferences, presentations and various dictionaries)
- News articles of Women and Child Abuse that caused outrage
- Literature review (books, internet resources, academic publications and various dictionaries)

- Audio material (Documentaries, television programming, Digital Visual Disks)
- Case studies (Individual, groups, parents, friends, family, academically recognized case studies) of specialized therapists and counselors
- Structured, semi-structured and unstructured interviews

8. ETHICAL CONSIDERATIONS

This proposed thesis proposes to comply with ethical rules governing the conduct of every individual that are willing to participate.

- No person / father / mother / child / teacher / friend / colleague or caregiver's identity whatsoever, will be used without their consent.

- Victims of abuse will all remain anonymous to protect and respect their dignity and privacy. Aliases will be created and the identities will be treated as strictly confidential information. Locations of victims will remain anonymous for protection against their abusers. Shelters
- Interviews with professionals will be arranged with prior planning and notification. Location and distances to be travelled will be taken into account.

9. TERMS AND DEFINITIONS

Terms and Definitions will be created as this thesis progress and summarized at the end of the compilation.

10. ABBREVIATIONS

This proposed thesis will make use of abbreviations during the progress which will be footnoted at its first use.

11. REFERENCING

This thesis' referencing method was based on the Harvard referencing method and will be used in the footnotes and Bibliography throughout the thesis.

12. TABLE OF CONTENTS

CHAPTER 1 : *A Pedagogical on Abuse in Global History*

This Chapter will be a discussion on Abuse from historical recordings of individuals that are infamous for their abusive nature. Statistics will be examined.

CHAPTER 2 : *An Examination on Religions and Cult Abuse*

This Chapter will critically examine cults across the world and identify their characteristics. Cults will be explored to expose how it use the Bible to justify their sexual abusive appetites..

CHAPTER 3 : *An Interpretation of the Mental State of the Abused and the Abuser*

This Chapter will investigate the psychological trauma the victim undergoes such as post-traumatic stress, depression, fear, anger, hatred, unforgiveness, self-pity, blame and any related mental condition. The Abuser's mental state will also be examined to find a possible solution for the abusive nature.

CHAPTER 4 : *An Exposé on the Causes and Consequences of Abuse*

This Chapter will expose the causes, consequences as a result of spiritual development from trauma, to reveal the traumatic outcome of Abuse. An overview on parents who abuse their children and vice versa will be conversed. Incestuous abuse cannot be overlooked and will be examined. Factors that might have an influence on the nature of abuse will be investigated.

Physical, Sexual and Verbal Abuse will be observed as a health risk. The fact that victims avenge their abuser will be discussed.

CHAPTER 5 : *An Interpretation of the Law Protecting Abused Women and Children*

This Chapter will approach abuse in its different forms of wives who are battered by their husbands. It will deliberate on women who murder their husbands to be free from domestic violence. The legal process and the Domestic Violence Act will be critically discussed to show the challenges the battered women and abused child, has to experience before living in harmony. The availability in South Africa of Shelters for the abused, and its challenges will be approached. Online bullying will be looked into to examine how children can be protected by the law.

CHAPTER 6 : *An Investigation of the Evil Supernaturalism of the Enemy's Objective Behind Abuse*

This Chapter will pursue the works of the spiritual enemy and his motive behind Abuse by specifically focusing on traumatic abuse. The image of God will be discussed to show that man's support system, the women, is being threatened by abuse just as the Biblical bloodline were threatened until the birth of Christ. The evil entities behind sexual, verbal and physical abuse cannot be disregarded, and needs to be publicized.

----o0o----

*Deep within you is everything that is perfect,
ready to radiate through you and out into the world.
-Gerald G Jampolsky-*

CHAPTER

I





A PEDAGOGICAL ON ABUSE IN GLOBAL HISTORY

*They will be paid back with harm for the harm they have done.
Their idea of pleasure is to carouse in broad daylight. They are blots
and blemishes, reveling in their pleasures while they feast with you.
With eyes full of adultery, they never stop sinning; they seduce the
unstable; they are experts in greed—an accursed brood!*

2 Peter 2:13-14

1. INTRODUCTION

Adult children are often internally if not outwardly disconnected from Christianity, the church, the Bible, and clergy. Much of their alienation has to do with how the Bible is read and interpreted in the church. Some of it has to do with excessively gendered language for God in hymnody, prayers, and the liturgy. The church's obsession with sexual sin coupled with its poorly developed theology of sexuality only compound the alienation.



A Pedagogical On Abuse in Global History

Survivors, who have been in church their whole life, carry the secret of their **abuse**. They are filled with shame and this erected barriers between them and the love of God. It prevents them to feel safe and loved even if they are among trustworthy people.

Survivors of **abuse**, who experienced decades of patriarchal Biblical interpretation, lived by the reinforced message that men and their desires and needs are what matter the most. Woman and daughters internalized the belief that the Bible teaches that women and daughters exist only to serve men, even if it means to be traumatically dehumanised.

This Chapter will discuss **abuse** cases in the Bible, such as sexual **abuse**. Other forms of **abuse**, for example, verbal **abuse** can only be assumed. Furthermore will this Chapter look into the history of great abusers of power. This history line is then being narrowed down to focus more on actual cases that took place in South Africa in the recent decade.

The **abuse** of power of the South African Police Department's officers is discussed to show that **abuse** is not only within the family home. The **abuse** of power of those who are supposed to protect the abused are highlighted.

1.1 The Origin Of Abuse

The purpose of this chapter is to examine the origin of **abuse** or even when **abusive** nature began; perhaps the question should be what forms of **abuse** occurred and was not considered **abuse** of any form.



A **Canadian** study by Gallup of 2,000 adults has produced incidence rates almost exactly the same as those found in the United States. Latin American family sexual activity--particularly widespread pederasty as part of macho sexuality--is considered even more widespread.¹

In **England**, a *BBC ChildWatch*² program asked its female listeners--a large though admittedly biased sample if they remembered sexual molestation, and, of the 2,530 replies analyzed, 83% remembered someone touching their genitals, 62% recalling actual intercourse.

In **Germany**, the *Institut für Kindheit* has recently concluded a survey asking West Berlin schoolchildren about their sexual experiences, and 80% reported having been molested.³

Childhood in **India** begins, according to observers, with the child being frequently masturbated by the mother, the girl "to make her sleep well," and the boy "to make him manly."

The child sleeps in the family bed, witnesses and in all probability takes part in sexual intercourse between the parents. The child is often "borrowed" to sleep with other members of the extended household, leading to the Indian proverb:

For a girl to be a virgin at ten years old, she must have neither brothers nor cousin nor father.⁴

Childhood is extremely eroticized that, a Western observer stated:

¹ Gallup - Child Abuse: <http://www.gallup.com/poll/139376/Child-Abuse-Underreported-Latin-America.aspx>

² Childwatch: http://www.bbc.co.uk/blogs/pm/2009/03/call_on_the_listener_log_about.shtml

³ Institut für Kindheit: <http://www.f01.fh-koeln.de/forschung/>

⁴ Indian Proverb: <http://www.vice.com/read/the-a-to-z-of-sexual-history-incest>



The little Hindu girls are deflowered by the little boys with whom they play, and repeat together the erotic lessons which their parents have unwittingly taught them on account of the general promiscuity of family life throughout India. In all the little girls of less than ten years of age the complete hymen is wanting. Incest is often the rule rather than the exception."

Child marriage was, of course, a long-standing Indian practice. When laws were passed in 1929 trying to outlaw it, the government was overwhelmed by men insisting that early marriage was an absolute obligation, since little girls were *naturally very sexual* and must be married early if they are to be reserved from seducing adults.⁵ They say:

Cupid overtakes the hearts of girls at an early age, a girl's desire for sexual intercourse is eight times greater than that of males.

Indian mothers also often supported early marriage, openly admitting it was necessary in order to protect their little daughters against rape in the family, saying that:

They were afraid to leave their daughters at home, even for one afternoon, without a mother's eye and accessible to the men of the family.

The Indian subcontinent, in fact, still has many groups, such as the Baiga,

⁵ Child Marriage – India: <http://www.cbn.com/cbnnews/world/2012/June/Innocence-Lost-Indias-Children-Marrying-at-Age-8/>



where actual incestuous marriage is practiced, between fathers and daughters, mothers and sons, brothers and sisters, and grandparents with their grandchildren. It is assumed that disproving the oft-repeated anthropological cliché that "no known tribe has ever permitted incest" due to the fact that if it were allowed society would surely cease functioning.

In many of these villages, the children move at the age of 5 or 6 from the incestuous activities of the family bed to spend the rest of their childhood in sex dormitories, where they are initiated by older youth and men into intercourse with a succession of other children, none for longer than three days at a time, under threat of gang rape.

Childhood in **China** has historically had the same institutionalized rape rituals as in India, including the pederasty of boys, child concubinage, the castration of boys to be used sexually as eunuchs, marriage of young girls to a number of brothers, widespread boy and girl prostitution and the regular sexual use of child servants and slaves. So prevalent was the rape of little girls that Western doctors found that, as in India, few girls entering puberty had intact hymens.

Even the universal practice of foot binding was for sexual purposes, with a girl undergoing extremely painful crushing of the bones of her feet for years in order that men could make love to her big toe as a fetish; her toe will serve as a penis.

Childhood in modern **Japan** still includes masturbation by mothers to put the children to sleep. Parents often have intercourse with their children in bed, and co-sleeping, with parents by physically embracing the child, habitually continues until the child is ten or fifteen.



One recent Japanese study found that over 20% of the time after age 16, daughters sleeps with their fathers. Recent sex surveys report memories of sexual **abuse** even higher than equivalent American studies, and "hot lines" of sexual **abuse** report mother-son incest in almost 34% of the calls. It was recorded that the mother said to her teenage son that:

- *It is not good to do it alone;*
- *Your IQ will become lower;*
- *I will help you;*
- *you cannot study if you cannot have sex, you may use my body;*
- *I don't want you to get into trouble with a girl. Have sex with me instead.*

Historically, Japan has been one of the most endogamous societies in the world, with incestuous marriages in court circles being approved even in historical times and preferred sibling, cousin, uncle-niece and aunt-nephew marriages having been so extensive that genetics experts have discovered that the incestuous inbreeding has affected the size and health of the Japanese.⁶

In accordance with feudal family traditions, there are rural areas in Japan where fathers marry their daughters when the mother has died or is disabled.

Historically, all the institutionalized forms of paedophilia which were customary in the Far East are documented extensively for the Near East, including child marriage, child concubinage, temple prostitution of boys and girls, parent-child

⁶ Incest Japan: <http://www.fanfiction.net/s/1852666/3/Motherhood-A-spring-fertility-festival-spinoff/japan>



marriage among the Zoroastrians,⁷ sibling marriage which is quite common among Egyptians, sex slavery, ritualized pederasty and child prostitution.

Masturbation in infancy is said to be essential to increase the size of the penis,⁸ and older siblings are reported to play with the genitals of babies for hours at a time. Mutual masturbation, fellatio and anal intercourse are also said to be common among children, particularly with the older boys using younger children as sex objects. The nude public baths (hammam) are particularly eroticized in many areas, being especially infamous as a place of homosexual acts, both male and female.

Girls are used incestuously even more often than boys, since females are valued less. One report found 80% of Near Eastern women surveyed recalled having been forced into fellatio between the ages of 3 and 6 by older brothers, cousins, uncles and teachers. The girls rarely complain, since *if there is any punishment to be meted out, it will always end up by being inflicted on her*.

Arab women know that their spouses are pedophiles and prefer having sex with children to having sex with them. When the girl is about 6 years old, the women of the house snatch her, pull her thighs apart and sever her clitoris and often also her labia with a razor, this is almost always ending her aptitude to feel sexual pleasure ever.

One Egyptian woman relates her memory of how it happened to her. After being used sexually by the men in her family during her early childhood, she says:

⁷ Zoroastrians: <http://tenets.parsizoroastrianism.com/zor33.html>

⁸ Infancy Masturbation: <http://couragerc.net/Masturbation.html>



A Pedagogical On Abuse in Global History

I was six years old that night when I lay in my bed, warm and peaceful...I felt something move under the blankets, something like a huge hand...another hand was clapped over my mouth to prevent me from screaming.

They carried me to the bathroom...I remember...a rasping metallic sound which reminded me of the butcher when he used to sharpen his knife...My blood was frozen in my veins...my thighs had been pulled wide apart...I felt that the rasping knife or blade was heading straight down towards my throat. Then suddenly the sharp metallic edge seemed to drop between my thighs and there cut off a piece of flesh from my body.

I screamed with pain despite the tight hand held over my mouth, for the pain was not just a pain, it was like a searing flame that went through my whole body. After a few moments, I saw a red pool of blood around my hips. I did not know what they had cut off from my body, and did not try to find out.

I just wept, and called out to my mother for help. But the worst shock of all was when I looked around and found her standing by my side. Yes, it was her, I could not be mistaken, in flesh and blood, right in the midst of these strangers, talking to them and smiling at them.

The Etymology of the word **Abuse**:

*Early 15 century, "to misuse, misapply," from Middle French **abuser**, from Vulgar Latin *abusare, from Latin abusus "an abusing, using up," past participle of abuti "use up," also "misuse," from ab- "away" + uti "use".*



A Pedagogical On Abuse in Global History

Of sexual situations from early 15 century, but originally incest, homosexuality, prostitution, etc.; meaning "to misuse sexually, ravish" is from 1550s.

*Related Words: **Abused**; abusing.*

2. ABUSE IN THE BIBLE

Abuse existed for centuries, but was not recognised as **abuse**. **Abuse** existed from the first recordings of the Bible. The trauma a family underwent due to a form of **abuse**, remain in their bloodline and were carried from the one generation to the next.

2.1 Biblical Case Studies

Abuse did not seem to be **abuse** as known in modern times. Globally abuse has different forms, but in the Bible one form of **abuse** stands out, Sexual **Abuse**. There are in fact only three recordings of rape depicted in the Old Testament: the rape of Dinah, Jacob's daughter (Genesis 34), the rape of the anonymous concubine in Gibeah (Judges 19-21), and the incestuous rape of Tamar, King David's daughter (2 Samuel 13). Threats of rape are found in the narratives about Sarah (Genesis 20:26), Avishag (1 Kings 1), Jeremiah (Jeremiah 20:7) and the cities of Jerusalem and Samaria (Ezekiel 16:23).



2.1.1 Dinah, Daughter of Jacob.

Dinah was seen by the son of Hamor, Shechem, Prince of the Land, who took her by force and raped her. He desired Dinah and proposed to marry her. When Dinah's father, Jacob, heard that she was violated he wait silently for his sons return. They were enraged with this disturbing news.

Shechem urged his father to ask Jacob's blessing for marriage. Hamor offered an integration and intermarriage between his people and Jacob's tribe, and a large dowry for Dinah. But the sons of Jacob demanded that all the city's men be circumcised as a condition for such a union.

It was done and three days after the mass circumcision, Simeon and Levi, Dinah's brothers, attacked the city and slew all the males. They rescued Dinah and confiscated livestock, ransacked their houses and captured the children and woman.

This Biblical study showed the emotional concern for Dinah. Even if she was traumatised with the rape, her male family confided in her emotional trauma and avenged her womanhood. This proves that there was unity in this family even if Satan wanted to destroy her to distract Jacob from his godly purpose. The question arises whether Jacob's deceit in his youth, pertaining to the abusive act to usurp his brother Esau's inheritance be seen as a portal of the sin of **abuse** to interplay in the later history of Jacob.



2.1.2 The Rape Of The Unknown Concubine

In Judges 19:2-29 the horrific rape of an unknown concubine are told. She is not formally introduced, just a nameless concubine. She left her Levite husband and returned to her father's house in Bethlehem. Her husband followed and they reconciled.

On their way back, they stayed over at an old man's house in Gibeah, a Benjaminite city. The narrative describes the period as very dangerous as there was no king in Israel and all did as they pleased. The Gibeonites pound on the door and insisted "to know" the visiting Levite. When they refer to "to know" it meant that they want to humiliate and sexually violate.

The old man refused, but instead the Levite offered his concubine. She was gang-raped and tortured through an endless night. The next morning she was found dead at the old man's door. The Levite returned home with her body only to cut her up limb by limb into twelve parts and scattered them throughout the Land of Israel.

This caused an outrage and a civil war between Israel and the Benjaminites started resulting in the eradication of Gibeah and the remaining Benjaminite cities.

This Biblical case study suggests that there was a domestic problem and the woman wanted to leave, which she had done successfully. Her



husband was not ready for leaving her and reconciled, showering her with deception, and gained her trust, they returned home.

The old man already secured their safety from the Gibeonites, but her husband saw the golden opportunity of revenge. He could have remained safely in the room with his wife, but chose to give her a traumatic endless death of sexual and physical assault. He did not seize with the humiliation, he severed her body and buried her all over the country. This particular concubine was only a brutalised woman without a name.

2.1.3 Tamar, Daughter of King David

Tamar was the beautiful daughter of King David and Maacah. Amnon, her half-brother, lusted over her beauty. He confided in a friend who came up with the idea to play sick. David's eldest son got all the medical attention he could ask for, but still remained ill.

He pleaded with his father to call upon Tamar to make him food and to feed him. Amnon was first in line for the throne, and if he requests anything, it was considered done, even to chase Tamar's entourage out of his quarters.

Tamar was never to be left alone as she was the virgin princess of Israel. Tamar made the food and tried to feed him as he requested, but instead he overpowered her, violated her and raped her. He had



her thrown out of his quarters by his servants referring to her as “this woman.”

King David did not chastise his son, he let it be. Absalom, Tamar’s blood brother, heard of this violation and took his sister to his house. Nothing was done to Amnon, and two years later, Absalom stabbed his drunken half-brother to death in a street.

Tamar was torn from her womanhood and her father did not have the courage to chastise his own son for raping his half-sister. This gesture of David suggests that he was afraid of his own son. But this incident led to the death of Amnon, never to be king. Tamar obeyed her father’s orders to take care of her so-called sick brother in private, the perfect trap for an unexpected victim.

Amnon’s motive was premeditated. Tamar was left being a childless widow. The question arises of could this be the consequences of David’s abusive leadership.

David **abused** his leadership by knowing Bathsheba, when she fell pregnant, David tried to get her husband drunk and hopefully thought he might go home and the husband would think it may be his child. But Bathsheba’s husband was too drunk and fell asleep outside the palace walls. David tried again by sending her husband to war placing him in the front line.



2.1.4 Lot and his Daughters

In Genesis 19 the Bible tells the story of Lot, Abraham's nephew, who offered his own daughters to the men of Sodom. This is an indication of Lot's sexually degenerative practices.⁹ A clear suggestion of Lot's drunken behaviour, are shown when they lived in a cave outside of town.

The daughters knew their father becomes sexually aroused when drinking his wine, and therefor slept with him in two consequent nights to conceive to save their bloodline.

The controversy here is of whom was the victim? The father was raped by his own daughters (?) or the daughters were used to having sexual intercourse with their father, and therefor it can be assumed that incest happen since the days of Sodom. Could it be that these two daughters were in a sexually abusive environment from an early age? Abraham was a day's walk away with plenty of young men in his tribe; Lot was not the last man on this earth at that time.

The chances of pregnancy resulting from a single random sexual act by a fertile couple are on the order of one in 50. One might conclude that the chances of both daughters becoming pregnant on successive nights would be one in 2,500. Further, the chances of both producing a boy would be about one in 10,000.

However, women who live in the same household often find that their menstrual cycles are synchronized. Thus, the chances would be much

⁹ Genesis 19:8



more than 1 in ten thousand, but would still be a very unusual happening.¹⁰

2.1.4.1 Synchronized Menstrual Cycles Explained

Menstrual synchrony was first demonstrated by Martha McClintock¹¹ in a paper in 1971 that was published in *Nature*. The University of Chicago psychologist had observed during her undergraduate days in an all-female dorm that close friends tended to get their periods at the same time.

To formally test the idea, she invited 135 college girls to take part in her study; the college girls living in the same dorms were requested to recall their menstrual cycle start dates at three times throughout the academic year.

She found that close-friend groups had menstrual cycles significantly closer together in April (later in the year) compared with October: lessening from an average of 6.4 to 4.6 days apart.

The phenomenon was labelled "the McClintock effect" and is widely held as the first example of pheromones, unconscious chemical signs that affect behaviour and physiology, among humans.

¹⁰ Kutz, Ilan (2005) Revisiting the lot of the first incestuous family: The biblical origins of shifting the blame on to female family members. UK: British Medical Journal. pp.1507-1508

¹¹ Martha McClintock: <http://imb.uchicago.edu/people/members/mcclintock.shtml>



Many subsequent researchers further her research to replicate the results from McClintock's original experiment in people, rats, hamsters and chimpanzees.

This statement suggests that Lot and his daughters had an incestuous relationship, due to the fact that they are aware of the biology of conception. There were other young men of the other tribes a day's travelling further away; the question arises of what their motive was, to save their father's lineage perhaps.

2.1.5 *Child Sacrifices in the Old Testament*

Some Israelites sacrificed their sons and/or daughters to the Ammonite deity Molech, to demons, and possibly even to Yahweh. The Torah proscribes this pagan practice, and the prophets denounced it as one of the heinous sins that contributed to the fall of Israel and Judah.

The historical books record incidents of human sacrifice, but they always state or imply a strong denunciation of the practice. At the sanctuary called Tophet, children were sacrificed to the goddess Tanit and her consort Baal Hammon.

A pillar 0.5m high with upraised hands and a disk and a crescent has been discovered at Hazor in Northern Israel. These symbols indicate the same deities found in Carthage. Their presence in Hazor suggests



the possibility that children were sacrificed there also, although the Hazor site predates the Tophet in Carthage by a thousand years.¹²

2.1.5.1 Jephthah's Triumph

Jephthah vowed to the Lord:

whatever comes out of the door of my house to meet me when I return in triumph from the Ammonites will be the LORD'S, and I will sacrifice it as a burnt offering.

Judges 11:31 NIV

He fought the Ammonites and devastated twenty towns and Israel subdued Ammon. On his return celebrating his triumph, his only child, his daughter came through the door. He was devastated and tore his clothes. His daughter comforted him in verse 36-37:

"My father," she replied, "you have given your word to the LORD. Do to me just as you promised, now that the LORD has avenged you of your enemies, the Ammonites.

But grant me this one request," she said. "Give me two months to roam the hills and weep with my friends, because I will never marry."

¹² Bromiley, Geoffrey W. (1988) The International Standard Bible Encyclopedia: Q-Z Volume 4. USA: Eerdmans Publishing. pp. 258-260



He granted her the wish and after two months she returned, and *he did to her as he had vowed*. She was a sacrificed a virgin. She was the only offspring Jephthah had. With this sacrifice he ended his own unadulterated heritage.

2.1.5.2 Mennaseh

He rebuilt the high places his father Hezekiah had destroyed; he also erected altars to Baal and made an Asherah pole, as Ahab king of Israel had done. He bowed down to all the starry hosts and worshiped them.

2 Kings 21:3

Mennaseh sacrificed his own son¹³ and the Bible does not specify the motivation, only that he builds an occult kingdom to worship Baal. A Baal cemetery unearthed recently contained the remains of more than 20 000 children. The Greek author Kleitarchos¹⁴ described this practice of sacrificing infants to Baal 300 years before Christ:

"Out of reverence for Kronos [Baal], the Phoenicians, and especially the Carthaginians, whenever they seek to obtain some great favour, vow one of their children, burning it as a

¹³ 2 Kings

¹⁴ Kleitarchos: <http://www.hope-of-israel.org/p288.htm>



sacrifice to the deity, if they are especially eager to gain success.

There stands in their midst a bronze statue of Kronos, its hands stretched over a bronze brazier, the flames of which consume the child. When the flames fall on the body, the limbs contract and the open mouth seems almost to be laughing, until the contracted body slides quietly into the brazier."

Ancients were led by Satan to kill their children for personal convenience and gain, while engaging in promiscuity. Modern Baal worshipers are also known as abortionists who have slaughtered millions of unwanted children. According to WHO,¹⁵ globally an estimated 40-50 million women face an unplanned pregnancy, and decide to have an abortion. This corresponds to approximately 125,000 abortions per day.

Young women experience abortion as traumatic and have difficulty overcoming the thought when they have their live first child, unfortunately, there is a price to pay when going against God's will.

In 1993 Dr. Joel Brind¹⁶ presented his thesis, "Induced Abortion as an Independent Risk Factor for Breast Cancer,"

¹⁵ World Health Organization's stats on abortions per annum: <http://www.worldometers.info/abortions/>

¹⁶ Brind, Joel (2007) Induced Abortion as Cancer risk factor. USA: Journal of American Physicians and Surgeons. Volume 12. Nr 2.



at the Association of Interdisciplinary Research in Values and Social Change held in Milwaukee, Wisconsin.

Among his findings there is an 800% increase in breast cancer for women less than 18 years old who have an abortion after the eighth week of pregnancy; on average there is an 80% increase in breast cancer if the woman has an abortion before a live birth; risk of breast cancer increases with the number of abortions; those who have an abortion before a live birth and develop breast cancer have a greater possibility of having a faster growing tumor with a poorer cure rate than women who have not had an abortion.

Listen! Your brother's blood cries out to me from the ground.

Genesis 4:10 NIV

If God could hear Abel's blood crying from the ground, He surely heard every Fetus' cries from inside its mother's womb, where it is supposed to be protected, silently screaming for help against the physical **abuse** that would lead to death.

*2.1.5.3 **Abused** for Spreading the Gospel*

Abuse in the New Testament is mainly focussed on men who believed in Christ and spread His Gospel. The Apostles were tortured in all kinds of ways. But the worst was the



A Pedagogical On Abuse in Global History

death of Christ on the cross. In the book of Acts, the church had been on a streak of success, experiencing one exciting conversion after another.

Saul of Tarsus met Jesus on his way to Damascus, becoming Paul. The Gentile centurion Cornelius did highly successful work among Gentiles in Antioch. But, from Acts 12 things started to change as the great enemy of Jesus Christ, Satan raised his head. Stephen (Acts 7:58-60) was martyred before this and with a great possibility, others too. All of the Twelve Apostles, excluding John, were martyred to death.

The most wicked death of all times is the death of Jesus Christ. An innocent man was convicted of a crime which he did not commit, and was then sentenced to a death of a serial killer. The hours before his crucifixion were physically and verbally abusive. He was stripped from his dignity.

A study of Jesus and the road he walked with that cross was investigated by Dr C Truman Lewis,¹⁷ a physician. He studied the practise of crucifixion itself, a torturous execution by fixation to a cross. Crucifixion originated from the Persians, Alexander the Great and his generals brought this custom to Egypt and Carthage. The Romans learned this method of death from Carthaginians. The most common form of the cross used in this time period was the *Tau* cross, shaped like a T.

¹⁷ Crucifixion of Jesus from a medical perspective: http://www.cbn.com/SpiritualLife/OnlineDiscipleship/easter/A_Physician's_View_of_the_Crucifixion_of_Jesus_Christ.aspx



Archaeological evidence proved that this was indeed the type of cross that was used to crucify Christ. Medieval and Renaissance painters have given us our picture of Christ carrying the entire cross.

But the upright post, or stipes, was generally fixed permanently in the ground at the site of execution and the condemned man was forced to carry the patibulum, the horizontal post weighs about 55 kilograms, from his prison to the place of his execution.

Painters and sculptors of the crucifixion pictured the T cross, and also show the nails through the palms. Historical Roman accounts and experimental work have established that the nails were driven between the small bones of the wrists (radial and ulna) and not through the palms.

Nails driven through the palms will strip out between the fingers when made to support the weight of the human body. The misconception may have come about through a misunderstanding of Jesus' words to Thomas, "Observe my hands." Anatomists, both modern and ancient, have always considered the wrist as part of the hand.

The Roman soldier who whipped Jesus with a short whip consisting of several heavy, leather thongs with two small



A Pedagogical On Abuse in Global History

balls of lead attached at the ends. This heavy whip came down in full force across His shoulders, back, and legs.

These thongs cut through the skin with the first hit; it cuts deeper into the subcutaneous tissues, causing blood oozing from the capillaries and veins of the skin, finally the arterial bleeding spurts from vessels in the underlying muscles.

The small lead balls cause large, deep bruises which are broken open by subsequent blows. The skin of the back is hanging in long ribbons and the entire area is an unrecognizable mass of torn, bleeding tissue. Only the centurion can decide when to stop the whipping.

The Romans was enjoying this man's suffering and they made him a crown of branches with long thorns. It caused copious bleeding as the scalp is one of the most vascular areas of the body. The soldiers strike Him with the stick, His sceptre, causing the thorns to drive deeper into His skull.

The soldiers then tore the robe from his back, which was now a bandage to the wounds on His back. The blood desiccated to the robe. This causes excruciating pain, the bleeding started again.

Jesus had to walk with a heavy wooden beam, while his body was in shock. When he stumbled and fell the centurion called for Simon of Cyrene to help carry the beam. Almost



600 meters to go, Jesus' body was bleeding and had cold sweat of shock.

The legionnaire feels for the depression at the front of the wrist and hammers a heavy, square, rusty iron nail through the wrist and deep into the wood. The left foot will be pressed backward against the right foot, feet extended, toes down, the nail is hammered through the arch of each, leaving the knees moderately flexed.

As the crucified slowly sags down, with more weight on the nails in the wrists, excruciating pain shoots along the fingers, up the arms, to explode in the brain. The nails in the wrists are putting pressure on the median nerves. As the crucified pushes himself upward to avoid this stretching torment, he places his full weight on the nail through his feet. The searing agony of the nail, tears through the nerves between the metatarsal bones of the feet.

The arms fatigue; waves of cramps sweep over the muscles, knotting it in deep and relentless throbs of pain. The cramps prevent the crucified to push himself upward.

Hanging by his arms the pectoral muscles are paralyzed and the intercostal muscles are unable to act. Air can be drawn into the lungs, but cannot be exhaled.



The crucified raise himself in order to get even one short breath. Carbon dioxide builds up in the lungs and in the blood stream and the cramps partially subside. Spasmodically, the crucified push himself upward to exhale and bring in the oxygen.

During this excruciating painful torture Jesus uttered a few short sentences.¹⁸

Father, forgive them for they know not what they do.

Today thou shalt be with me in Paradise.

Behold thy mother, Woman behold thy son.

I thirst

It's finished

My God, my God, why have thou forsaken me.

Jesus experienced hours of limitless pain, cycles of twisting, joint-rending cramps, intermittent partial asphyxiation, searing pain where tissue is torn from His lacerated back as He moves up and down against the rough timber. Then another agony begins a terrible crushing pain deep in the chest as the pericardium slowly fills with serum and begins to compress the heart.

The loss of tissue fluids has reached a critical level; the compressed heart is struggling to pump heavy, thick, sluggish blood into the tissue; the tortured lungs are making

¹⁸ Jesus' Last Words: <http://gloryofhiscross.org/whois3.htm>



A Pedagogical On Abuse in Global History

a frantic effort to gasp in small gulps of air. The markedly dehydrated tissues send their flood of stimuli to the brain. His fifth cry, I thirst.

The body of Jesus is now in extremes, and He can feel the chill of death creeping through His tissues. This realization brings out His sixth words, possibly little more than a tortured whisper, "It is finished."

With one last surge of strength, he once again presses His torn feet against the nail, straightens His legs, takes a deeper breath, and utters His seventh and last cry, "Father! Into thy hands I commit my spirit."

Medical evidence proved that Jesus died of a broken heart, he had heart failure, and he was not suffocated on the cross.

2.2 Abusers Twist The Bible

Proverbs 13.24 says the following:

those who spare the rod hate their children, but those who love them are diligent to discipline them.

The axiom 'spare the rod and spoil the child' appears to derive from paraphrasing the KJV 1611 mistranslation of the Hebrew text.



It is interesting that OT scholars who are experts in Wisdom literature have suggested the material that is found in Proverbs 13 is for more mature disciples of the sage, not for beginners. That is, it is advice given to those wise and mature enough to know how to use and not **abuse** the advice.

Here the advice must be taken in the context of everything the NT says about anger. For example:

- 1) Ephesians 4:26: be angry but sin not;
- 2) 'Father's do not provoke your children to anger' Ephes. 6.4 (a verse that seems apposite in the Creflo Dollar case);
- 3) James 1.19-20 says to be slow to anger, and that the anger of human beings does not produce the righteousness of God.

2.2.1 Scripture That Is Being Abused By Occult Movements

It is important to emphasize that the Holy Bible are being used in occult movements to validate them in a certain manner of progression. The Bible is also twisted to accommodate new beliefs.

2.2.1.1 The Freemasons

Freemasons uses the Bible in the first, second and third degree in their ceremonies to graduate their members to the next degree. The Entered Apprentice Degree is the first degree that makes use of Psalms 133:1-3; Fellow Craft Degree is the second degree and uses Amos 7; Master Mason Degree, the third degree uses Ecclesiastes 12:1-7.



2.2.1.2 The International Order of the Rainbow for Girls

Also, the **International Order of the Rainbow for Girls (IORG)** is a Masonic youth service organization which teaches leadership training through community service. Girls (ages 11–20/21) learn about the value of charity and service through their work and involvement with their annual local and Grand (state or country) service projects.¹⁹

Being related to a Master Mason is not a requirement for Rainbow membership. Interested girls must submit an application to an Assembly and members of that Assembly will meet with the girl to answer any questions the girl may have and to make sure she is a proper candidate to receive the degrees. Once the application is accepted, the assembly will vote on accepting the candidate into the Assembly. Membership then starts with an Initiation Ceremony. Ezekiel 1:28 is being referred to in their ceremony.

2.2.1.3 The Jehovah's Witnesses

The most obvious proof that Jehovah's Witnesses spell YHWH wrong as "Jehovah" is the fact that the letter "J" doesn't even exist in Hebrew, Greek, Latin. Further, the English language did not have a letter "J" before about 1500

¹⁹ IORG: http://www.stichtingargus.nl/vrijmetselarij/rainbow_r.html



AD. For example, the very first edition of the KJV printed in 1611 AD, contained no "J".

Instead the letter "I" is used for Jew, Jesus, Joshua, Joanna, John AND the person pronoun "I". Instead these words were written in 1611 AD as, Iew, Iesus, Ioshua, Ioanna, Iohn. In a stunning admission, Jehovah's witnesses claim that the reason they continue to use "Jehovah" instead of the correct spelling Yahweh, is to be pleasing to man, not God.

The New World Translation adds "Jehovah" into the New Testament 237 times, where there is absolutely no ancient manuscript evidence of any kind to support it.²⁰

They also translate John 1:1 as "In [the] beginning the Word was, and the Word was with God, and the word was a god."²¹

2.2.1.4 Individuals Twisting the Bible

Either the Bible as a whole or texts from the Bible are examined and rejected due to the fact that they do not square with other authorities (such as reason or revelation) do not appear to agree with them.

²⁰ Jehovah's Witnesses – YHWH: <http://www.bible.ca/jw-YHWH.htm>

²¹ Jehovah's Witnesses – YHWH: <http://www.apologeticsindex.org/b03.html>



Archie Matson,²² author of the book, *The Waiting World*, holds that the Bible contains contradictions and that Jesus himself rejected the authority of the Old Testament when he contrasted His own views with it on the Sermon on the Mount.

Scriptural statements, stories, commands or symbols which have a particular meaning or set of meanings when taken within the intellectual and broadly cultural framework of the Bible itself are lifted out of that context, placed within the frame of reference of another system and thus given a meaning that markedly differs from their intended meaning.

The **Maharishi Mahesh Yogi**²³ interprets "Be still, and know that I am God" as meaning that each person should meditate and come to the realization that he is essentially Godhood itself.

A specific interpretation given to a biblical text or set of text which could well be, and often have been, interpreted in quite a different fashion, but these alternatives are not considered.

Erich von Daniken²⁴ inquires why in Genesis 1:26 God speaks in the plural ("us"), suggesting that this is an oblique reference to God's being one of many astronauts and failing

²² Archie Matson: http://www.goodreads.com/author/show/1522296.Archie_Matson

²³ Maharishi Mahesh Yogi: <http://www.rose-rosetree.com/blog/tag/maharishi-mahesh-yogi/>

²⁴ Erich von Daniken: <http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=kOD4GFIPJXg>



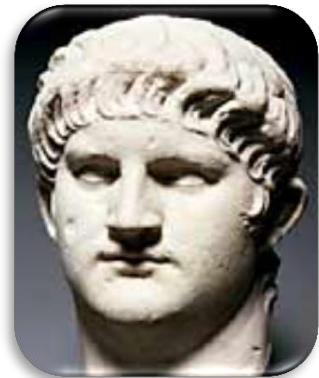
to deliberate on alternative explanations that either God was speaking as "Heaven's king accompanied by His heavenly host" or that the plural prefigures the doctrine of the Trinity expressed more explicitly in the New Testament.

3. GLOBAL HISTORICAL CASE STUDIES AND STATISTICS

There is a global belief that **abuse** only sprouted in the last few decades. It is only due to the fact that feminist campaigns voiced **abuse** of woman and children. But by looking into the past, **abuse** was considered as a form of chastisement. Communication was a colossal problem and those who had the power, abused their power to use and **abuse** anyone who they considered defiant. Just to name a few great abusers in history, is to come to the realization that everyone on this earth's ancestors had blood of **abuse** on their hands.

3.1 Nero, 5th Emperor of Rome

Nero, age sixteen, became emperor in AD 54, persecution of Christians turned from bad to worse. Nero became increasingly paranoid and was very irrational, killing people who he believed was a threat to him.



On the evening of June 18, AD 64, a fire broke out



in Rome and Nero was miles away. As soon as he was informed of the fire, he returned hastily. The fire lasted six days and seven nights, and flared up for three more days. Many suspected Nero of starting the fire but he found a scapegoat to blame, he chose the Christians. Systematically the attack begins against the Christians.

Nero devised the cruelest of tortures, such as, wrapping them in the skins of animals and then threw them into a pack of wild dogs to be eaten alive. He burned Christians alive; on occasion burned them and use them as human torches at night to provide light in his dark courtyard.²⁵

3.2 Vlad Dracula

Vlad was a vicious ruler. He impaled his victims anally and usually so far that the object submerged from their mouths. He was known for mass impalements. Great conquerors that were also considered as brutal turned away from his home being sickened by the sight of impaled corpses planted outside the city gates.



Rumours abound that Vlad also ate the flesh, and drank the blood of his enemies, victims or animals, often holding dinner parties next to the freshly impaled. He was very proud of his work, and anyone who showed disdain while looking upon the thousands of putrefying corpses would soon suffer the same fate.

²⁵ Leston, Stephen (2011) *The Bible in World History*. USA: Barbour Publishing. pp.252-253



Vlad liked to arrange the impaled in circular patterns, the length of the stakes determined by the victim's rank; this way, wealthy, or powerful opponents would plainly see they were not above the law. Impalements were carried out in a variety of ways.²⁶

During his reign, Vlad Dracula also had people decapitated, had their eyes gouged out, had them skinned alive, boiled, burnt, dismembered, eviscerated, or sometimes just physically disfigured for his own amusement.²⁷

3.3 King of France, Louis XIII

Historians of the family have revealed that adults in elite households in the fifteenth and sixteenth century Europe occasionally treated young children as sexual playthings. A striking illustration involves the future King of France, Louis XIII.

According to a diary kept by the royal physician, members of the French royal court fondled his genitals and ladies in waiting played sexual games with his tiny fists.²⁸

There is no indication that Louis kept mistresses, a peculiarity that earned him the



²⁶ Vlad Dracula: http://www.vladtheimpaler.com/vlad_the_impaler_bio_002.htm

²⁷ Vlad Dracula: http://dracula.cc/vlad_iii_dracula/

²⁸ Louis XIII: <http://blogs.ssrc.org/tif/2012/07/13/placing-childhood-sexual-abuse-in-historical-perspective/>



title "Louis the Chaste", but tenacious rumours insinuated that he may have been a homosexual or at least a bisexual.

The teenage Louis' interests increasingly focussed on the male courtiers that he saw regularly at court, and he quickly developed an intense emotional attachment to his favourite, Charles, although there is no evidence of a sexual relationship.

Gédéon Tallemant des Réaux, drawing from rumours told to him by a critic of the king, *the Marquise de Rambouillet*, overtly speculated in his *Historiettes* about what occurred in the king's bed.

A liaison with an equerry, *François de Baradas*, ended when the latter lost favour fighting a duel after duelling had been forbidden by royal decree. He was also allegedly captivated by *Henri Coiffier de Ruzé, Marquis of Cinq-Mars*, who was later executed for conspiring with the Spanish enemy in time of war.

Tallemant described how on a royal journey, the King "sent *M. le Grand de Cinq-Mars* to undress, who returned adorned like a bride. "'To bed, to bed' he said to him impatiently... and the mignon was not in before the king was already kissing his hands."²⁹

3.4 Genghis Kahn

Genghis Kahn was known for his bloodthirsty conquests and destructions throughout Eurasia in the early thirteenth century. Women in particular were

²⁹ Crompton, Louis (2006) *Homosexuality & Civilization*. USA: Harvard University Press, p.338



shown no mercy; they were raped under the eyes of their fellow victims and many rather chose death.³⁰

Men and the elder were slaughtered, while young women and older children were sent off to be sold as slaves.³¹ Children that were considered too small for slavery were immediately massacred.³² Beautiful young woman had to be handed over to Khan to satisfy him sexually³³ or sent off to any great princes, if the prince was more senior, it was considered to be desirous of pleasing.³⁴

It has been proven in the last decade that Genghis Kahn was not only conquering Eurasia, but also a raping spree. An international group of geneticists studying Y-chromosome data have found that nearly eight percent of the men living in the region of the former Mongol empire carry Y-chromosomes that are almost identical.



That translates to 0.5 percent of the male population in the world, or an estimated sixteen million descendants living today.³⁵

³⁰ De Hartog, Leo (2006) Genghis Kahn: Conqueror of the World. USA: Tauris Parke Paperbacks. p.101

³¹ De Hartog, Leo (2006) Genghis Kahn: Conqueror of the World. USA: Tauris Parke Paperbacks. p.91

³² Abbott, Jacob (1860) History of Genghis Kahn. USA: Harper & Brothers Publishers. p.205

³³ De Hartog, Leo (2006) Genghis Kahn: Conqueror of the World. USA: Tauris Parke Paperbacks. p.43

³⁴ Abbott, Jacob (1860) History of Genghis Kahn. USA: Harper & Brothers Publishers. p.60

³⁵ National Geographic Genghis Khan: http://news.nationalgeographic.com/news/2003/02/0214_030214_genghis_2.html



3.5 Leopold II of Belgium

King Leopold II of Belgium is mainly remembered for the founding and brutal exploitation of the Congo Free State. Leopold initially extracted a fortune by the collection of ivory. A rise in the rubber price in the 1890s motivated Leopold to force the inhabitants to collect sap from the rubber plants. If the villages did not meet their quotas, their people's hands were cut off.



Many children's colonies were established by Catholic missionaries who were mostly Belgian and loyal supporters of the king and his regime. The children taken in by these missionaries were, theoretically, "orphans," and in the European sense orphan hood did not exist.³⁶

It is also a known fact that Leopold did not set foot in this country. Fathers, who seemed strong and fit, were shipped off for slavery. Women and children were separated from each other.

Another disturbing fact that prove why this country is in the mental state they are, is the human butchery that are described in numerous books and article of how children's limbs were cut off. Leopold gave permission to whosoever requested whatsoever. This country was raped all because of its richness in

³⁶ Hochschild, Adam (1998) King Leopold's Ghost: A Story of Greed, Terror, and Heroism in Colonial Africa. USA: Houghton Mifflin Company. p.135

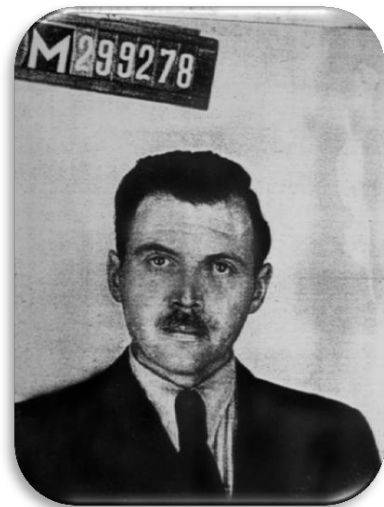


rubber. Leopold's regime had the blood of an estimated 10 million Congolese on their hands.³⁷

Reports of despicable exploitation and extensive human rights **abuses** led to international uproar in the early 1900s leading to an extensive war of words. The campaign to examine Leopold's regime, led by British diplomat Roger Casement and former shipping clerk E. D. Morel under the sponsorships of the Congo Reform Association, became the first mass human rights movement.³⁸

3.6 Josef Mengele

Josef Mengele was a physician in Auschwitz in 1943. Mengele was admitted to the SS after passing background checks assuring those concerned that he had no non-Aryan blood. He attained this level of "purity" and was set out to rid Germany of those not worthy to be part of the human race. He was responsible for the lives of 400 000 people of all ages. He performed thousands of sadistic experiments.



Mengele had no mercy on his victims. He is notorious for his experiments on twins. He sewed Gypsy twins together to create Siamese Twins.³⁹

³⁷ Hochschild, Adam (1998) *King Leopold's Ghost: A Story of Greed, Terror, and Heroism in Colonial Africa*. USA: Houghton Mifflin Company. Chapter 15.

³⁸ Leopold human rights: https://docs.google.com/document/d/1LZojODZEqBxXIdqs3qdLmI_TWYeJRJcbH4FYPBI2CE8/edit?hl=en&pli=1

³⁹ Blamires, Cyprian P. (2006) *World Fascism: A Historical Encyclopedia*, Volume 1. USA: ABC-CLIO, Inc. p.416



A Pedagogical On Abuse in Global History

In another instance he practically beat a female inmate to death because she had escaped the gas chamber six times. His attack was so extreme that it was difficult to recognize her normal facial features. He returned to the hospital and washed his hands while whistling gaily, with an intense satisfaction on his face.



It was reported that Mengele had 300 children burned alive in an open fire. The children were hauled into the area in several trucks and dumped into a burning pit. As some children tried to crawl out, an SS officer would push

them back with a long stick.⁴⁰

It is clear that Mengele had an obsession with twins. He thought he could change their eye color by injecting chemicals directly into their eyes; he never gave up and kept on trying. He tested methods to sterilize young women. Some were subjected to shock treatments and surgeries, most died due to infections caused by the surgery.

Mengele injected children with a lethal germ only to study the stages of the reaction on the child. He performed sex changes on twins to study their behaviour on being different than the other twin. Mengele was interested in brother/sister twins capability to have a child together, causing incest. The not too serious **abuse** was isolation and removal.

⁴⁰ Philipp, Barry (2008) *The Fear Factor: Finding Peace in a Desperate Society*. USA: Xulon Press. p.180



Mengele experimented on twins to see if they can survive without each other. He picked twins and put them on his surgery tables, he then injected chloroform in their hearts killing them instantly. Mengele would begin removing their limbs and organs for the sole purpose of studying their similarities.

3.7 Idi Amin Dada

Idi Amin Dada was the third President of Uganda in the 1970s. Amin was an illiterate dictator who bestowed numerous titles upon himself. In general he was known to be a brutal murderer.

Amin's Military soldiers were commonly known as military rapists. They feasted on university girls.



According to aides, Amin placed the body of one of his murdered wives on a chair at the dinner table while he dined with his children, telling them that this is what happened to "bad mommy" when she disobeys him. Human rights groups states that an estimated 500 thousand people were murdered during his eight year rule.⁴¹

⁴¹ Amin kills wife: <http://www.imdb.com/name/nm0024907/bio>



3.8 Aileen Wournos

Aileen Carol Wuornos was born on February 29, 1956, in Rochester, Michigan. Wuornos's childhood was a troubled one. She and her brother were raised by their grandmother after her father, a child molester and a psychopath; he hanged himself in prison and her mother abandoned them in 1960.

Wuornos fell pregnant at the age of 14, claiming that her brother was the father; she gave the baby up for adoption and left home to hitchhike across America working as a prostitute.⁴²



The corpse of Richard Mallory was found on December 13, 1989, in a wood near Daytona Beach; he had been shot three times. Six months later, another man was found shot six times with the same gun. Before the body could be identified, the third victim was found.

By November 1989, four other men were found dead as the result of a shooting.⁴³

Police received four calls identifying the killers as Wuornos and Moore, and detectives arrested both women in January 1991. At Moore's request, Wuornos confessed to six of the killings, all allegedly performed in self-defence.

⁴² Aileen Wuornos: <http://www.crimeandinvestigation.co.uk/crime-files/aileen-wuornos/biography.html>

⁴³ Aileen Wournos: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Aileen_Wuornos



Wuornos was found guilty and sentenced to death. While on death row, she feverishly read the bible, created drawings, helped others with their appeals and began writing about her life. But on October 9, 2002, her life was ended by lethal injection. Wuornos is widely considered to be America's first female serial killer.⁴⁴

3.9 Advocate Barbie

Cezanne Visser a.k.a. Advocate Barbie was involved in sexual **abuse** of orphan girls with her Common Law husband, Dirk Prinsloo. Although she wants to turn the spotlight on him for overpowering her with sexual commands, her story does not add up. Dirk Prinsloo fled to Russia where he is currently jailed for a bank robbery.⁴⁵

Three orphan girls were entrusted to them as they seemed to be a happy couple. Unfortunately the girls were drugged with different substances and taken sexual advantage of.



Two of the girls could not live with the shame and committed suicide, the surviving girl is fighting drug **abuse**.

⁴⁴ Aileen Wuornos: <http://www.clarkprosecutor.org/html/death/US/wuornos805.htm>

⁴⁵ Dirk Prinsloo: http://www.news24.com/Tags/People/dirk_prinsloo



A book, *Shattered Lives: The story of Advocate Barbie*, were published in 2011. In this book Dirk Prinsloo is attacked by writers proving that he is a very controlling sex addict. These writers are suggesting that Visser was under Prinsloo's *spell* and submitted to his every sexual command. However, Visser publically admitted it that she enjoys every moment with him.

The three orphan girls were in a helpless situation when the dual took them over weekends. Two of the child witnesses testified for the second time against Visser in February 2009 behind closed doors. The witnesses testified that they were indecently assaulted,



Visser and Prinsloo exposed themselves, and they showed pornographic material and had sexual intercourse in front of the witness.

The witness was forced to walk naked in front of them. The witness also testified that Visser masturbated with a vibrator in front of the child. Of course, Visser denies every allegation during her initial trial.⁴⁶

Janine Du Plessis testified how Visser befriended her, and eventually took her home to treat her on her fourteenth birthday. They gave her "Milo"⁴⁷ to drink and she started to feel drowsy afterwards. She was taken to the main bedroom and all that she can remember was flashing lights. By the time Du Plessis woke up, she found herself naked.

⁴⁶ Child Witnesses Testifies again: <http://mg.co.za/article/2009-02-18-child-witnesses-testify-again-in-advocate-barbie-case>

⁴⁷ Milo is a chocolate and malt powder which is mixed with hot or cold water to produce a beverage in most countries. [http://www.en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Milo_\(drink\)](http://www.en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Milo_(drink))



Visser testified that they gave the girl a drug-laced cup of Milo, and when she became drowsy, Prinsloo took her to lay her down. Visser stated that she walked to the main bedroom at a later stage and found them in the guest bedroom. She saw Du Plessis lying on her back and Prinsloo already ejaculated over Du Plessis' stomach. The bedroom where this happened still remains in question.⁴⁸

Du Plessis became involved in drugs and prostitution; she was admitted to a drug rehabilitation centre in December 2009. Two weeks after the Pretoria High Court sentenced Visser to seven years in jail for her part in the **abuse**, Du Plessis commits suicide near the Botswana border. She was found hanging from a tree.

Prinsloo fled the country and is currently serving a thirteen year jail sentence in Belarus for a bank robbery. Visser was released in August 2013 with strict parole conditions and placed under house arrest.

3.10 The Modimolle Monster

Johan Kotzé a.k.a. the Modimolle Monster, brutally attempted to murder his wife, Ina Bonette. He hired three men to rape her repeatedly. Bonette testified how her estranged husband lured her into his residence.

As she entered he pulled a towel over her head and took her to a bedroom. She was thrown on a bed and saw the three men. Bonette started to kick and scream and Kotze sat on her, shouting at the other men to help him tie her

⁴⁸ Janine Du Plessis: <http://www.iol.co.za/news/south-africa/one-of-barbie-s-child-victims-kills-herself-1.475539>



A Pedagogical On Abuse in Global History

hands to the ropes that was already fastened to the window and bed. Her mouth was taped so tight that she could hardly breathe. He was insulting her and assaulted her.

One of the men helped Kotze remove her pants. He wanted the men to rape her repeatedly. He turned to a cupboard full of objects to torture her. Bonette stated that he took pliers from his pocket and twisted her nipples; he cut off the other nipple. Kotze encouraged the three men to rape her repeatedly.

He lied next to her and pointed a firearm against her head; at that point her son arrived. Kotze quickly told the men to leave and dressed Bonette. Her son came down the passage and she heard him begging for his life. Kotze shot him three times. Kotze had fled the scene.

She was found by friends and taken to hospital. She underwent numerous operations in eight days and given antiretroviral medication.⁴⁹

Kotze was sentenced to life in prison early August 2013.



⁴⁹ Ina Bonette Testify: <http://www.sowetanlive.co.za/news/2012/11/20/ex-wife-of-modimolle-monster-tells-of-torture>.



3.11 New Delhi Bus Drive

On 16 December 2012 a female Physiotherapy Intern was beaten and repeatedly raped on a bus in Delhi. Thirteen days later she died in Singapore of the intense injuries. The medical reports of this case suggested that the woman suffered serious injuries to the abdomen, intestines and genitals as a result of the assault.



The investigation doctors said that the injuries indicate that a blunt object could have been used for penetration.



It suggests that it could have been an iron rod, the same iron rod that was used to assault the woman's male companion.

The police described the rod as a corroded, L-shaped instrument of the kind used as a wheel jack handle. When she was found, she only had approximately 5% of her intestines left inside her.

Medical records showed that this rod was inserted into her abdomen and pulled out with extreme force resulting to bring out her intestines.



2013, five days after her death, the police filed charges of rape, murder, kidnapping, destruction of evidence, and the attempted murder of her companion. Only four of the six men were convicted.

One month later, South Africa was shocked with a similar incident. A 17 year old girl was gang raped and her body mutilated in the Western Cape Province by three men, one of the men was her ex-boyfriend. After gang raping her, they slit her abdomen down to her genitals open.

She was found by security guards who described the scene as intestines everywhere. She lived to name one of her attackers. President Jacob Zuma of South Africa has condemned the act of violence and supported maximum conviction.



In these two cases the question arises of what caused these men to act in such a violent way that caused a global outrage. India has launched sexual crime awareness, and the helplines are overpowered with complaints of sexual **abuse**.

3.12 Bredasdorp Rape and Murder

Bredasdorp, in the Western Cape, become known to the brutal rape and murder of seventeen year old Anene Booysen. This headline in the news is a common occurrence in South Africa. This headline however, shocked the nation, even our president who was accused of rape in 2006.⁵⁰

In the president's State of the Nation Speech, he exclaimed that "The brutality and cruelty meted out to defenceless women is unacceptable and has no place in our country."

Booyesen had been living with Adele Leonard and her family for the past two years. Leonard stated that Booyesen's mother was an alcoholic and the children were placed in foster care. Booyesen left school in Grade seven and got a seasonal job which helped her for private finance. She had weekend money and she went to a tavern in town on a fateful Friday night.



⁵⁰ Mail & Guardian Newspaper: Jacob Zuma Rape Trial. <http://mg.co.za/article/2006-03-21-timeline-of-the-jacob-zuma-rape-trial>



A Pedagogical On Abuse in Global History

She spent the evening with friends who confirmed that Booysen's ex-boyfriend had come into the crowded pub to talk to her during the course of the evening and that she was apparently highly under the influence of alcohol.

The brutally mutilated Booysen was found by a security guard, and the policemen who arrived on the scene later had to receive trauma counselling. Lt Col Maree Louw, station commander at Bredasdorp, says in her 24 years of police service she's never seen anything like it. Lt Col Maree Louw (Bredasdorp Station Commander):

"We have never seen a rape like this. Her private parts were slit open from the vagina to the anus... Out there. I am a female... to see a female's genitals on the outside is... it makes me sick."

Booyesen was in excruciating pain, but she was able to tell her foster mother Corlia who attacked her before she died, and she named her ex-boyfriend. It is not uncommon for jilted boyfriends to organise gang rapes to punish ex-girlfriends. Police say it's too early to say if it is the case, but community worker Harold Robyn says *drugs usually play a part*. Community Policing Forum Chairman Fanie Christians says, like in many poor communities, rape is a crime waiting to happen:

"We have got a lot of drugs in this place. People are on tik and buttons and all those stuff, and that plays a big role in this community."

He further said that domestic violence is common in the area:



A Pedagogical On Abuse in Global History

"When people are drunk or use drugs then the wives have to pay the price and all those things."

Sonke Gender Justice Network's Cherith Sanger believes the South African aggressive male culture is at the root of sexual violence:

"I don't think it's a 'poor coloured girl' story. I think that masculinity issues exist all over the world outside of Africa, outside of South Africa... outside of 'black' communities. I think that circumstances are exacerbated by, for example, poverty and unemployment. And I also think drug and alcohol **abuse** are exacerbating factors. I don't necessarily think it is a root cause."

Dan Plato (Western Cape Community Safety MEC):

"If I look at the murder in Kraaifontein, where a young woman's arms and legs were sawn off, and then a few days earlier, a pretty young girl who went to school near Grassy Park was in an open field where she was violently raped and violently murdered... one rape after the other. What did the 16 Days of Activism mean? Our community has become sick!"

A quarter of the men interviewed in Medical Research Council studies admitted to have raped. Police statistics states 64 500 rapes were recorded last year and, and only one in nine rapes is reported, that means that half a million women could be raped every year in South Africa.

A study on rape homicide by Professor Naeema Abrahams showed a situation similar to those of a war zone, with roughly two women raped and killed every



A Pedagogical On Abuse in Global History

three days. She stated that men told them that it is sometimes a *form of punishment for girls*.

This can happen to a girl who, according to these men, were *acting or behaving outside her gender norms*. *She thinks she is too good to have a relationship with them; they might think she is too stuck up, and then they use rape as a form of punishment. And they would often arrange that everyone else would come together and they would rape her. And they call it streamlining... that's another term that they use.* She further stated that men can start streamlining as soon as the age of twelve. Minister Jeff Radebe said they are committed to reopening the sexual offences courts and are looking for the resources to do so.

In Anene's case, three men were arrested soon after her death. One was later released, and the other two have already appeared in court. But in this country jail frequently fails to rehabilitate sexual offenders.

Patrick Godana of the One Man Can Campaign is of the opinion that "South African men are angry. The baggage of violence that we endured during the apartheid era has never been dealt with." Godana was ostracised in the press for making this comment seeing that these young boys (of twelve years of age) were not even born in the Apartheid era.

Anene's brutal rape and murder has again brought to the fore sexual violence in South Africa, often only highlighted during the 16 Days of Activism in December 2012. Even if the awareness of brutality against women arises, another 24 000 other South African girls and women have been raped, and still escalating.



3.13 Police Brutality – SAPS

The reporting of abusive incidents to the police is a global understanding. Every citizen knows that they will receive protection from the authorities. Until the police department became the abusers. Video recordings were recorded on mobile phones and sent until it reached the e-mail circles. Awareness of police brutality in the black communities was made known and is in the spotlight.

North West Premier Thandi Modise has condemned the an incident of police brutality after an officer from Lomanyaneng police station, near Mahikeng, allegedly grabbed a complainant by the neck and dragged him behind a state vehicle for about 100 metres.⁵¹

The brutal assault of police officers is now known to government. This latest incident is only one of many, whereas black woman would not only be assaulted, but in some cases raped too.

3.13.1 Statistics and Research of Police Brutality in South Africa

100 Black women⁵² from different tribes over Gauteng Province were interviewed for the purpose of this thesis pertaining to Police Brutality in the past five years. 78 stated that they knew someone that faced police brutality; 47 stated that they knew women and men who were raped or sodomised during transit to a police station from a black rural

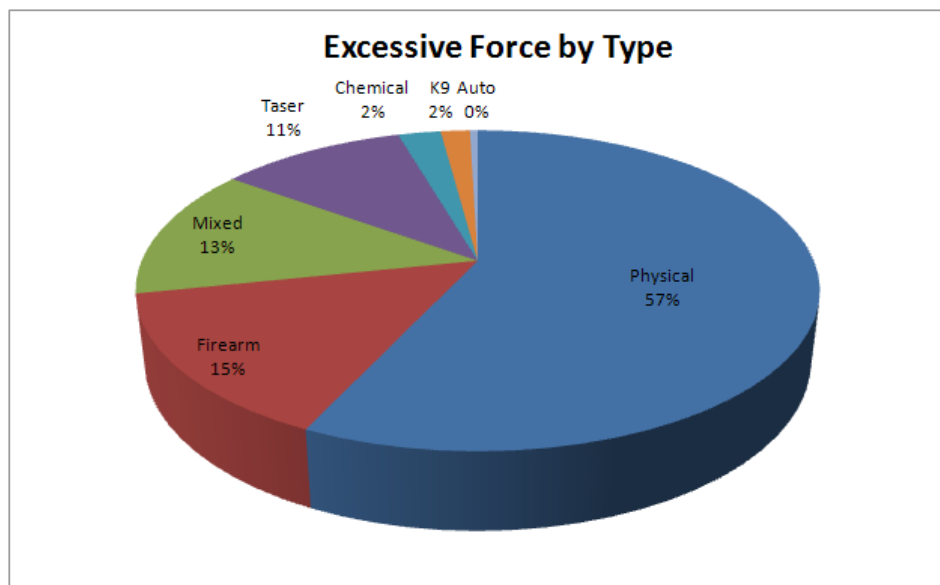
⁵¹ Police Brutality SA: <http://www.sanews.gov.za/south-africa/modise-condemns-police-brutality>

⁵² The participants of this interview of Police Brutality requested to remain anonymous for safety reasons and witch hunts. Their names will not be published.



area. 98 stated that they knew women who were sexually assaulted in police holding.

The *Mail & Guardian*⁵³ has reported that there were approximately 5 090 civil claims against the SAPS in the 2011/12 financial year at a cost of over R13-million⁵⁴ to the state attorney's office.



At a Seminar held by the Institute for Security Studies in April 2013, Gauteng Police Commissioner Lt Gen Mzwandile Petros stated over 900 *police officials had been arrested and charged with a range of crimes in the past two years in Gauteng province alone.*

⁵³ SAPS Police Brutality Cases: <http://mg.co.za/article/2013-06-13-one-thousand-cops-arrested-since-1>

⁵⁴ SAPS Claims Reported in 2011/12 Financial Year: <http://www.politicsweb.co.za/politicsweb/view/politicsweb/en/page71656?oid=363940&sn=Detail&pid=71656>



He highlighted that these officers *were arrested by other police officers*, suggesting that there are SAPS members that are willing to remove criminals from the SAPS.

According to Petros, *training alone will not be sufficient to deal with police abuses*.⁵⁵ IPID spokesperson Moses Dlamini said that there is a decrease of 16%: 5 869 cases were received in 2010/11 compared to 4 923 cases that were received in 2011/12.⁵⁶

The question arises of why the SAPS officers are so brutal. Graeme Hosken from The Centre for the Study of Violence and Reconciliation reported the following:

The message from the South African criminologists and the Independent Complaints Directorate (ICD) stated: *Negligent police management, poor training, disrespect for law and order, criminal members within police ranks and blatant disregard for internal disciplinary procedures are the chief causes behind the scourge of police brutality gripping South Africa.*

⁵⁵ SAPS Officers arrested and convicted: <http://www.issafrica.org/events/understanding-police-brutality-in-south-africa-challenges-and-solutions>

⁵⁶ Moses Dlamini: <http://www.issafrica.org/events/understanding-police-brutality-in-south-africa-challenges-and-solutions>



4. CONCLUSION

This thesis has concluded that **abuse** is in fact recorded since biblical times. Sexual **abuse** tops the historic records of **Abuse**. From the period after Christ **abuse** took place in brutal forms. Many evangelists of the preaching of the Gospel were martyred to death in different horrific ways.

The most brutal **abuse** case in history from a global point of view was of the Crucifixion of Christ. He was an innocent man who experienced physical **abuse** in its most horrific form. This however, has not changed. The innocent are being abused till this day.

In all of the **abuse** cases, all of the victims can testify to the same experience. The fear, the hurt, and the why's? There is a significant comparison to every case; it is almost exactly the same. They can all describe their abuser's behaviour from one mouth. This brings this thesis to the question that can these abusers have the same demonic activity that is manifesting.

In many of these cases, the words "that is how we deal with them (women or girls) if they..." arises. In the research case study of the 100 black women that participated in the survey, many of them said it is "how it always has been." Men are the patriarchs of the families and the women the obedient helpers.

It brings this thesis to the following question of what impact has a patriarch has and what is the authority that he has over his family in a culture or a religion and how he can **abuse** it by establishing a cult.

oooOooo



A Pedagogical On Abuse in Global History



A Pedagogical On Abuse in Global History

I become my own jail when I am attached to guilt.

-author unknown-

CHAPTER

II



CHAPTER TWO

AN ASSESSMENT ON THE DIFFERENT FORMS OF ABUSE IN CULTS

Authority is not a quality one person 'has,' in the sense that he has property or physical qualities. Authority refers to an interpersonal relation in which one person looks upon another as somebody superior to him.

Erich Fromm¹

1. INTRODUCTION

This Chapter will discuss the abuse in cults and some cultures. Cults across the world claim to be the next big (Christian) religion, but it do not take too long for a former member to testify of the different forms of abuse that took place while in the cult environment.

¹ Quote: <http://www.brainyquote.com/quotes/keywords/authority.html>

The believe systems of cults may differ from one another, however, some leaders claim to be the son of God or the Messiah. The Holy Bible, the Word of God the Father, specifically address this matter. It was already been foretold and written. The Bible explicitly warns against those who would come in His name:

For many will come in my name, claiming, 'I am the Messiah,' and will deceive many.

Matthew 24:5 (NIV) emphasis added

Other Bible versions refer to this passage as:

For many shall come in my name, saying, 'I am Christ;' and shall deceive many.

Matthew 24:5 (KJV) emphasis added

Both versions state clearly "and shall deceive many" in the second part of the passage. Jesus Christ foretold that believable false messiahs and false prophets will come:

²³ *At that time if anyone says to you, 'Look, here is the Messiah!' or, 'There he is!' do not believe it.*

²⁴ *For false messiahs and false prophets will appear and perform great signs and wonders to deceive, if possible, even the elect.*

²⁵ *See, I have told you ahead of time.*

Matthew 24:23-25 (NIV)

Jesus Christ states clearly not to believe those who are able to perform great wonders; it is only to deceive everyone, even the selected.

This chapter will define cults and examine their characteristics; a brief discussion on Christian leaders who has been sentenced on charges of abuse will be examined. The Biblical perspective on certain Scripture that is being twisted to accommodate the cult belief will be discussed.

2. DEFINING CULTS

According to the *Wycliffe Bible Dictionary*² CULTS are being defined as systems of religious worship with special reference to rites and ceremonies. The cult or cultus is the focal point of a religion and assumes forms and symbols which most clearly reveal the distinctive character of the religion.

As the focus of religious life, the cultus becomes the point at which the sense of the sacred is most highly concentrated, and thus serves as an index to the innermost quality of religion the term is also descriptive of minority religious groups holding beliefs regarded as unorthodox or spurious, and in this sense it was applied to early Christianity by the officials of the Roman state religion.

The religion of Israel was in constant conflict with, but eventually triumphed over, the base cults of her neighbours, such as the worship of Baal and Asherah with their many prophets and priests (see 1 Kings 18:19).

The extremely degraded nature of these cults with temple prostitutes and child sacrifices has been made startlingly clear by the Canaanite tablets found at Ras Shamra and Phoenician burials near Carhage.

² Pfeiffer, Charles F; Vos, Howard F; Rea, John (1975) *The Wycliffe Bible Encyclopedia*, Volume 1. USA: Moody Press.p.408

The early Christian church doubtless inherited numerous forms and customs of worship from the Jewish synagogue; but it is very doubtful if pagan worship, such as that of the mystery religions, exercised an appreciable influence on early Christian worship.

Research has rather conclusively shown that external and superficial resemblances do not necessarily prove dependence. In certain particular instances the most that seems probable is a similarity in terminology, a terminology to which Christianity gave a new content and meaning.

A cult is any religious group which differs significantly in some one or more respects as to belief or practice from those religious groups which are regarded as the normative expression of religion in our total culture.³

All cults have the following in common:

- a) A central authority that structures their philosophy and life-style.
- b) There is a "we" versus "they" complex: every cult believes that there is an *outside force* coming to destroy them.
- c) Each member has a commitment to evangelize their belief.
- d) Cults are embedded in isolation from the outside world.
- e) Self-proclaimed Christian cults are almost always accused of sexual abuse or polygamist activities.

³ Martin, Walter (2003) *The Kingdom of the Cults: The Definitive Word on The Subject*. USA: Bethany House Publishers. p.17

2.1 Characteristics of Cults⁴

Cults have shown similar characteristics that have been recorded by those who study and do researches in this field. Many cults claim to be a new denomination of a new Christianity. This however, is breaking down Christianity in its true Biblical sense. The following characteristics of cults specifically show to be of a Christian nature.

- Cults almost always **claim to be Biblically-based** or a Christian organization for example the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints.
- All cults are **in denial or redefine the Christian doctrines** for example the Jehovah's Witnesses deny the deity of Jesus Christ.
- Cults may **adhere to essential Christian teachings** while exhibiting other characteristics of cults, for example the International Church of Christ adheres to traditional views of God and Christ, but the members regard their movement as the only one proclaiming the true message of salvation today.
- Cults almost always claim to be **led by divinely inspired leaders** i.e. they believe their leaders have the capability of receiving revelation directly from God or have a divine understanding of the Bible. For example, the Unification Church's members regarded their leader equal to Christ.
- Cults almost always claim to **possess a new and inspired scripture** that supplements or supersedes the authority of the Bible. For example, Scientologists regard the writings of L. Ron Hubbard as the works of a genius who discovered the keys to understand life and death.

⁴ Stokes, Jerry (2007) Changing World Religions, Cults & Occult. USA: Jerry Stokes. pp.8-10

- Cults almost always claim to be **the only true church** in the world. For example, The LDS teaches that eternal life can only be achieved by being baptized as a member of the LDS church.

Many followers are deceived into one person's claims of being the true Messiah or the son of God (Christ); in almost all of the cults that has this foundation abuse its followers by fear. Later on these cults are in the spotlight for the sexual abuse of children. If they are then investigated, the truth of the lie is exposed.

The leader's intention was of sexual interest and he had a perverse idea of freely exploit those "in the name of God." Not only is he abusing his power to live in a sexual environment, but he used his authority to blasphemed God, the Father.

2.2 What is a Cult?

The origin of the word *cult* derives from the Latin word *cultus*. This is a form of the verb *colere*, which means: *to worship or give reverence to a deity*.

Cultus however, was a universal word for worship, irrespective of the particular god in question. The Vulgate, that is a Latin translation of the Bible, use the word in the broad sense of worship, irrespective of the god in view. The word Cultus is used in Christian Latin scripture that refer to the one true God.

It is therefore taken into consideration that the word *cult* applied to a religious group. The meaning of the word has a broad spectrum for the purpose of this thesis.

3. A COMPENDIUM OF CULTS AND RELIGIONS OF REPORTED ABUSE CASES

Sexual exploitation is defined as *the exercise of power for the purpose of controlling, using, or abusing another person sexually in order to satisfy the conscious or unconscious needs of the person in power,*⁵ whether those needs be sexual, financial, emotional, or physical.

Sexual abuse can vary from having to live in a sexually coercive environment to undesirable touching to rape.⁶

It may be masqueraded as a marriage to the leader or as a form of spiritual preparation, or it may come about as the explicit seduction of vulnerable females or males by those in power.

In many groups, the husbands are given complete control over their wives; this includes a license for sexual activities without conjoint consent. Marital rape is a conventional standard in some cults.⁷

The question arises of in which cults or religions are abusive.

⁵ Hall, Marny (1996) *Sexualities*: Volume 19. USA: Haworth Press. p.39

⁶ Hall, Marny (1996) *Sexualities*: Volume 19. USA: Haworth Press. p.39

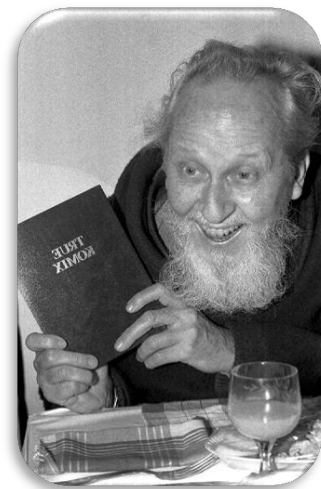
⁷ Hall, Marny (1996) *Sexualities*: Volume 19. USA: Haworth Press. p.40

3.1 Children of God / The Family International

Form of Abuse: Sexual Abuse of underage girls and women

The founder, David Berg, was known as *Moses David* or *Dad*. He was known for his vile sexual fantasies. In 1968 Berg dubbed his followers the *Children of God*. The name was changed in 1978 to *Family of Love* and later *Family International*. It is also known today as *The Family (TF)*.

Berg taught his followers to follow the Bible but claimed he was the Christian prophet for this era. His writings were called *Mo Letters* and these writings informed his followers of his new divine revelations. Berg declared himself against the system which he believed hypocritically distorted the Word of God into a sexually repressive message:



"Enjoy yourself and sex and what God has given you to enjoy, without fear or condemnation! For 'perfect love casts out all fear,' for 'fear hath torment,' particularly sexual fears [which] can be physical torture!" He did not want his followers to suffer as he did "the horrors of such sexual frustrations and condemnations."

Berg encouraged female followers to expose their breasts in public; he also urged females to become "hookers for Jesus." Berg's controversial conversion method was called *Flirty Fishing*.

This involved *witnessing* to outsiders in such a manner that it may involve sexual activities between female members and potential members.

These women married or not, had to be willing to *go all the way if it was deemed necessary* with the intention to *reach someone for Christ*.

If a child was conceived during this reaching, it will be called a Jesus-baby. Berg's wife, or his queen, had a Jesus-baby and she called him Ricky Rodriguez.

Former members witnessed the "queen" having sexual intercourse with her own son at the age of eleven. Davida Kelly, a former member, stated that it was required to have actual intercourse with Berg at the age of twelve, Berg started sexually abuse her at the age of five.

Rodriguez was dubbed the Crown Prince, who escaped in 2001. He made a video recording of his plans to take revenge on his mother and others that abused him as a child.⁸

3.2 Davidian Branch⁹

Form of Abuse: Sexual Abuse of underage girls and women

David Koresh, born as Vernon W. Howell in 1959, had already begun to give the message of his own "Christhood", proclaiming that he was "the Son of God, the Lamb who could open the Seven seals".

Former leader, Lois Roden, died in 1986 and Koresh was his successor. Koresh taught his followers that monogamy was the only way to live, but polygamy was only allowed for him. In March 1986, Koresh had sexual intercourse with Karen Doyle when she was 14 years old.

⁸ Children of God: <http://worldcultwatch.org/children/>

⁹ David Koresh: <http://murderpedia.org/male.K/k/koresh-david.htm>

He claimed Doyle as his second wife. In August 1986, Koresh began a secret sexual relationship with Michele Jones, his wife's younger sister; she was only 12 years old. In 1986, Koresh preached to his followers, based upon his interpretation of the Biblical Song of Solomon, that he was entitled to 140 wives, and 60 women as his "queens" and 80 women as his concubines.

Koresh declared a new theology pertaining to his "marriage" to Doyle. It was called the "New Light", and a doctrine of polygamy only for himself, he called it "The House of David".



According to this doctrine, Doyle was supposed to have a daughter named Shoshanna who would be married to his firstborn son, Cyrus. When Doyle failed to conceive, his sexual desire turned to his wife's sister.

Former Davidian, David Bunds, stated that Koresh's doctrine of polygamy "*rose out of his deep desire to have sex with young girls.*" He convinced himself that it was God's will to be a polygamist and that he was free of guilt and could have sexual intercourse with numerous underage girls.

The 1993 U.S. Department of Justice report sets out detailed evidence of historical child sexual and physical abuse. Special Agent David Aguilera¹⁰ had interviewed former Branch Davidian Jeannine Bunds. She claimed that Koresh fathered approximately fifteen children with several women and underage girls as young as 12 years of age at the compound.

¹⁰ Moore, Carol (2011) The Davidian Massacre. Chapter 2. Published online: <http://www.carolmoore.net/waco/TDM-02.html>

Bunds claimed that she herself personally delivered seven of these children. She further stated that Koresh annuls all marriages of couples who joined his cult, for the reason to have exclusive sexual access to all the women. Bunds confirmed that Koresh have sexual relations with underage girls from the age of 11.

3.3 Devadasi / Yelamma¹¹

Form of Abuse: Sexual Abuse of underage girls, human trafficking of underage girls

The definition of the practice of Devadasi, means a woman who serves god. This is an ancient Indian tradition by which a girl is ritualistically dedicated or married to a god or to a temple to serve the goddess Yelamma.

Traditionally Devadasis had a specific status in their community, but in the past few years the practice has been made illegal, but unfortunately it is still being practiced. It has disintegrated in order for girls from a lower class household are being exploited and sexually abused in the sex industry.

The Devadasi practice of serving the goddess, *Yelamma*, has been exploited in order to serve the goddess by having sexual relations with men for money in their community once the dedicated girls reached puberty. The girls are extremely vulnerable of being sold or trafficked into the metropolitan brothels, for example Bombay, New Delhi.

¹¹ Devadasi: <http://www.everychild.org.uk/resources/devadasi/more-about-devadasi>

3.4 Jesus-Amen¹²

Form of Abuse: Physical Abuse

In 1996, the leader and a follower of the cult, Jesus-Amen received prison sentences for their part in the beating death of a 25 year old woman. The San Francisco Chronicle reported that the victim reportedly had originally complained of insomnia, but the members decided that her real problem was of demonic nature.

They decided to exorcise her from her demons. The exorcism ceremony lasted six hours. She was restrained by other members and the exorcism involved more than 100 kicks and punches; a towel was stuffed in her mouth to stifle her screams.

The woman suffered fourteen broken ribs; severe injuries to her head, and subsequently led to her death. The members remained with her lifeless body for four hours praying; the notified her relatives of her death.

3.5 Mormons

Form of Abuse: Sexual Abuse

In 2001 Gustav Niebuhr¹³ of the New York Times reported a sexual abuse scandal, titled: *Sex Abuse Lawsuit Is Settled By Mormons for \$3 Million*.

¹² Snow, Robert L (2003) *Deadly Cults: The Crimes of True Believers*. USA: Greenwood Publishing Group. p.39

¹³ Mormons Abuse Case: <http://www.nytimes.com/2001/09/05/us/mormons-paying-3-million-to-settle-sex-abuse-case.html>

The Church disclosed that they would pay \$3 million to settle a lawsuit by an Oregon man who claimed he was sexually abused as a child by a church member. The lawsuit stated that Mormon officials were well aware in advance of the abuse allegations of the accused member's history of child molesting allegations.



In an interview, Von G. Keetch, a Salt Lake City representative lawyer for the church, said that it strongly believed that the case "lacked merit" and had settled only out of concern that the litigation, already a decade old, could continue for years more, at high cost.

Keetch said:

"The decision was made after a number of rulings against the church by a county judge presiding over the case in Portland. Among the rulings were that the church could be held liable for the conduct of one member against another, and that the plaintiff could argue that the abuser was a clergyman because he held the title of high priest, which the church describes as a common lay designation."

The victim, age 11, was sexually abused in 1991, and the Mormon member stayed with them in their family home. The family, however, informed the Church, and they advised against the arrangement not informing the family of the previous allegations of child sexual abuse.

3.5.1 Mormon School: West Ridge Academy – The Utah Boys Ranch¹⁴

Form of Abuse: Physical, emotional, psychological Abuse of boys

The boys of the West Ridge Academy in Utah, USA, are raising awareness of their abuse, torture and atrocities that is taking place in this school. Their website is called *The Mormon Gulag*.

Seen as troubled teenage boys, parents can send their children to a school like this to transform their bad behaviour into a more religious behaviour of being good. These Mormon men are visiting the Utah



regions to evangelise their religious belief of converting a troubled boy into a spiritual wonder. Once there, the boys are literally treated as criminals in a high risk jail.

One boy told how he was escorted to the ranch in handcuffs for twelve hours in a vehicle. He further stated how they are humiliated and break down to nothing. This school is overpowered with psychological abuse combined with physical abuse and verbal abuse.

These boys cannot report any abuse, as the parents are instructed to ignore any claims for it is a manipulation tool the child would use; it is

¹⁴ Mormon Schools Abuse: <http://ldssexchildabuse.blogspot.com/>

apparently a tactic the leaders encounter most. Boys reported that there are no medical nurses or examiners; no telephones available to phone the police; no government authority visiting the premises. The reason for this:

*"What sets us apart is that we're the only residential treatment facility that doesn't seek or accept government funding. If we did, **they'd control us**,"* said Senator Buttars to a reporter. (Emphasis added)

3.6 Sangomas

Form of Abuse: Sexual Abuse of underage children; physical abuse of children

Sangomas in South Africa are known for consulting the ancestors for the purpose of giving its clients certain powers, or heal certain sicknesses and so on. Sangomas can also be a solution for troubles of all kinds. Especially children that has a problem for not being able to bring good grades home, having medical conditions that is seen by the parents as an evil spirit manifesting through the child. In some cases the parents cannot pay the Sangoma his fees, and offers a child as payment.



The Bulawayo24¹⁵ reported in July 2012 of a Sangoma who is accused of sexually abusing eight children over a period of three months. He pleaded not guilty to the twelve counts of aggravated indecent assault.

¹⁵ Sangoma Child Abuse: <http://bulawayo24.com/index-id-news-sc-regional-byo-17851-article-Sangoma+accused+of+sexually+abusing+eight+children+.html>

The Sangoma claims that the people of the village are jealous of him as a traditional healer; he also claims that he is too old to be sexually aroused to abuse children.

The State alleges that the man ordered the boy to undress and lie down facing downwards. The Sangoma undressed himself and sodomised the boy. He gave the boy a portable radio and told him to return to his homestead.

During the same period seven children aged between five and eight years were on their way home. As they passed through the Sangoma's homestead, he pretended to take photographs of them. The State claimed that he tried to lure them into homestead promising to give them chicken. The children complied and were led to his sleeping hut. When the children entered his sleeping hut, he locked the door and ordered them to undress. The child were ordered lie on the bed facing downwards. The boy said he was sodomized and the Sangoma

He allegedly had anal sex with the boy and the boy screamed due to the pain he felt and the State claims that he silenced his screams with his hand. He did the same to the other children.

There are many reports of Sangomas abusing children sexually;¹⁶ they are also accused of physically abusing children for *muti*, African traditional medicine.

Traditional Africans believe that muti can protect them, hide them if wanted by Police,¹⁷ help to escape from jail,¹⁸ it is believed to help to conceive.¹⁹

¹⁶ Sangoma Child Sexual Abuse: <http://www.sowetanlive.co.za/news/2013/07/11/sangoma-rapist-sentenced-to-life>

¹⁷ Sangoma Protection: <http://lestimes.com/?p=359>

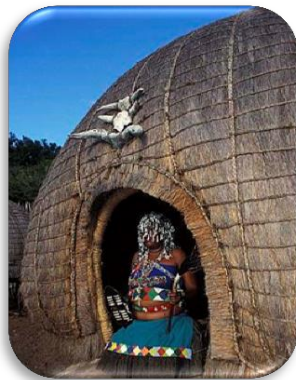
¹⁸ Sangoma Escape from jail: http://www.slate.com/articles/life/dispatches/2012/01/making_sense_of_muti_and_traditional_healing_culture_in_south_africa_.html

¹⁹ Muti Help Conceive: <http://www.health24.com/Experts/Question/traditional-muti-to-help-to-conceive-20080801>

There are many more believes in the Sangoma's Muti; unfortunately it is not entirely true that this muti is only made from plants, herbs or animal parts.²⁰ Strong muti is a concoction of human tissue and it is believed to have extremely high powers.

3.6.1 The Sangoma of South Africa

The Eyewitness reporter, Alex Eliseev, reported of the Sangoma who married a 13 year old girl in February 2013.²¹ The community were outraged and informed the authorities. The 57 year old Sangoma cured the girl of epileptic fits. He offered the parents R5,000 lobola in January to marry her to take care of her.



Many South Africans believed that more Muti Killings will take place as the 2010 Soccer World Cup drew near. A report, commissioned by the Human Rights League in Mozambique in partnership with Childline South Africa, took seven months to complete.

The report revealed that 70% of people surveyed in South Africa and Mozambique believed that human body parts make muti more effective.

Muti murders or killings refer to the ritual of a Sangoma that is extracting a certain body part for a certain request of his client for a specific need. If the client seeks healing for being under educated, the Sangoma will identify a prospective child who seems to be intelligent and good in his schoolwork.

²⁰ Children for Muti: <http://www.sowetanlive.co.za/news/2012/09/27/snatched-boy-safe>

²¹ <http://ewn.co.za/2013/02/05/Sangoma-will-be-prosecuted-for-marriage>

The Sangoma will entrap the child, usually after sunset or during the night time. The Sangoma usually has an assistant, but not always, to help him hold the child down. They believe the louder and harder the child scream or shout through this agony, the stronger the medicine would be.

In a case like this, the Sangoma would remove his brains, the area where the intelligence would be found. The skull would be cracked open to get a piece of the brain; the child would then be left for dead in the bushes.²²

Muti murders are not rare in Southern Africa. In another case, the client wanted to be healed of her bad skin tone. The prospected child were entrapped and skinned alive from the neck area to the upper torso, her agonizing screams were heard and a good Samaritan waited for the Sangoma to leave, and took the little girl to a hospital. The girl died of the traumatic shock a few hours later after being admitted.²³

3.7 Scientology²⁴

Form of Abuse: Psychological, emotional and reported sexual abuse of members and their family members

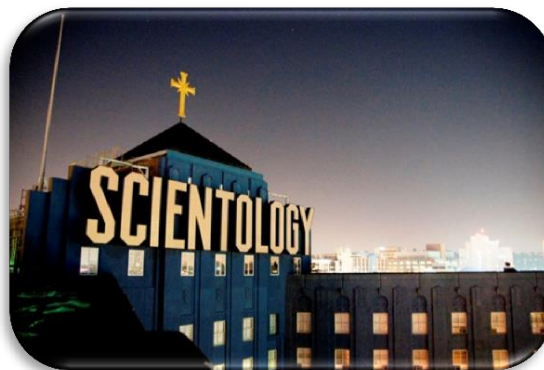
Scientology is a body of beliefs and associated practices formed by L. Ron Hubbard (1911–1986), beginning in 1952 as a successor to his earlier self-help system, Dianetics. Hubbard characterized Scientology as a religion, and in 1953 integrated the Church of Scientology in Camden, New Jersey.

²² The Witness: Identity Protected

²³ The Samaritan: Identity Protected

²⁴ Melton, Gordon J (1992) *Encyclopedic Handbook of Cults in America*. USA: Garland Publications.pp.59-60

Scientology teaches that people are *immortal beings who have forgotten their true nature*. There is a technique of *spiritual rehabilitation* that is a form of counselling branded as *auditing*. Practitioners intend to consciously re-experience traumatic events in the new member's past in order to free them of their *limiting* effects. Study materials and auditing sessions are made available to members on a *fee-for-service* basis, which the church describes as a "fixed donation."



Scientology is a controversial new religious movement that has ascended in the twentieth century. The church has faced strict examination for many of its practices which, critics oppose; it included reconditioning and routinely defrauding the members; harassing the scientology critics; perceives antagonists with psychological abuse or character assassination and costly litigation.

In response, Scientologists have argued that their believe system is a sincere religious movement *that has been misrepresented, maligned and persecuted*. The Church of Scientology is known for taking aggressive legal action against its critics.

Further controversy has focused on Scientology's belief that souls or *thetans*, reincarnate. It is believed that thetans have lived on other planets before living on Earth, and that some of the related teachings are not revealed to practitioners until they have paid thousands of dollars to the Church of

Scientology. Another controversial belief held by Scientologists is that the practice of psychiatry is destructive and abusive and must be abolished.²⁵

3.8 Catholic Church

Form of Abuse: Sexual Abuse of girls and boys

There is a series of Sexual Abuse cases reported of the Catholic Church. Cases included anal and oral penetration and have resulted in criminal trials of the abusers and civil lawsuits against the Catholic Church districts and communities.



Many of the cases extent over numerous decades and are brought forward years after the abuse happened. Cases have also been brought against members of the Catholic hierarchy who did not report sex abuse allegations to authorities. It has been shown that the Catholics intentionally moved sexually abusive priests to other districts where the abuse continued.

This has led to a number of fraud cases where the Catholic Church has been suspected of deceiving sexually abuse victims by deliberately transferring priests, instead of eliminating them from their positions.²⁶

²⁵ Scientology and Psychology: <http://twentyfirstfloormirror.wordpress.com/2013/02/26/skeptic-news-church-of-scientology-denies-holding-woman-in-isolation/>

²⁶ Abuse in the Catholic Church: http://usatoday30.usatoday.com/news/religion/2010-06-24-fraud23_ST_N.htm

3.8.1 A Survey for the U.S. Conference of Catholic Bishops²⁷

A survey that was released in 2004 found that there were more than 11,000 allegations of sexual abuse by priests that children made. 4,450 priests were accused and represented about 4% of the 110,000 priests who served during the 52 years covered by this study.

The report is based on a national survey of church records of the United States of America, and was compiled by the John Jay College of Criminal Justice for the conference. The bishops' conference commissioned the survey to get a better understanding of the prospect of the crisis. The following statistical facts were concluded:

- 50% of the accused priests had only one allegation against them
- Nearly 25% (1,112 priests) had two or three allegations against them
- Almost 13% (578 priests) had four to nine allegations against them
- Almost 3% (133 priests) had 10 or more allegations against them
- 6,700 of the 11,000 allegations were investigated and substantiated
- 1,000 were unsubstantiated
- 3,300 were not investigated because the priests involved had died at the time of the allegation

The director of the Survivors Network of Those Abused by Priests (SNAP), David Clohessy²⁸ stated:

²⁷ Survey for the US Conference of Catholic Bishops: <http://www.cnn.com/2004/US/02/16/church.abuse/>

²⁸ David Clohessy: https://www.jesus-is-savior.com/False%20Religions/Roman%20Catholicism/pope-warren_jeffs.htm

"Bishops have tried to hide this for years, so there is no reason to believe all of a sudden they would change their ways... The only prudent thing to do is to assume this is not the entire truth. This is a survey, not a report or investigation."

It is now believed that the Pope himself is responsible for the cover-up of this sexual scandal.²⁹ Sexual Abuse in the Catholic Church is herewith suggested for another research study.

3.9 Breslav Sect³⁰

Form of Abuse: Sexual Abuse of Women and Children, Physical Abuse, Child Maltreatment

In 2011 members of an abusive religious cult were arrested by the Jerusalem Police. The Chief-Superintendent Shlomo Dai, who is in charge of the investigation, stated that *the women and children were subjected to severe punishment, starvation, humiliation, and sexual abuse.*

It is believed that the leader himself were responsible for most of the abuse; he also "delegated" the responsibility to his "deputy" and his wives, who themselves were victims of abuse. It is also reported that the second in command leader, who was also known as the *primordial snake* or *the devil*, executed the victims himself when the leader could not do it himself.

²⁹ Pope covering up sexual abuse: https://www.jesus-is-savior.com/False%20Religions/Roman%20Catholicism/catholic_criminals.pdf

³⁰ Jerusalem Cult: <http://www.ynetnews.com/articles/0,7340,L-4103442,00.html>

The second in command leader joined the cult after he and his wife sought marital advice from the cult leader. After a few sessions with the leader, they joined the cult, got divorced, and the woman became the leader's wife.

Children of this cult was home schooled and were taught to play musical instruments to perform together in the streets. It is further reported that Police and social workers that is familiar with this case, described severe physical, emotional and sexual violence of the children ended up in the emergency rooms, some of the children were frequently admitted. The abused children were taken to different hospitals to prevent questions of the possible causes, with claims that broken bones were from falls or other accidents.³¹

3.10 Da Free John³²

Form of Abuse: Sexual Abuse; psychological abuse; sexual exploitation

In 1985 NBC Today interviewed former members of this cult. Da Free John headed the Johannine Daist Communion cult which had approximately 1000 active members in the California region.



The leader is being referred to as the Master, and his followers believe he is the Divine himself. A former female member admits that the leader got the females drunk, had *them stand up and strip*, and then took them into the bedroom to have sexual intercourse.

³¹ Breslav: <http://www.jpost.com/National-News/Nine-Breslav-members-of-alleged-cult-being-held>

³² Da Free John: <http://www.culteducation.com/reference/adida/adida1.html>

It is stated that he could do as he pleases with any women. A former female member said that he owed them.

Members were to give up their morality to adopt his. Former female member stated that *he would instruct women to defecate in bed with their husbands during the sex act. I saw some of his wives urinate on him.*

Children consumed alcohol from as early as ten years of age. Children are the "property" of the Master and do not belong to its parents. Children are apparently protected from sexual activities. The messianic speeches and bizarre sexual activities are kept hidden from the outside world.

3.11 The Twelve Tribes^{33 34}

Form of Abuse: Physical Abuse; Child Slavery

The Twelve Tribes were founded by former carnival barker and high school guidance counsellor, Elbert Eugene Spriggs, and were called *The Light Brigade* in the early 1970s.³⁵

Robert Pardon,³⁶ executive director of the New England Institute of Religious Research, which studied the Twelve Tribes says:

This man is viewed as being like Moses.... You've got someone at the top who claims to have a direct pipeline to God and no accountability. When you have those two premises, you've got a deadly combination.

³³ Spriggs: http://www.cephasministry.com/the_twelve_tribes_sect.html

³⁴ Palmer, Susan J (1999) Children in New Religions. USA: Rutgers University Press.pp.153-171

³⁵ Barna, Mark (2009) Twelve Tribes Living As One. Article: <http://gazette.com/twelve-tribes-living-as-one/article/45677>

³⁶ Robert Pardon: <http://absolutewrite.com/forums/archive/index.php/t-122082.html>

They recruit new members at peace rallies and rock concerts; they were customers on the *Grateful Dead* and *Phish* touring circuits,³⁷ handing out literature promoting salvation through membership and vending organic foods, medicines, handcrafted candles, soaps and oils. The cult claimed to be nothing more than a spiritual brotherhood, but their literatures inspire the curious to visit their shops and compounds with the slogan: *come for a day, or to stay*.

But critics claim that the Twelve Tribes is *really a brainwashing sham religion that preys on lost souls, sucking members dry of their money, property and identity while fattening the pockets of the reclusive Spriggs*. Members give their land, homes, vehicles and bank accounts to the cult, declaring to live mutually as one.



Children are home schooled until their early teens and then had to work in factories and shops. While state governments regulate home-schooling programs, children of the Twelve Tribes do not achieve high school diplomas. They are not allowed to pursue high school equivalency degrees or university or college.

Children are not permitted to fantasize, imagine or have toys. Magazines, television, radio or any form of technology are banned, due to the fact that independent thought is considered sinful.

Medical doctors are seldom consulted; children do not receive vaccinations; the cult teaches the children that it is acceptable *to lie to those who do not deserve the truth*.

³⁷ For more information: <http://www.hypebot.com/hypebot/2013/05/the-early-beginnings-of-direct-to-fan-how-grateful-dead-and-phish-made-it-happen.html>

This cult promotes racism, believing that black people are subservient to white people and that Martin Luther King Jr. *deserved to be killed.*'

Over the past three decades members have been involved in high-profile kidnapping, abuse and child labour scandals. Prosecutors were planning on having the children examined by court-appointed doctors but the charges were quickly dropped and the children were sent home after a judge ruled the search was illegal.

Former members say despite the scandals, the abuse has never stopped. Current members readily confirms that any elder is to discipline any child who disobeys, *striking them with a bamboo rod or a balloon stick dipped in resin to make it sturdy.* William Smith, a Twelve Tribes elder, said: "We use a thin, reed-like rod, it will inflict pain but not damage tissue."³⁸

3.12 The Church Of Satan; Satanism; Related Satanic Cults

Form of Abuse: Physical, emotional, psychological, sexual abuse of children

The first book ever published, Michelle Remembers, was co-written by the victim herself and her psychiatrist. This book was discredited after investigations found that the events as the victim describes it were very unlike and impossible. Michelle Smith's book documents her memories of the abusive events.

Even though the controversy denies the existence of child sexual abuse in this cult, one should keep in mind that the daughter of the high priest had a

³⁸ Twelve Tribes Child Abuse: http://worldnews.nbcnews.com/_news/2013/09/06/20357783-spanking-sect-german-police-seize-40-children-over-suspicion-of-abuse?lite

caesarean section at the age of thirteen.³⁹ Zeena Schreck,⁴⁰ daughter of Anton Lavey, described her father in an interview:

He was very confused, and as a result, so are the inheritors of the church. He's been accused of being a con man – which is accurate – but he wasn't a very efficient one.

He was lazy and never planned for the future or looked after his family because that is the nature of LaVeyan Satanism: Get what you can, live only in the here and now, care only about yourself and get other people to care for you. It's like you're one big infant.



In 2011, South Africa was shocked to read reports of a Satanic Ritual in the newspapers. Two girls were tied up and doused with petrol and set alight on a hill in Linmeyer, South of Johannesburg.

It was believed that it was during the time of a satanic festival date. The instigators were sent to 17 years imprisonment after confessing to the case.

Satanists defended their belief, saying that this was children who experimented with the idea of being a Satanist.⁴¹

³⁹ Zeena pregnant at 13: http://www.vice.com/en_za/read/beelzebubs-daughter-0000175-v19n4?Contentpage=2

⁴⁰ Beelzebub's Daughter: http://www.vice.com/en_za/read/beelzebubs-daughter-0000175-v19n4

⁴¹ Satanic Ritual 2011: <http://www.news24.com/SouthAfrica/News/Ritual-victim-paid-for-petrol-20130520>

3.12.1 Satanic Abuse Cases Reported Globally

Perth, Western Australia

In 1991, police in Perth linked Scott Gozenton, a self-professed Satanist, with organized child sexual abuse. His lawyer claimed 13 satanic covens were present in the area, holding peculiar orgies involving children, and that Gozenton had been monitored and threatened by "coven" members during the court proceedings.⁴²

Melbourne, Victoria

The statement provided to the Archdiocese by the victim, who wants to remain anonymous, makes chilling reading. He details how the Catholic priest, who has since died, first began abusing him at the age of 11 in 1961 when he was serving as an altar boy at the Sacred Heart Church in the bayside suburb of Sandringham and attending a Catholic school, where the priest was chaplain.

The priest got the victim alone in a room on the pretext of giving him a sex education lesson and sexually abused him. Later the priest would sexually abuse the boy in his car and at the Sacred Heart Church's presbytery, where the victim was lured on the promise of playing with toy soldiers. But it's the accounts of satanic rituals and the victim's eyewitness reports of murders that are harrowing.

In the statement he details at least three murders – a young girl, a youth and a young child. He says the victims were mostly drugged and appeared to be in a daze before having their throats cut or being

⁴² <http://ra-watch.livejournal.com/4950.html>

hacked with an axe. He says he was forced to take part in the rituals and was sexually abused during them by the priest and others involved in the ceremonies.

While claims of satanic rituals and ritualised sexual abuse by victims are nothing new, what makes these allegations different is the Melbourne Archdiocese's acceptance of the claims as being true. To our knowledge, it is the first time the Catholic Church in Melbourne has done that in writing. Some of the rituals, which occurred over a three year period, took place in an old house owned by the Catholic Church in Sandringham.⁴³

Belgium

One press report (*Sunday Express* 12.1.97) referred to suspected links between Dutroux and the self-styled Satanic Order of Abrasax based in southern Belgium. A letter found in the house of accomplice Bernard Weinstein (who Dutroux admits he drugged and buried alive) referred to the group and to the need to continue to procure 'presents' - in the form of human beings - for the High Priestess of the Order.

The media were asked to withhold this information for many months. A raid on the group 'temple' - an anonymous cottage - resulted in seizure of hundreds of videotapes, racks of computer discs, two human skulls and jars of animal blood.

At least six girls/young women were kidnapped and repeatedly sexual abused by Marc Dutroux and his accomplices between 1992 and 1996. An Marchal, Eefji Lambreks, Julie Lejeune and Melissa Russo were all

⁴³http://blogs.news.com.au/news/crime/index.php/news/comments/extraordinary_claims_true_catholic_church/#ixzz2eZqj2cAc

killed. The case broke in August 1996 when two other girls were rescued. They had been kept for months in a disguised cellar in Dutroux's house; the cellar had been specially constructed and contained a cage. The two young women said they had been 'raped and taped' repeatedly.

Two of the bodies were found at the same time as the survivors. The two other bodies were found two weeks later, following further confessions by Dutroux, in a cellar 15 feet deep under a concrete shack. As with the previous atrocity - the West case - police investigated a number of additional properties expecting to find more bodies but the tally remained at four.⁴⁴

Martensville, Canada⁴⁵

A satanic babysitter was accused of the most horrifying claims of child sexual abuse. This case was considered the most notorious sex crime of Canada.

The children stated the following:

- The mother asked her two year old of the chafing and redness around her genitals, and the child answered that a stranger poked at my bum with a pink rope.
- The children referred to the *Devil Church* where they were taken to. A local pilot found the blue building only 6 kilometres northwest of town.

⁴⁴ Kelly, Liz (1998) Confronting An Atrocity: The Dutroux Case. UK: Child & Woman Abuse Studies.p.36

⁴⁵ Martensville Scandal: <http://www.cbc.ca/fifth/martin/scandal.html>

- One child said that inside the 'Devil Church' he was stripped naked, hoisted in a cage and poked at.
- Another said that an axe handle was shoved up their bums.
- Several claimed they were stuffed in a freezer.
- They even said that they were sexually abused on a waterbed.
- The children claimed that they were threatened never to tell their parents.

It was confirmed in the spring of 1992 that a satanic cult called The Brotherhood of The Ram was active in the area and that police officers were members.

Rignano, Flaminio, Italy⁴⁶

some of the children began describing their "games" to their parents. They drew pictures of a "man in black" who wore a hood and drank his own blood, and said they had played a game in which "a wolf chases a squirrel and eats it".

They were warned that if they told their parents about the "games", they would be "taken away from their mothers by devils". If the truth were to come out and they were asked who had taught them to perform sexual acts, they were to say "my father".

The parents also reported bruising and swelling around their children's genital areas and that they had returned home from school in a confused state. Police say that the children were given tranquillisers and told they were sweets.

⁴⁶ Rignano, Italy Satanic abuse: <http://stju.blogspot.com/2007/04/another-satanic-child-abuse-accusation.html>

Three women teachers were among six people arrested yesterday accused of sedating and sexually abusing children as young as 3 at a school near Rome.

The teachers — two of whom are grandmothers who had taught at the school and at Sunday school for decades — are said to have part in the repeated abuse of 15 children aged 3 and 5 for a year, filming them in sexual acts with satanic overtones at the teachers' homes and in a wood.

United Kingdom Convictions⁴⁷

UK cases where satanist ritual abusers were successfully prosecuted and convicted:

- In 2011 four adults who were members of a satanist coven were convicted at Swansea Crown Court for sex offences against children and young adults. The satanist ritual abuse committed by the members occurred in Kidwelly, Wales, where their coven was based, but also in some other parts of the country.
- In 1982 four adults were convicted in Telford, Shropshire, for a series of sexual and other serious offences against children which involved satanic rituals. One of the defendants carved an inverted cross on one child's abdomen and branded her genitals with a scorching altar knife.

⁴⁷ UK Convictions of Satanic Abuse Cases: <http://ukpaedos-exposed.com/childhood-abuses/ritualistic-abuse-in-the-uk/>

- In 1987 a man was convicted at the Central Criminal Court in London for the sexual abuse of 15 girls and boys. He assaulted his victims on an altar dedicated to Satan and forced them to abuse each other. The rituals were performed with a bloody pentagram drawn on the floor.
- In 1990 Reginald Harris was convicted at Worcester Crown Court and sentenced to two and half years in prison after admitting to two specimen charges of unlawful sexual intercourse with a 15 year old girl and her younger sister.

The Court heard that he had used satanic rituals to terrify and control the children. Harris told his victims he was a satanic high priest. The children were terrified into submission by Harris's satanic practices. The Court also heard how he had drawn up a satanic "coven contract of marriage" to a girl.

- In 1992 a 57 year old satanist was sentenced at Liverpool Crown Court to 12 years in prison for the sexual abuse of his niece.

It was made known to the court how he raped his niece two to three times per week between the ages of 10 and 12. It was brought under the attention of the court that he had a "black magic room" where he kept an altar and ritual equipment.

At the age of 12 she became pregnant with her abuser's child and she was forced to give birth in his "black magic room". The evidence was clearly provided at the trial proving that the victim was horrified by her uncle's satanic rituals.

USA – The Little Rascals Day Care Case

The little rascals Day Care Center was a day care center in Edenton, North Carolina that shook the US nation. Betsy and Bob Kelly were involved in this sex scandal and this included allegations of satanic ritual abuse.

Children testified to have been sodomized with objects, including a knife, oral sex was described in detail. Children were threatened if they thought of telling anyone.⁴⁸

Another child testified against “Mr Bob” confirming that he was sodomized with a knife and a unknown object; oral sex was reported; this child had to eat his own faeces.⁴⁹

A girl testified that they were exposed to pornography and had to watch it with the other children. She also confirms the oral sex and penetration; sodomy with Mr Bob’s penis and female workers used their finger. She witnessed Mr Bob having sexual intercourse with all three of the female workers on several occasions.⁵⁰

There were too many legal errors in the case; the case was overturned and “Mr Bob” was a free man.

⁴⁸ Little Rascals Day Care Centre Child1: <http://www.pbs.org/wgbh/pages/frontline/shows/innocence/kelly/andy.html>

⁴⁹ Little Rascals Day Care Centre: <http://www.pbs.org/wgbh/pages/frontline/shows/innocence/kelly/jamie.html>

⁵⁰ Little Rascals Day Care Centre: <http://www.pbs.org/wgbh/pages/frontline/shows/innocence/kelly/bridget.html>

3.13 Jehova's Witnesses⁵¹

Form of Abuse: Sexual abuse of women and children

A Jehovah's Witness member, who was accused of sexually abusing a child, had the complaint covered up by the church. He was sentenced to 13 years imprisonment. Gordon Leighton admitted to the sexual abuse of a child when he was confronted by the church's elders in Washington

The elders were well aware of Leighton's admissions for three years; but the elders refused to co-operate with the investigation, and stated "what they had heard was confidential."



The elders conducted a private investigation; a meeting was arranged with Leighton where he was confronted by the elders with the allegations. He denied the allegations, but later broke down and confessed that he sexually abused the complainant.

Leighton's trial was only six days long. A ministerial servant, of the Jehovah's Witness church, denied all the charges against him and that Leighton confessed to the elders.

A recent case⁵² of sexual abuse was in August, 2013. A former member of the Los Lunas Congregation of Jehovah's Witnesses is suing the church.

⁵¹ Jehovah's Witness Accused of Sexual Abuse: <http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2400938/Jehovahs-Witness-wife-died-refusing-blood-transfusion-jailed-13-years-child-sex-abuse-covered-religions-elders.html>

⁵² Jehova's Sexual Abuse: <http://www.abqjournal.com/254868/abqnewsseeker/woman-sues-los-lunas-jehovahs-witnesses-claims-sex-abuse.html>

The 35 year old woman claims to have been sexually abused by an elder when she was eight years old. The church's elders responded to her allegations:

"(The mother) was instructed by the elders of Los Lunas that she should demonstrate her forgiveness by hosting (the elder) and his family in their home, and by permitting her children to spend time, including nights, at his home under (his) supervision."

Her lawyer Zalkin stated:

"This lawsuit highlights a disturbing trend of victims coming forward to tell their stories about sexual abuse within Jehovah's Witnesses congregations... The allegations by this victim and the victims of other cases show an alarming tolerance for abusers of children within the Jehovah's Witnesses religion."

3.14 Macumba and Candomblè

Form of Abuse: Physical, emotional, psychological, and sexual abuse

Black priests from Africa were brought as slaves between the 1500s and 1800s to Brazil. 1,5% Brazilians have declared Candomblè as their official religion. This religion however, is said to be Christian with the practice of Voodoo and related witchcraft activities and rituals. The deities, rituals and holidays are an integral part of Brazilian folklore today.⁵³ Allegations and rumours of this cult involved ritual abuse of children and humans; sexual ritual abuse was noted; torture, orgies and rape with an object or a crucifix was reported to deliverance ministers that specialize in this field.⁵⁴

⁵³ Macumbe and Candomblè: <http://uk.answers.yahoo.com/question/index?qid=20061005195204AAasXT4>

⁵⁴ Macumbe and Candomblè Abuse Allegations: <http://www.propheciesofrevelation.org/prayer14.php>

3.15 Martial Arts

Form of Abuse: Psychological abuse of children

The emotional bond between the teacher and student in these cases is developed through alternating abuse, physical or verbal, with praise or reward. Martial Art members validate their abuse by referring to a military boot camp with the hysterical sergeant who assess the recruit with constant verbal abuse and then "graduates" him. They also validate themselves by referring to *a person who is married to an alcoholic*.

*The main formula here is the abuse, the reward (or apology) and then reaffirmation of the bond whether through praise, recognition or some other sort of "reward". This is not about necessary discipline to teach a given skill, nor is it about an "Initiation"- rather **it is about a false discipline which is disguised abuse** - which merely keeps the student or soldier coming back for more orders or "training" and in essence centers on teaching obedience to an authority figure.⁵⁵ (emphasis added)*

3.16 Muktananda Paramahansa

Form of Abuse: Sexual abuse of young women

Time Magazine⁵⁶ referred to Muktananda Paramahansa as "The Guru's Guru" in 1976. He was recognized as a rare master of meditation and yoga of extraordinary fulfilment; he was a well-known guru who was visited by many leaders in different fields including Astronaut Edgar Mitchell, psychologist Carl Rogers, and California Governor Jerry Brown.

⁵⁵ Martial Arts Abuse: <http://apittman.com/blog/teaching/martial-arts-abuse-by-teachers>

⁵⁶ Time – Muktananda: <http://content.time.com/time/magazine/article/0,9171,914413,00.html>

Muktananda was accused of abusive behaviour which was in contrast with his teachings. Anonymous young women claimed that they have been raped by



Muktananda at the Ganeshpuri ashram, while other claimed he molested them with the excuse of checking their virginity.

Sarah Caldwell⁵⁷ suggested in her academic journal called *Nova Religio* that Muktananda was a practitioner of tantric sexual yoga in secret that was unethical and illegal.

3.17 Forum⁵⁸

Form of Abuse: Physical, emotional, and psychological abuse of members

Formerly known as *est* presented themselves as a spiritually and psychologically neutral "human potential" seminar. The Forum is obtainable by a company called *Werner Erhard and Associates*, led by the leader of the cult, Werner Erhard, also known as Jack Rosenberg.

This cult has deteriorated over time due to bad press of psychological abuse. Former members claimed of abusive indoctrination sessions, covering four days over two successive weekends, from nine in the morning to sometimes past midnight, with one break to have a meal for the whole day. Afterwards, members are pressured to join in weekly seminars and advanced courses, this

⁵⁷ Caldwell, Sarah (2001) *Nova Religio: The Heart of a Secret: A personal and Scholarly Encounter with Shakta Tantrism in Siddha Yoga*. USA: University of California Press. Journal Online Published: <http://www.jstor.org/discover/10.1525/nr.2001.5.1.9?uid=2&uid=4&sid=21102641781973>

⁵⁸ Forum Cult: <http://www.win.tue.nl/~aeb/secul/landmark/forum.html>

includes the notorious "six-day" course that occurs at a secluded campsite in the woods of upstate New York.

Forum leaders engage in confrontational and abusive tactics, group hypnosis, and regression exercises. These exercises are all in a completely sealed environment with members that are experiencing malnutrition and insomnia. It is suggested that the leaders of this cult have no mental health training, with the exception in the deliberately destructive techniques taught to them by Erhard himself.

3.18 Kashi Church Foundation⁵⁹

Form of Abuse: Physical, emotional, psychological, sexual abuse of members

"But... the guru is greater than God. Flesh man knows. The guru you can see and touch and feel. God, unless you're perfect, you cannot... The guru... is greater than God."

The leader, Ma Jaya, address her followers into a trance with these words. Ma Jaya has been accused of various allegations of abuse in the church's 35 years of existence. Her own adult daughter has sued the Kashi Church Foundation in Miami court months after the leader's death. She claims *much more happened on the ranch than anyone knew and has pushed the church,* which still has hundreds of members in New



⁵⁹ Ma Jaya: http://www.kashiashram.com/miaminewtimes/2013-05-14_Miami%20New%20Times_Ma%20Jaya%20and%20the%20Cult%20of%20Kashi.pdf.pdf

York, Atlanta, and Los Angeles, into quite possibly its most contested episode to date.

In 1981, when she was 14 years old, Ma Jaya's daughter says she was raped repeatedly by a 25-year-old church member... and her mother had ordered the rape.

Members claim abuses including beatings, paedophilia, forgery of official documents, and extortion; all ordered by Ma Jaya. Eight former members interviewed by New Times claims that Kashi members were beaten for disobedience or spiritual cleansing. A man claimed that he had to plunge his head into a barrel of red paint on Ma Jaya's request. Masked teenagers battered a 13 year old boy with rocks inside socks, for the reason being: *he had angered Ma Jaya*.

During the 1990s and early 2000s, former Kashi members alleged that abuses ranging from psychological control, extortion, and physical violence against adults and children occurred. Interviews, court filings, and a Rosenkranz-commissioned study of 21 former members by cult psychologist Paul Martin expose the following claims:

- *Ma Jaya either personally struck residents or ordered them beaten, according to nine respondents in Martin's study and eight former members interviewed by New Times.*
- *Police were twice called to extract children living with Ma Jaya.*
- *Ma Jaya demanded money from followers, 13 former residents alleged. "Ma conspired to defraud me of my inheritance," Richard Rosenkranz said in a March 2002 affidavit.*

- *Ma Jaya severely burned a man with a votive candle in 1981 to punish him for sexually molesting a child, said three witnesses interviewed by New Times and two additional respondents in Martin's study.*
- *The molested boy was "beaten at length by Ma" and "made to walk naked around the central pond with about 50 people watching," recalled one respondent in Martin's study. "His penis [was] painted black with a magic marker."*
- *Ma Jaya personally beat at least two children, Sal Conti claimed. "Ma slapped [a boy] across the face," he said in his deposition. "I had never seen someone hit that hard." A respondent in Martin's survey said she saw Ma "slug" a 2-year-old in the arm.*

3.19 Rev Ike⁶⁰

Form of Abuse: Sexual abuse of male employee

Reverend Ike, Frederic Joseph Eikerenkoetter, was accused of sexual harassment of a male employee in 1995. Even if the ministry survived the accusation, it never regained their former stature.



Eikerenkoetter began the eclectic ministry, The Pentecostalism, which was notorious for faith healing. He founded the United Church of Jesus Christ in the late 1950s and established the United Christian Evangelist Association, the business umbrella for his future projects.

⁶⁰ Reverend Ike: <http://dubois.fas.harvard.edu/reverend-ike-1-june-1935-religious-leader-was-born-frederick>

Eikerenkoetter was exposed to New Thought Philosophy ministers such as Norman Vincent Peale, and Dale Carnegie who popularise the new gospel of positive thinking. He started using the name, Reverend Ike in 1966.

3.20 The Rites of Passage

The most global religious rites are those of the indigenous societies of Africa and Australia. The rites are referred to as "Rites of Passage" in many cultures. These rites mark the social transition to sexual maturity. For boys, this usually involves circumcision⁶¹ and/or subincision.⁶² For girls, genital surgery connected with rites of passage usually involves clitoridectomy⁶³ and/or infibulation.⁶⁴

3.20.1 The Australian Mardudjara Aborigines

In some areas of Australia, mostly the northern and central regions, the Aborigines' traditions remain largely intact. The foundation of Aboriginal religion is the concept of the Dreaming.⁶⁵

According to their belief the world was originally formless and at a certain point in the mythic past, supernatural beings called Ancestors emerged and roamed about the earth.

⁶¹ Circumcision:

⁶² Subincision:

⁶³ Clitoridectomy:

⁶⁴ Infibulation:

⁶⁵ Brodd, Jeffrey (2009) *World Religions: A Voyage of Discovery*, 3rd Edition. USA: Saint Mary's Press.p.23

The Ancestors gave shape to the landscape and created the various forms of life, this includes the first human beings. They organized the human beings into tribes and specified the territory each tribe was to occupy. They also determined each tribe's language, social rules, and customs.

The Ancestors finished and departed from earth and left behind symbols of their presence in the form for example landmarks and rock paintings.

This period was called the Dreaming. The Aborigines believe that the spiritual essence of the Ancestors remains in various symbols. The sites at which these symbols are found are thought to be charged with sacred power. Only certain individuals are allowed to visit them, and must be approached in a specific manner.

The spiritual essence of the Ancestors is also believed to reside within each individual. An unborn child becomes animated by a particular Ancestor when the mother or another relative makes some form of contact with a sacred site. This animation involves a ritual that draws the Ancestor's spiritual essence into the unborn child. The sites and rituals associated with certain Ancestors are for men only.

3.20.1.1 Initiation-Symbolic Death, Spiritual Rebirth

When a boy is readied to become a man, his elders lead him into seclusion. The men will lay down surrounding the boy facing away from a fire. An assistant will sit on the

boy's chest, while another elder will pull and twist the boy's foreskin and proceed to slice it off.

The men will take the boy to kneel upon a shield over a low-lit fire and made to eat the good meat. Essentially, the meat is the boy's own foreskin. He must swallow without chewing it, and once he has succeeded, he as eaten his own boyhood, and become a man.



When the circumcision heals, the young man will go through a sub incision. His penis will be sliced on the underside, sometimes to the scrotum. The man is then made to stand over a fire to allow the blood to drip into it and purify it.

Apparently men do this to sympathize with their female counterparts. And although they will now have to squat to urinate because of these incision, when they become

married, some men will often times repeat the same blood-letting process.⁶⁶

3.20.2 Other Australian Aborigine

Among other Australian Aborigine cultures, a boy being initiated was expected to repeatedly hit his penis with a heavy rock until it was bruised and bloody. He also had several of his incisor teeth knocked out with a sharp rock by the adult men who were instructing him in the duties and obligations of manhood, and the secrets of their religion.

All of these rite of passage rituals were intended to be painful in order to increase the importance of the transition to adulthood.⁶⁷

3.20.3 Barabaig of East Africa

From East Africa the cattle herding Barabaig culture shave the boys' heads, and their foreheads are cut with three deep horizontal incisions that go down to the bone and extend from ear to ear. This leaves scarification that is identifying as a male receiving a "gar."⁶⁸

⁶⁶ Brodd, Jeffrey (2009) *World Religions: A Voyage of Discovery*, 3rd Edition. USA: Saint Mary's Press. pp.23-26

⁶⁷ Brodd, Jeffrey (2009) *World Religions: A Voyage of Discovery*, 3rd Edition. USA: Saint Mary's Press. pp.24-25

⁶⁸ Briggs, Philip (2009) *Tanzania: With Zanzibar, Pemba and Mafia*, 6th Edition. USA: The Globe Pequot Press inc. pp.406-407

3.20.4 Luiseño Indians of Southern California, USA.⁶⁹

Many Native American societies publicly celebrate a girl's first menses in the late 19th century. The parents of girls among the Luiseño Indians of Southern California proudly announced that their daughters were beginning to menstruate and becoming woman. The girls were partly buried in heated sand at this time.

The boys had to undergo severe ordeals such as *laying on red* and mounds and they cannot cry from pain as they are repeatedly bitten over the long period of time. They were also given *toloache*, a powerful hallucinogenic drug that made them ill and apparently sometimes caused their death.

Puberty ceremonies were generally performed with several boys at once. At the commencement the boys were given a small quantity of the juice of the roots of the *toloache* or jimson-weed, *Datura meteloides*. This soon stupefied them, and while they were in this condition dancing was kept up in a circle around them.

As soon as they recovered they had to engage in the dance themselves, at the conclusion of which they were taken by the person in charge of the rites into the field, not to their homes.

⁶⁹ Kroeber, Alfred L; Sparkman, Philip S; Waterman, Thomas T; DuBois, Constance G (1910) A Mission Record of the California Indians: From a Manuscript in the Bancroft Library. Berkeley: The University Press. pp.406-407

The following day they were required to bathe and be painted, and in the afternoon were taken to the dance again. This was kept up every day for a month, during which time they did not visit their homes.

The boys would receive a lecture and of the consequences if this lecture is or is not acted out. At the close of the lecture they were given some flour of white sage seeds mixed with salt. This they were required to chew and eject from their mouths into the small pit in the center of the circle.

The lecturer examined this, and by its appearance pretended to tell whether the youth who ejected it had heeded the counsel given him or not.

If dry he declared that he had done so, if moist, that he had not. In the latter case, shouts of disapprobation were made by the spectators.

3.20.5 The Satere Mawe Tribe of the Amazon⁷⁰

The Satere Mawe Tribe is an indigenous tribe located near the amazon. They are known for their agonizing rite of passage with bullet ant gloves.

When the boys turn thirteen, they depart to the forest with the tribe's shaman. The boys must gather the bullet ants⁷¹ and submerge them

⁷⁰ Frater, Jamie (2010) The Ultimate Book of Top Ten Lists. USA: Ulysses Press.p.450

into a solution that temporarily knocks the ants out. The ants are then woven into the mittens.

Upon waking up, the men will place their hands into the mittens and dance for a few minutes. The ant's sting prevents the body from protecting itself from pain.

The body begins to convulse, and the pain can last up to 24 hours⁷² and it makes the victim delusional and they lose their mind. The "men" becomes paralysed and fail to remember.

If they complete the ritual without crying out or shuddering they have become a man. The most respected men, who want to obtain the status of being a strong warrior, repeat the ritual 20 times.

3.21 The Amish: USA

The Amish presents themselves as Christian, which is in opposition what a real true Christian is. This thesis considers them as a Cult with their own belief system and not a Christian branch.

The Amish believe in a separation between church and state and that they should be able to take care of their own. Many problems arise when this

⁷¹ **Bullet Ants:** Paraponera, called Tucandera by the Satere-Mawé tribe, is a genus of ant consisting of a single species, the so-called Bullet Ant (*P. clavata*), named on account of its powerful and potent sting, which is said to be as painful as being shot with a bullet. According to the Schmidt Sting Pain Index, a bite from this ant it is ranked as the most painful. It is described as causing "waves of burning, throbbing, all-consuming pain that continues unabated for up to 24 hours". <http://www.amazon-secret.com/show.asp?m=2511>

⁷² <http://socyberty.com/society/rites-of-passage/>

complete separation and power is given to a culture within a nation. How can a society not become corrupt when there are no regulations from the federal government? The perception of a peaceful, loving, non-corrupt and non-harming community allows them to commit such atrocities of sexual abuse, animal abuse, and ignoring some federal laws without much attention.

Amish girls have escaped the lifestyle to tell their devastating story of the mothers and daughters that get violated in isolation, these women are not protected by the patriarch of the household.

The American Laws does not protect these woman and children. Incest is in the order of the day, and the boys are encouraged to have sexual intercourse with any girl they see fit, even their own sister or niece.

When the Amish girls have telephonic access to Social workers of Ohio, they have the attitude of "it's not our business." The Physical abuse was described by an Amish escapee, Torah Bontrager in an interview with Tim Ferriss.⁷³

The Amish take the Bible verse "spare the rod and spoil the child" in a literal sense. Parents routinely beat their children with anything from fly swatters, to leather straps (the most typical weapon), to whips (those are the most excruciating of), to pieces of wood.

When I was a little girl, my mom used to make me run down to the cellar to retrieve a piece of wood to get beaten with. I'd choose the thinner ones because I thought they'd hurt less.



⁷³ **Tim Ferriss' Interview with Amish Girl in 2008:** <http://www.fourhourworkweek.com/blog/2008/07/15/escaping-the-amish-part-1/>

One day I couldn't find a thin piece and I had to get a thicker one. Luckily, I discovered that the thick ones hurt less. So every time after that I'd get a thick one. It made her feel like she was hurting me more, and I'd scream harder just to make sure she didn't catch on that it actually hurt less.

One of my acquaintances stuttered when he was little and his dad would make him put his toe under the rocking chair, and then his dad would sit in the chair and rock over the toe and tell him that's what he gets for stuttering.

Even little babies get abused for crying too much during church or otherwise "misbehaving." I've heard women beat their babies — under a year old — so much that I cringed in pain.



Mary Byler, a 22 year old, who escaped from the Amish Community, recalls only having the word "bad" in her vocabulary to describe her experiences. Sexual assault and rape fills her childhood. She describes her horrific memories from her adolescence.⁷⁴

"If somebody was raping me, I'd look up to the ceiling, count the blocks or count the cracks in the wall, or completely not be there emotionally..."⁷⁵

Mary was continuously raped, sexually assaulted and abused by many members of the community. However, her own 12 year old brother, Johnny began sexually abusing her at the age of 6. Her brother's abuse continued into her teenage years. She also states that her stepfather physically abused them with shovels, hacksaws, and he even used his fists.

⁷⁴ <http://amishdarkside.blogspot.com/>

⁷⁵ Amish ABC News: <http://abcnews.go.com/2020/story?id=316371&page=1>

The New York Times reporter, Malcolm Gay,⁷⁶ did a story of Chester Mast in September, 2010. He faced charges of repeated sexual assault of a minor, statutory rape, sodomy and sexual misconduct involving a child in two states of America.

He has victimized at least six girls, ages five to 15, including some outside the Amish community over a period of ten years. James Small, a detective with the Waushara County Sheriff's Department, reported that Chester convinced a girl that he could take her stomach aches away and he asked her to lie on his stomach. The girl recalled being on top of him in his bedroom and that he ultimately penetrated her.

There are many more stories of physical, emotional and sexual abuse within the Amish community of young woman that escaped this lifestyle. The question however is, why does American Law consent to it?

3.22 Female Genital Mutilation (FGM)

The World Health Organization (WHO)⁷⁷ states the following facts:

- FGM includes procedures that intentionally alter or cause injury to the female genital organs for non-medical reasons.
- The procedure has no health benefits for girls and women.
- Procedures can cause severe bleeding and problems urinating, and later cysts, infections, infertility as well as complications in childbirth increased risk of newborn deaths.

⁷⁶ http://www.nytimes.com/2010/09/03/us/03amish.html?pagewanted=all&_r=0

⁷⁷ <http://www.who.int/mediacentre/factsheets/fs241/en/index.html>

- About 140 million girls and women worldwide are currently living with the consequences of FGM.
- FGM is mostly carried out on young girls sometime between infancy and age 15.
- In Africa an estimated 101 million girls 10 years old and above have undergone FGM.
- FGM is a violation of the human rights of girls and women.

WHO⁷⁸ explains what involves FGM. FGM includes all procedures that involve partial or total removal of the external female genitalia, or other injury to the female genital organs for non-medical reasons.

It is mostly carried out by traditional circumcisers, who often play other central roles in communities, such as attending childbirths. However, more than 18% of all FGM is performed by health care providers, and this trend is increasing.



FGM is recognized internationally as a violation of the human rights of girls and women. It reflects deep-rooted inequality between the sexes, and constitutes an extreme form of discrimination against women.

It is nearly always carried out on minors and is a violation of the rights of children. The practice also violates a person's rights to health, security and physical integrity, the right to be free from torture and cruel, inhuman or degrading treatment, and the right to life when the procedure results in death.

⁷⁸ <http://www.who.int/mediacentre/factsheets/fs241/en/index.html>

WHO further states that FGM has no health benefits. In the long-term girls and woman can have effects of recurrent bladder and urinary tract infections, cysts, infertility, increased risk of childbirth complication and newborn deaths, further surgeries as the vaginal opening narrows, it needs to be cut open to allow for sexual intercourse and childbirth. FGM is carried out between infancy and the age of 15. WHO estimates that about 140 million girls and woman worldwide are living with the consequences of FGM.

4. CHRISTIAN LEADERS AND ABUSE

Just as much as there are cult leaders who are abusing their authority to sexually abuse children, there are “Christian” pastors who infiltrate into the churches with ulterior motives.

4.1 Reported Cases Of Pastors And Sexual Abuse

The Atlanta Journal Constitution⁷⁹ reported in August 2013 of a Cobb County pastor who was arrested for molesting a 6 year old girl at church. The 76 year old, John Aubrey Pinkston, is the founder of the Congregation of God Seventh Day church in Kennesaw. He was formally charged with child molestation and sexual battery and was released from jail with \$35,000 as shown on record.

On August, 30, 2013 a St. Louis pastor was sentenced for being in possession of child pornography. The Archdiocese of St. Louis released a statement that *Father William Vatterott*, who was a former pastor at St. Cecilia Parish in St. Louis and a former Associate Pastor at Holy Infant Parish in Ballwin, pleaded

⁷⁹ Congregation of God Sevent Day: <http://www.ajc.com/news/news/cobb-pastor-76-accused-of-child-molestation/nZfrZ/>

guilty to the charge of being in possession of child pornography, and was sentenced to 37 months in a federal penitentiary.



According to the Archdiocese, Vatterott had been on administrative leave since June 2011 when it was brought under their attention of allegations against him. In the original claims there were no mention of child pornography, but it did specify *inappropriate electronic communications received by a minor* and an incident of underage drinking was also reported.

It was only during the investigation by law enforcement that child pornography surfaced.⁸⁰

In September 2013 the headline "*Pastor claims sex with boys gave them sexual purity in the eyes of God*"⁸¹ shocked online newsreaders.

A 31 year old pastor, Brent Girouex, was arrested on 60 counts of sexual exploitation and sentenced to 17 years. He was acting as a counsellor or therapist to adolescents. The young pastor claimed that the *acts would give his victims sexual purity*.



Girouex does not deny the allegations; he admitted to have had sexual relations with a minimum of four young men. Girouex stated to detectives that

⁸⁰ Pastor Child Pornography: <http://www.kmov.com/news/editors-pick/Local-pastor-sentenced-to-federal-prison-for-child-pornography-possession-221813771.html>

⁸¹ Pastor claims sex gave sexual purity: <http://www.krmg.com/news/news/local/pastor-claims-sex-boys-gave-them-sexual-purity-eye/nZq6W/>

when the boys would ejaculate, *they would be getting rid of the evil thoughts in their mind*. His wife filed for divorce.⁸²

Another youth pastor was sentenced in September 2013 for sexually abusing three teens.

The 41 year old, Gregory Douglas Forehand, was charged with five counts of *custodial indecent liberties* with a child. He victimized three adolescents during the time of being a youth pastor and head pastor at the Real Life Christian Church.⁸³

4.2 The Abuse of The Word of God

Most of the cults discussed above claim to be of Christian origin. However, it does not take long for the abuse to reveal itself, and it is mostly of sexual nature. From the Bible the following explains:

*If practice follows from theory, if life is based upon teaching, it follows that the wrong doctrine will issue in the wrong attitude toward God and Christ, and consequently in warped and twisted Christian life.*⁸⁴

The Bible is used as an authoritative foundation to justify New Age Doctrines philosophies. Scriptures are being twisted to validate their context. The following is a few examples:

⁸² Girouex's Wife: <http://www.kcci.com/Wife-Condemns-Youth-Pastor-In-Sex-Crimes-Case/-/9357770/10378560/-/item/1/-/qj979b/-/index.html>

⁸³ Youth Pastor Sex Abuse: <http://www.wavy.com/news/local/va-beach/youth-pastor-sentenced-in-sex-abuse-case>

⁸⁴ Gomes, Alan W (1995) *Unmasking the Cults*. USA: Zondervan Publishing Group. p.47

4.2.1 Karma

Karen Howard⁸⁵ states in her article, *"Western belief in karma is a combination of many beliefs, due in part to the melting-pot nature of our society. To use the most familiar text, The Bible, the following quotes are offered for your consideration:*

("`The Lord shall preserve thy going out and thy coming in from this time forth, and even forever more,' (Psalm 121:8) Going out or coming in from where? "`Whatsoever a man sows, that shall he also reap,' Gal. 6:7)"

The editor interrupts on her article with the following comment:

"...my favorite Bible passage which I believe could speak of Karma (is) `try to get reconciled with your accuser promptly, while you are going on the road with him; for your accuser might surrender you to the judge, and the judge would commit you to the jailer, and you would be cast into prison.

Truly I say to you that you would never come out thence until you had paid the last cent.' (Matthew 5:25-26). "Might (just might) this be suggesting we should try to right our wrongs and correct our errors in thislifetime (while going on the road with) in order to prevent karmic debt/repayment?"

From a Christian perspective, the concept of sinful man being able to correct his mistakes to pay the debt, is to deny the importance of a

⁸⁵ Howard, Karen (1989) Intuitive Explorations Magazine. Volume 2, Number 10, USA. p.9

saviour. If man were gifted of such a feat, there would have been no requirement for Jesus to pay the price on the cross.

4.2.2 Reincarnation

Benjamin Creme,⁸⁶ proclaimer of the Lord Maitreya,⁸⁷ commented on reincarnation:

"Generally speaking people are unaware that there are definite references in the New Testament that unequivocally imply reincarnation. In fact many ask why there is so little mention of it in the Bible. One obvious answer is that the reality of reincarnation, at least in the New Testament, was simply taken for granted..."

The interviewer suggested that the first sign of "taking for granted" of the doctrine is found in Matthew, 11:13-14; 16:13, where Jesus asked his disciples whom do men say that I, the son of man, am? The interviewer concluded:

Jesus is actually asking the question shows he is aware of the doctrine and considers it valid... Not only is this passage cited as proof of reincarnation, but so also is the passage concerning John the Baptist, and therefore assume that Elias, according to Jesus himself, came back to earth in the personality of John the Baptist.

From a Biblical perspective, the context of the passages validate that Jesus was not referring to reincarnation, but enlighten His identity as

⁸⁶ Benjamin Crème: <http://beforeitsnews.com/paranormal/2013/05/benjamin-creme-on-how-lord-maitreya-the-world-teacher-will-show-us-the-way-2451318.html>

⁸⁷ Lord Maitreya : <http://goldenageofgaia.com/2013/05/interview-with-lord-maitreya-concluded-airs-monday/>

the Messiah to His disciples. While other said Jesus was one of the prophets, Peter commended his confession by confirming that Jesus was the only Son of God, the Almighty.

The Bible confirms that all people are intended to die:

²⁷ Just as people are destined to die once, and after that to face judgment,²⁸ so Christ was sacrificed once to take away the sins of many; and he will appear a second time, not to bear sin, but to bring salvation to those who are waiting for him.

Hebrews 9:27(28)

4.2.3 Communication With the Dead

In an interview⁸⁸ with George Anderson, the author of the book, *We Don't Die*, he is known for being a medium with the ability to communicate with *the other side*.

Anderson responded on the question of staying away from mediums due to being of devilish nature:

"If people really want to believe that, I'm not going to change their minds. A lot of fundamentalist Christians cite the Book of Deuteronomy, where it states that it's wrong to consult with the dead. Well, I'm not consulting with the dead, I'm not asking them to advise me; I'm thinking for myself."

⁸⁸ <http://www.near-death.com/experiences/paranormal01.html>

Anderson further explains that he does not raise, conjure, summon or invoke the dead, he discern them. From a Biblical perspective the scripture Anderson refers to in Deuteronomy, clearly states:

¹⁰ There shall not be found among you any one that maketh his son or his daughter to pass through the fire, or that useth divination, or an observer of times, or an enchanter, or a witch.

¹¹ Or a charmer, or a consulter with familiar spirits, or a wizard, or a necromancer.

Deuteronomy 18:10-11 (KJV)

Anderson is communicating with the spirits of the dead, which is also being referred to as familiar spirits. No man can “think” of the dead and automatically bring forth information only the relatives are aware of. The “thoughts” must be triggered with information – spirits communicate through thought. The scripture does not state that it is accepting or denying to “conjure, invoke” and so on.

4.2.4 Men Are God

Leonard Orr⁸⁹ has a unique view of Exodus 20:3. This is the first commandment of the ten, given by the Lord to the people of Israel:

Thou shall have no other gods before me.

Exodus 20:3 (KJV)

Orr explained that the word “thou” must be defined; he states:

⁸⁹ Orr, Leonard (2007) Rebirthing in the New Age. USA: Trafford Publishing. p.211

*Thou is you. Then you have to define **me**. **Me** is you also. God is Thou and me (otherwise there is more than one God).*

***Me** is the God in everyone. God is **the me** in everyone. The **me** of you is the same as the me of me. The **me of you and the me** of me are one and the same - which is God.*

This Commandment says I am God or You are God. Since it is you who is God, then you have to create God. Man created God in his own image.

From a Biblical perspective Orr's interpretation is corrupted. This Scripture clearly states that God says: YOU will have no other gods before HIM. The Scripture does not twist "you" and "me" to confirm that man is actually a god.

God lives within everyone who is saved; He was invited into the newly born Christian's life. No newborn Christian can claim that he is now a god for accepting God into his life.

5. CONCLUSION

Cults have the audacity to call themselves Christ-like. The characteristics of cults are unanimously the same. There is always a leader who claims to be the messiah or the son of God; they almost always go into isolation from the world; in other words, if they go into hiding and be secretive of their doings, they are *occultic*.

The word *occult* is a derivative from the Latin word *Occultus*, meaning: hidden or secret things. These (oc)cults cannot be seen as a Christian organization. In almost every cult the leader abuse his authority to be with every women and girl in the isolated residence.

He is not only abusing his authority, he is firstly abusing God's name, as he "comes in the name of God" to evangelize that he is the messiah or son. Secondly, this is spiritual abuse due to the fact that he twists Scripture to justify his specific needs; and therefore the third fact, his specific needs is of sexual nature, this leads to physically and mentally abusing the men to surrender their wives, women and daughters to be sexually abused by a self-proclaimed messiah.

Some of these cults do not claim to be Biblical; they show indeed a high quantitative abuse factors. Those who are "on their own" do not sweep in on sexual abuse; they begin at psychological "brainwashing" and give the impression that they are of scientific nature, or a higher-power of some sort.

In the event of cultural abuse, the rites of passage show physical abuse, mental abuse, and sexual related abuse. The adolescent years are already such a vulnerable time in a young almost-adult's years. But due to strict and nonsense beliefs these youngsters experience the mental pressure to become

an adult under bizarre circumstances. It concludes that the more pain there is to overcome, the more speedily the adulthood can be conquered.

This thesis mainly concludes that the Word of God is being abused to accommodate cult leaders beliefs and need.

oooOooo

Beware of your friends; do not trust anyone in your clan.

*For every one of them is a **deceiver**, and every
friend a slanderer.*

Jeremiah 9:4

CHAPTER

III



CHAPTER THREE

AN INTERPRETATION OF THE MENTAL STATE OF THE ABUSED AND THE ABUSER

Do not be conformed to this world, but be transformed by the renewal of your mind, that by testing you may discern what is the will of God, what is good and acceptable and perfect.

Romans 12:2

1. INTRODUCTION

This Chapter will discuss abuse within in the family unit. The abuser's mentality will be focussed on to prepare for the later Chapter of abuse in the spiritual world. It is important for this thesis to acknowledge the psychological view of the abuser to unveil the spiritual activities that is taking place during abuse.

The Abuser has a controlling power over his victim. It is therefore necessary to investigate how the victim fell into his trap. Most victims cannot tell when exactly did the initial approach started. Victims can only confirm how they were befriended by their abuser. Most abusers have excuses that are invalid and in



An Interpretation of the Mental State of the Abused and the Abuser

most cases simply nonsense. This mental-game that the abuser plays with his victim calls for an examination.

In practice most abusers denies controlling behaviour. It contradicts to their actual behaviour. Every abuser has a pattern to control. This chapter will tend to analyse the "Coercive Control" controversy that is also being use against the abuser in legal proceedings. This term is also used to prove the circumstances of an abused woman who experienced domestic violence.

For the purpose of this chapter, the following terms will be defined as:

Abuser: The term "abuser" will be used in this thesis as the offender, the person that is guilty of the actual abuse.

Abused: The term "abused" will refer to the person that is being abused, or the victim of the abuse.

Coercive Control: The definition of Coercive Control involves an abuser, as per this thesis, who takes immense authority by almost always isolation his victim. He seeks to control by demanding obedience and violently enforcing the obedience.¹

Domestic Violence: The definition of this term has a little or no consensus to define Domestic Violence.² For the purpose of this thesis it will refer to violence of any form, in context of this thesis, against an abused.

¹ Okun, Lewis (1986) Woman Abuse: Facts Replacing Myths. USA: State University of New York. p.113

² Summers, Randal W.; Hoffman, Allan M. (2002) Domestic Violence: A Global View. USA: Greenwood Publishing Group. p.39



Victim (of Abuse): This term will be used in this Chapter as the person that is experience the abuse in a certain form.

This Chapter will have a discussion on sexual introductions between parent and child. The fact that incest occurs and the child has less anger towards the guilty parent than the parent, who did not suspect anything, must be up for discussion. This will serve as prove in a later stage in this thesis how the dark forces can intervene and justify “themselves” and in fact protect the evil spirits that is with the wrongful parent.

This Chapter will look into the factor of rehabilitation for sexual offenders. The question arises of can they be mentally and/or physically healed from their sexual need. This will serve as a preparation for the later Chapter of healing offenders with such a need through deliverance.

The seriousness of sex crimes in any country is currently in the spotlight of governments all over the world. In South Africa alone the statistics of sexual offences were reported, but for those victims who find it difficult to report a case makes a tremendous impact on the actual statistics.

1.1 Statistics On Sex Offenders – Republic Of South Africa 2012

The worst ten precincts of Sexual Crimes reported in 2012³ in Gauteng Province in South Africa was: Temba 314; Moroka 269; Tsakane 268; Kathlehong 260; Tembisa 249; Dobsonville 228; Roodepoort 224; Alexandra 216; Akasia 215; and Hillbrow 205.

³ Sexual Crimes Stats: <http://crimestatssa.com/topten.php>



An Interpretation of the Mental State of the Abused and the Abuser

The worst ten precincts of Sexual Crimes reported in 2012 in Western Province in South Africa was: Mitchells Plain 471; Nyanga 398; Harare 294; Gugulethu 257; Khayelitsha 249; Kraaifontein 231; Worcester 228; Mfuleni 221; Delft 216; Knysna 205.

The worst ten precincts of Sexual Crimes reported in 2012 in Kwa-Zulu Natal Province in South Africa was: Durban Central 526; Umlazi 454; Inanda 394; Plessislaer 346; Empangeni 267; Ntu Zuma 230; Phoenix 228; Kwa Mashu E 221; Mariannhill 204; Kwadukuza 202.

National Statistics on the worst ten precincts of Sexual Crimes reported in 2012 by province: Durban Central KZN 526; Mitchell's Plain WC 471; Umlazi KZN 454; Polokwane LP 417; Nyanga WC 398; Inanda KZN 394; Thohoyandou LP 391; Plessislaer KZN 346; Mankweng LP 344; Temba GP 314.

The total sexual crimes reported⁴ in 2004 66048; in 2005 69088; 2006 68045; 2007 65176; 2008 63788; 2009 70514; 2010 68332; 2011 66196; and 2012 64419.

The United States Department of Justice has shown the following statistics:

551,000 sexual offenders have been released and are registered throughout America. Only 10% of sexual offenders are ever caught and convicted. 90% of sexual offenders are never caught which means that over 7 million avoid detection and are seeking unaware victims.

⁴ Sexual Crimes per year in SA: <http://crimestatssa.com/national.php>



An Interpretation of the Mental State of the Abused and the Abuser

Two out three violent sex offenders in jail victimized someone under 18 years of age. 44% of all rape victims are under 18 years of age. Within 3 years of release, 8% of rapists are re-arrested for rape and 27% re-arrested for another violent offense.

Crimes against children have gone up 444% since 1986 in America. The question from here arises of in what mental state is the world.

2. THE MENTAL STATE OF THE ABUSER

A true abuser can be anyone in the community or workplace. It is usually someone unexpected until people starts thinking of incidents which they can recall that was in fact clear signs of abuse. But the question here arises of can an abuser really be identified by the people in his direct environments.

The family almost always knows the abuser and how he treats his wife or she treats her children for example. The family would plead to not be harsh; it is brought under the abuser's attention in a private conversation, but not for the world to know.

The abuser has excuses for his behaviour that justifies the situation; it is accepted by family members with the thought that the abuse might decrease in some way.



2.1 The Excuses Of Abusive Behaviour.

Many therapists can testify of how excuses are being used to justify abusive behaviour. The most common excuses the abuser will admit to in counselling sessions are: he has anger problems, he was abused as a child, it is because of the alcohol or drugs, or it's the victim's fault.

These excuses do not justify the abusive nature. It cannot justify why the victim was assaulted verbally or physically with such cruelty. The abuser makes these excuses to blame his victim for the abnormal behaviour. An abuser sees this behaviour as normal and act as if nothing happened. It is however, the victim's responsibility to make excuses if there are visible bruises or marks. The abuser for example, tends to make the excuse that he was intoxicated and his childhood abuse is the cause of his violent behaviour.

The abuser has the tendency to make other believe that he is fully aware of his weaknesses and contract the sympathy he wants. He can then make the follow-up excuse for the next incident that the victim is not helping him emotionally and most likely verbally abusing him. He has already won the sympathy; the victim is now being falsely humiliated in public (family and friends). The abuser in effect becomes the victim.

An abuser makes excuses and it works very well for him, due to the fact that they are master manipulators and skilled actors that can provide a false reality. They are in control of every situation and for that matter, perceptions of friends and family, and there will always be an explanation for everything.



2.2 Coercive Control

This type of control can be described as tactics that are being used to control a victim. It might be physical, sexual, economic, psychological, or even legal and it includes:

- demands that is not negotiable or unreasonable;
- isolating the victim by destroying her relationship with her friends and then family members;
- manipulation by lying to the victim and giving her empty promises;
- restricting the victim from freedom and become possessive and jealous, this can lead to false accusations of adultery;
- constricting the victim from having emergency numbers or resources;
- Intimidating the victim through threats to do what is important to him first;
- Disregard his victim's opinions or feelings, it usually result in humiliation.

The abuser is fully in control of everyone's thoughts on the situation. This becomes a game for him; everyone that has knowledge of the circumstances is in effect avatars in his game. It satisfies him to have others think that the true victim is the enemy.

The victim has therefore no support base from anyone and this is his very important for him. If the victim is not saved by anyone, he can proceed with his endless psychological torture.



An Interpretation of the Mental State of the Abused and the Abuser

Case Study: William and Suzanne

William and Suzanne was the prime couple. They are the celebrities amongst their friends. Even when there was a divorce, both divorcees could rely on William and Suzanne for emotional support.

William announced their divorce to their shocked friends; everyone was stunned and the "why" questions flew across the room. William did not hold back and informed the circle of friends that Suzanne was emotionally abusive and a "control freak." He told his friends that he had work pressure and was not home all the time; he had a few clients that did not pay for services; he further said that he could not make his wife financially happy.

Two years after the divorce. Suzanne bumped into old friends at a function and she immediately got the feeling she was not welcome in the conversation. A few weeks later the same woman phones her to invite her over for a luncheon.

Suzanne went and found herself in an interrogation. She listen them through and told them her story. Every time they got home from a get together, William would beat her with any object he can lay his hands on, tore her clothes off and chased her out of the house to "sleep with the bitches" (dogs). From a payment that he did not make to forget his own mother's birthday was Suzanne's fault. He had to win every argument even when he was at fault. Suzanne was helplessly living in fear.



An Interpretation of the Mental State of the Abused and the Abuser

The last incident was the last straw. She was invited to a function and William said no. He attacked her with a hot kettle, when she fell, he kicked three ribs off, and she managed to get to the neighbour's house who rushed her to hospital. The neighbour helped her with her divorce.

William, however, thought he could abuse his new wife too. Or so he thought. Not long after this truth was out in the open, Suzanne found out that William assaulted his new wife and he was the one that was hospitalized, not her.

In this cases study the abuser was shifting the blame to the victim, making others believe she is abusive. Dr Susan Forward⁵ characterizes this controlling behaviour as misogynistic.

2.2.1 The Misogynist

The misogynist has an extensive repertoire of scare tactics, insults, denigrating comments, and other intimidating behaviour designed to make his victim feel inadequate and helpless. The misogynist has the aggressive and assaultive quality of almost always yells, threats, has temper tantrums, calls humiliating names, and is constantly criticizing.⁶

Some misogynists do not resort to the obvious cruelty of scare tactics and screamed insults to gain control of their victim. Instead they wear down the victim through unrelenting criticism and fault-finding.

⁵ Forward, Susan (1986) Men Who Hate Women & The Women Who Love Them. USA: Bantam Books. p.43

⁶ Forward, Susan (1986) Men Who Hate Women & The Women Who Love Them. USA: Bantam Books. pp.43-44



Case Study: Diane

Diane never experienced the physical assaults, but her husband drained her emotionally with criticism and fault-finding. Diane was preparing her two sons for exams the whole day. Her demanding mother-in-law was staying with them temporarily after she has had an operation.

Diane was running late with everything, she has sympathy with her mother-in-law for being in pain, but it is impossible to be her nurse. Diane quickly managed to make up time between studies and gran. She is so afraid she is not going to be on time for dinner before her husband gets home.

*When he got back, he was already grumpy and asked her aggressively: "Why does the f***g garden look like a garbage dump? Why can't you just go pick it up? You are the laziest f***g woman I have ever known... you don't care about the house, I work my a*** off to pay for this house and you can't even take care of that."*

Diane was so busy inside the house, that she did not notice the dog chewed on a carton box in the front garden. She left everything to clean up after the dog. She was nearly finished when her husband yelled from the front door: "How long must I wait for dinner?" Diane wiped off the tears and returned to her duties.



An Interpretation of the Mental State of the Abused and the Abuser

When anger is directed to the victim, it creates an atmosphere of tremendous tension. With the misogynist, the shouting almost always includes insults and personal attacks. This is demoralizing and freighting just as implied threats of physical violence.⁷

2.2.2 Characteristics of a Misogynist

A misogynist's emotional security depends on his victim's love for him by being in total control. Negotiation and compromise are practically non-existent due to the fact that he has to win and she will lose.

He uses scare tactics and makes threats to make his partner feel inadequate and helpless. He wears his partner down by criticism and fault-finding.

If he is a professional, he would have additional credibility to be a critic and mentor, and to re-create his victim by being a "lecturer." This type constantly belittles his victim on her character.

He would try to convince his victim that she is insane by denying a conversation that took place a few days ago. She would insist that he said so and he would reply that he will never say something like that. He has the capability of re-writing history. He is not denying the conversation; he can add, remove and changes the sequence of who said what at what time. He can twist and turn to validate himself.

⁷ Forward, Susan (1986) *Men Who Hate Women & The Women Who Love Them*. USA: Bantam Books. p.45



An Interpretation of the Mental State of the Abused and the Abuser

He can use a past failure against his victim repeatedly to prove inadequacy.

The victim cannot tell him he is hurting her by doing certain things, he would reply on "you are too sensitive" and deny her inadequate feelings. He cannot allow his victim to have a life of her own or to express herself; it would not fit into his mental framework. The victim will be flattered into "you don't need that in your life..."

He will test the victim's love and devotion for him. He is not convinced that his victim love him the way she should be. Every test is a failure, because the victim can never do enough or give enough in any way. He will make it miserable for the victim's friends or family that she would actually discontinue to have contact with them just to keep the peace.

A misogynist is extremely jealous and highly possessive due to the fact of his own insecurities. He can make his victim's world non-existent. The victim must give up everything, including close friends and family, to please him and that will still not be enough.

It is for him very important that he rules his world the way he wants it to be. The question from here is how can he easily gain control of his victim? The direct answer of this question is by being intimate in the bedroom.

It is not a challenge in this modern era to be intimate with any woman. The art of courtship died and women became the hunter not the



An Interpretation of the Mental State of the Abused and the Abuser

hunted. Courtships are done in record time and a woman is so excited that she has a potential partner that accepts her for who she is.

The misogynist however, feasts on this need. Some misogynists will only give that much of affection just to give the woman the idea that he is in love with her. Other misogynists reel the woman in over a period of time to be more daring in the bedroom; and before they realise it, they are in fact in a consented sexual abuse situation.

In contrast to this information, one can only bring forth the fact that men can also be abused by women.

2.2.3 The Misandrist

The Misandrist can be defined as one who hates men.⁸ Men cannot share that they are being abused by their women. It is practically socially unacceptable to confess a weakness of the woman that is in control in the household.

Husbands that are kind human beings and loving fathers are usually the ones to be emotionally abused by their dominating and controlling wives. These men were too embarrassed and humiliated to share their pain. Their suffering can remain a secret for years, or even decades.

⁸ Misandrist: <http://www.thefreedictionary.com/misandrist>



An Interpretation of the Mental State of the Abused and the Abuser

Since abuse in many men is far more emotional than physical or sexual, they generally do not want to attract any attention of police and mental health professionals.

Abusive wives are usually the verbal and emotional abuser. They will act in anger to tell their husbands what failure they are, or compare their husbands to others who are wealthy.

2.2.3.1 Characteristics of the Misandrist⁹

- The Misandrist will take out her frustration out on her husband by calling him “useless” for not taking better care of her financially.
- She will also remind him of a family member that is more ambitious than he is.
- She will make her husband feel guilty that she married him out of sympathy and she could have had someone far better than him.
- The Misandrist is always questioning her husband if she thinks he is looking at another woman.
- She will accuse him of having an affair or that there is definitely someone else.

⁹ Adapted from and Interview of Dr K Sohail: http://www.drsohail.com/essays.aspx/essays/abused_husbands



An Interpretation of the Mental State of the Abused and the Abuser

- She reminds him of what good of a wife she is to him and how dissatisfied she is with him.
- Her husband irritates her
- The Misandrist will order her husband to do certain chores for her, and she will make him feel like a slave.
- She will be disrespectful to her husband's family and show her family how she can humiliate her husband.
- She would humiliate her husband after being intimate and have a laugh breaking his self-worth down.

In most cases where a woman shows these signs, the man will possibly be retract from her emotionally, due to the fact that she is not showing him respect and love. Men that are usually in a relationship like this, are the ones that will seek love elsewhere.

2.3 Sexual Abuse

Sexual abuse in any relationship exists. Rape for instance is not bound happening to an unknown woman by a random man. It can happen in any relationship, from husband and wife to boyfriend and girlfriend or nowadays called an intimate relationship.



In any intimate relationship rape can occur. This thesis will focus on intimate relationships between man and woman or Heterosexual Intimate Relationships (HIR).

2.3.1 Sexual Brutality Within The Marriage Between Man And Wife

It is not reported when a husband rapes his own wife. This statement draws the question of the possibility of such behaviour. Wives can be raped by their husbands. Violent men can rape their women repeatedly.

Case study: Maggy and Victor

After Maggy and Victor got divorced, her family forced her to seek therapy. Her therapist gave a few examples of her being raped by her own husband. Maggy would be busy breast-feeding her baby; her drunken husband will walk into the room, rip her clothes off and penetrate her. Even if the baby started crying and Maggy begged him to stop, Victor did not stop until his finished.

Later that same night, he made his drunken friend watch how he would jump on top of Maggy in a rage; slap her through the face, making barking sounds and rape her like an animal. Even if she cried out for help, Victor and his friend laughed it off.



An Interpretation of the Mental State of the Abused and the Abuser

Maggy was chastised at any time of the day for no reason. She told her therapist how Victor would overpower her, tear off her clothing, and sodomize her with any object until she vomited.

Sexual abuse between husband and wife exists. It cannot be denied. A wife will never speak freely of this as she is still under her husband's protection and she still has the obligation to respect him.

In this case the woman feels powerless, and will almost always blame the drinking habit for her husband's behaviour. Wives that can relate to this situation are in denial by thinking "if he can only stop drinking so much." Even if the alcohol plays a role in this case, or for that matter, any other addiction, the wife should communicate this through with her husband of her deep concern and seek help.

In other cases where sexual interaction has become an obligation for the woman and not a spontaneous event, it can be identified that the husband is selfish and has a lack of concern for his wife's needs.

Husband and wife are equals. No one is above the other. The husband use to be the provider and the wife keeping the house, today, both are providers and run the household together. There is a mutual respect between husband and wife to make the ultimate partnership.



2.3.2 Sexual Brutality Between A Man And A Woman

A woman that is in a relationship with a man, who is sexually abusing her, has the option of escaping him. A married woman is bound to take legal steps and has financial expenses to abscond her husband.

Case Study: Nancy and Nate

Nancy left her boyfriend, Nate, overnight. She left a letter in the bedroom saying that she had enough of the slave and master sexual acts and wants to break free from this sexual behaviour. Nate was furious and felt rejected.

Nate could not understand why Nancy would leave him. He thought she enjoyed the domination of hurtful sex. In Nate's mind Nancy wanted physically to be a victim in these role-playing games of him.

He expects her to go along with any activity he chooses, due to the fact that he believes she exists for his sexual pleasures, by meaning, he can sexually abuse Nancy as he see fits.

This behaviour is addictive similar to an addict that uses cocaine. This sexual behaviour is his drive, it pleases him, it builds his ego and manhood, his sexual aggression grows and his role-playing games become more dangerous. It is in a woman's nature to be submissive;



An Interpretation of the Mental State of the Abused and the Abuser

however, there is no valid social answer to abuse the submissiveness of a woman by overpowering her with dominance in the bedroom.

This brings this thesis to question the mind of a child sexual abuser; why would they overpower a defenceless child sexually.

2.3.3 Inside the Mind of a Child Sex Offender

A major problem with sexual offenders is that they know well how many times they have tried to quit molesting in the past, making promise after promise to their victims and themselves that *this was the last tie*, only to strike again.¹⁰

They know they will fail again and at some future date they may really need an advocate: a child that will not tell; a mother who is in need of financial assistance; a probation officer or a judge that will have compassion for him.

Children that appear to be an easy target are those who have already been abused before. These children are unlikely to point the finger again at another paedophile, especially in the cases where the child was being sexually abused in his/her own home by the mother's previous partner.¹¹

¹⁰ Stevens, Dennis J (2001) Inside the Mind of Sexual Offenders: Predatory Rapists, Pedophiles, and Criminal Profiles. USA: iUniverse.com, Inc.pp.180-181

¹¹ Stevens, Dennis J (2001) Inside the Mind of Sexual Offenders: Predatory Rapists, Pedophiles, and Criminal Profiles. USA: iUniverse.com, Inc.pp.181-183



An Interpretation of the Mental State of the Abused and the Abuser

Sexual predators play on the weakness of the child by using shame, embarrassment, confusion, and guilt to keep the child isolated. They would also create barriers between their victim and his/her siblings or friends, due to the fact that they know that victims often inform sexual abuse not to their mothers, but more likely to their friends and siblings.

Sexual abusers know that children are curious by nature and this curiosity is used in the employ of exploitation. Should the child show resistance, the sexual abuser reduces anxiety through hugs, compliments, and candy.¹²

According to statistics, at least 70% of all sexual crime victims are children younger than nine in South Africa.

Linda Naidoo, Director of Childline KwaZulu-Natal, said *of further concern was the fact that the situation in KwaZulu-Natal was much worse than the national statistics showed.*¹³

She said the reasons for this were that KwaZulu-Natal had the largest population of children, with 47% of this province's population made up of children, and has the least resources in comparison to the other provinces in South Africa.

In a recent presentation at the Joint Oxfam HIV and AIDS Programme Link and Learn Partner Platform 2007, Naidoo said 99,5 percent of offences committed against children, especially sexual offences, were

¹² Stevens, Dennis J (2001) Inside the Mind of Sexual Offenders: Predatory Rapists, Pedophiles, and Criminal Profiles. USA: iUniverse.com, Inc.pp.181-183

¹³ Linda Naidoo on Statistics KZN: <http://www.hst.org.za/news/sex-offence-stats-indict-children>



An Interpretation of the Mental State of the Abused and the Abuser

committed by men, adding that the increasing number of male children committing sexual offences was of "great concern".

3. THE MENTAL STATE OF THE ABUSED

The abused can refer to the victim in the relationship. It is generalised that women are the abused, but in fact, men are also being abused by their women. It is cynical to have the thought that only women are abused. Men can be a victim too. But for this thesis the woman will be accepted as the abused and when necessary the man can be discussed.

Biblically women are created as a support for man. God created Eve from Adam's rib. She was created with the intention to be the gentle soft hearted being to comfort her man. God opened Adam's eyes and he saw tenderness and his first instinct was protection. This is in every blueprint of every man and woman that walks on the face of this earth.

Every man has the built-in factor of protecting his woman, and every woman wants to comfort and support her man. Unfortunately, God's enemy sent in the wrong into this world and this resulted in abuse.

3.1 The Genesis Of Abuse

The question always arises in case studies of how the abuse started. In many cases women cannot pinpoint the effected date of verbal or emotional abuse, whereas physical or sexual abuse has a date, time and place.



An Interpretation of the Mental State of the Abused and the Abuser

Psychologists testify of emotional and verbal abuse victims that cannot answer the simple question of when the abuse has begun.

Abusers usually begin with a light satirical tale of how his woman responded to a certain situation, and even if she felt humiliated for moment and brought it under his attention, he would only mocked it off as being over-sensitive. This is a confusing message to the woman, but she trusts him immediately again the moment he tells her how much he adore her. And it is forgotten.

These mockeries can grow and escalate into very hurtful moments. The emotional abuse went too far the moment and the abuser mocks the sexual intimacy.

A woman can oversee a mockery of her physique in front of family, but if it is the highlight of discussion amongst friends, it can then be considered as character abuse. A woman is fragile at home where she is supposedly comfortable in her own protected environment.

Women have a gift to re-question every single occurrence of the day. They will question themselves in the form of could it resulted in... should it result in... could it result in... A woman will think this over for days and keep an emotional eye on her man just to re-establish the sense of belonging again. She will question his love for her. But the abusive husband detects her insecurities on his radar and his abusive nature is turned to the loving and caring husband she knows he can be.

This however, shows that a woman will always adhere on this factor of what he can be. She will always encourage him to be the loving husband and support



An Interpretation of the Mental State of the Abused and the Abuser

him emotionally to reassure him of himself. Thus, it can then be assumed that the woman will motivate her man emotionally and carry his insecurities for him.

Case Study: Lynn & Peter

Lynn does not have a good relationship with her in-laws, and Peter blamed her for not being accepted into his family. He was aware of her abusive childhood experiences and promised Lynn that he will always protect her. Peter was a workaholic and Lynn took care of everything within the household.

Lynn sent her mother-in-law flowers for every birthday and signed it under Peter's name. His siblings got cards from Lynn, again signed by Peter. When Peter's brother was in financial trouble, Lynn deposited money into his bank account on behalf of Peter. Lynn never got any recognition, not even from Peter. When Lynn died of breast cancer, all the flowers and birthday cards stopped. His family realised it was her that kept their family together through rough seas.

Peter abused Lynn emotionally. He used to make fun of her in front of his family and hinted into her past. There was no respect for Lynn, she was only an emotional punching bag for Peter. Experts believe that woman with so much hurt, become cancerous even if it is not in their genes.



An Interpretation of the Mental State of the Abused and the Abuser

There is a definitive link between sexual and emotional abuse and breast cancer,¹⁴ and women or men who have been assaulted should be referred for counseling to help prevent the development of breast cancer in the future.

R.E. Goldsmith¹⁵ and colleagues of the Mount Sinai School of Medicine, Department of Oncological Sciences, in New York, published their study in *Child Abuse & Neglect*.

Their research thus far concluded that *emotional abuse, physical abuse, and sexual abuse were correlated with intrusive symptoms*. Goldsmith states that cancer-related avoidant symptoms *approached significance in their relation to emotional and sexual abuse*.

Multivariate analysis revealed that childhood emotional abuse was an autonomous forecaster of breast cancer-related intrusive symptoms, but *that childhood physical abuse and sexual abuse were associated with breast cancer-related intrusive symptoms*.

Emotional abuse uniquely predicted intrusive symptoms after controlling for other forecasters. Goldsmith claims that the *results suggest that a cancer diagnosis may initiate cognitive and emotional responses that relate to the patient's previous trauma experiences*.

¹⁴ Goldsmith, R.E.; Jandorf, L. Valdimarsdottir, H.; Arment, K.L.; Stoudt, B.G.; Rini, C. (2010) Traumatic Stress Symptoms and Breast Cancer: The Role of Childhood Abuse. pp.465-470

¹⁵ Issues in Children and Society: 2011 Edition (2012) USA: Scholarly EditionsTM. p.24



3.2 The Resilience of the Abused

In many cases, psychologists and therapists ask the same questions. Why doesn't she leave? Why is she taking that punishment? What's preventing her to take action against him? And the list can go on.

Women that are in an abused relationship will tend to remain quiet about the situation, due to the fact that they want to protect their social status. In cases where social status is not an issue, escaping the abuse is more likely to happen with ease, except in the cases where the family's name might be at risk.

They are almost always financially dependent from their abuser and most likely have no support system, i.e. family or friends to turn to. The abused cannot bear the shame and humiliation of being dependent on family or friends for the time being; in most cases families shut the door in women's faces and send them to a shelter. Women are not as humble as it used to be a century ago; today's women have a proudness that they want to protect.

3.2.1 The Social Status

There are many women that would rather sit and cry in their luxurious home than to cry in a one bedroom flat downtown. When they are so materialistic, with the knowledge that they are being abused, they still choose to remain in the abusive conditions. It is almost too much effort to scale down on luxuries to live an abusive free life.



3.2.2 The Financial Implication

Some women are fortunate to live in luxury and get paid to raise the children. If she can find it in herself to escape the abusive life, she must be willing to give up her husband's lifestyle. Many abusers cut their women financially off if she dares to file for divorce.

This will mean that there will be financial complications that leads to not being able to at least rent a small place for herself and children if there are any, she will have trouble with transport, the children has educational fees that must be paid; she has to find a job to care of her new household.

3.2.3 The Failing Support System

Women who finally got the courage to speak out of their abuse, experience that family or friends start to avoid them. They find it difficult that the husband can be accused of abuse. It seems that friends find it hard to accept that the husband could be someone they do not know; it is unreal for them to realise he is living a double life.

In some instances women are afraid to go home to their mothers to explain to them what the situation is. They are afraid of the "I knew he was no good – I told you so, but you did not listen" speech and rather seek help elsewhere.



An Interpretation of the Mental State of the Abused and the Abuser

Women in shelters stated that they are afraid to go to their family home, because it will bring shame upon their parents. Other told of how their own parents and siblings refused them and their children.

3.2.4 The Emotional Status

Women in this abusive situation have little to no self-confidence. They believe the lies of the abuse. A person that went through an abusive situation experience helplessness. She would be considered as humble, but she has in fact no self-worth. With no sense of self-worth, self-pity will ascend; this will make the future more difficult, employers will not employ a pathetic person.

3.2.4.1 Abused Women and Depression

An abused woman who experience depression poses additional and special problems in the attempt to help.

- She might attempt to hide her depression or deny the seriousness of her despair, due to the fact that she fears that nothing can done; this however is due to her fear for drawing attention to the trauma and danger of relational world.
- She might fear that she acknowledges her depression. This is in fact the first step of



An Interpretation of the Mental State of the Abused and the Abuser

acknowledging the reality of the abuse with which she lives.

- She might also fear that any action by others on her behalf, i.e. talking to a therapist may evoke greater violence at home, and result in greater isolation from potential sources of help.
- She may need to keep her depression secretive to her abuser as a form of protection.

Depression occurs in various forms and in seeking to become aware of abused women, who might experience depression, can be problematic to identify which form to address.

3.2.4.1.1 Forms of Depression

Major Depression: this is a condition in which the abused woman experiences a combination of symptoms with such intensity that the woman's ability to work, eats, sleeps, and manage her life activities is seriously impaired.¹⁶

¹⁶ Clark Kroeger, Catherine; Beck, James R. (1996) *Women, Abuse and the Bible: How Scripture can be Used to Hurt or Heal*. UK: Paternoster Press.p.135



Dysthymia: this is not a condition that is disabling the abused woman, but involves long-term, chronic symptoms that the abused woman experiences at a sufficiently high level that prevent her from feeling good or functioning at full capacity.¹⁷

Bipolar or Manic Depression: Manic depression affects more than 5.7 million (2.6%) American adults; or Americans age 18 and older in a given year. When symptoms are present before the age of 12, they are often confused with *Attention-Deficit/Hyperactivity Disorder* (ADHD); a syndrome that is usually characterized by serious and persistent difficulties resulting in inattentiveness or distractibility, impulsivity, and hyperactivity.

Bipolar/Manic Depression affects men and women equally (although women are more likely to experience more depressive and less manic symptoms); manic depression often begins in adolescence or early adulthood. In fact, the average age of onset is 25.

Manic depression is likely to run in families and, in some cases, is believed to be genetic.

¹⁷ Weismann, M.M.; Leaf, P.J.; Bruce, L.; Florio, L. (1988) The Epidemiology of Dysthymia in Five Communities: Rates, Risks, Comorbidity, And Treatment. USA: American Journal of Psychiatry. pp.816-819



An Interpretation of the Mental State of the Abused and the Abuser

Researchers are still undergoing intense research to detect a gene that may be responsible for this disorder.¹⁸

3.3 The Exodus of Abuse

If the abused made the decision to leave the abusive situation and gave up her proudness if any left. She must have some form of resources available to escape the situation.

In the United States of America they have a national organization for women who want to escape an abusive lifestyle. This hotline¹⁹ provides the following assistance:

- Crisis intervention, safety planning, information about domestic violence and referrals to local service providers
- Direct connection to domestic violence resources available in the caller's area provided by a Hotline advocate
- Assistance in both English and Spanish with Hotline advocates having access to more than 170 different languages through interpreter services
- Assistance through e-mail on their webpage
- Informational materials on such topics as domestic violence, sexual assault, battering intervention and prevention programs, working through the criminal justice system and related issues

¹⁸ Bipolar/Manic Depression: http://medicalcenter.osu.edu/patientcare/healthcare_services/mental_health/mental_health_about/mood/bipolar_disorder/Pages/index.aspx

¹⁹ USA Hotline: <http://www.thehotline.org/>



3.3.1 Hotlines in Other Major Countries

There is not a system similar to this in every country around the world for women in such a difficult situation. Australia has a hotline that provides information of forms of abuse and where to seek help including counselling.²⁰

The United Kingdom's hotline for women who experience abuse can contact them or even family or friends can contact the hotline on their behalf.²¹

In India a new hotline for abuse started in June 2013 and was flooded with calls of women of all ages reporting sexual abuse. They pleaded not to take further action for various reasons of their safety.²²

In Pakistan the group *Madadgar*, or the Helper, opened the first hotline in January 2012. Practical support is rare, but the group Karachi is trying to make a difference in these women's lives.²³

In China however, there is no current laws that offer protection to women from any abuse. Domestic abuse is still considered a private family matter.²⁴

²⁰ Australia Hotline: <http://www.1800respect.org.au/workers/>

²¹ UK Hotline: <http://www.nationaldomesticviolencehelpline.org.uk/>

²² India Hotline: http://article.wn.com/view/2013/06/21/Indian_hotline_for_women_is_flooded_with_reports_of_abuse/#/related_news

²³ Pakistan Hotline: <http://m.aljazeera.com/story/201214172013285591>

²⁴ China Hotline: <http://www.dw.de/domestic-abuse-is-a-private-matter-in-china/a-16657738>



3.3.2 Help, Assistance and Legal Aid

These hotlines provide counselling services telephonically. In terms of the caller's willingness to escape the abusive environment the hotline can refer resources that can assist her in shelter and legal advice should she want to take further legal steps against her abuser.

Case Study: Janine

Janine contacted a hotline for abused women. She told them how her partner would try to break her arm on the kitchen table. He kicked her in the ribs and hopes to hear her ribs crack. He held her over the balcony, threatening to throw her over. She was a punching toy for him. Janine got a hotline number from a doctor at the state hospital who knew her from a previous occasion.

The hotline helper gave her the advice to start saving money and keep it at home in a safe place. She was also instructed to have an easy carry bag or backpack, not a travel suit case, with clothing and personals for at least three days. These clothing must be something that her abuser would never expect her to be seen in for example, a simple tracksuit that will not attract attention. No jewellery, no personal belongings, not the current mobile phone, absolutely nothing from the residence.

She questioned the social worker's motive behind these instructions. The social worker told Janine that she will disappear



An Interpretation of the Mental State of the Abused and the Abuser

overnight and she cannot give her abuser breadcrumbs of her whereabouts.

Janine had sentimental goods in his house, and she packed and posted it to her mother's home address. Janine told her abuser that she was cleaning the house and used the excuse that the items did not fit with his décor.

Janine took seven months to collect money; she had an amount in mind that will help her with basics for at least three months in another town. She says that night was the most terrifying night of her life. Her abuser was out with his colleagues having dinner. Janine took the opportunity to shower for the last time in his home. She left everything as he expects it to be.

She had her backpack on her back, dressed in a dark grey black tracksuit and a cap to blend in with backpackers touring through their town. She managed to get on the same bus as them and then she released the tension and anxiety.

At the next stop, she coloured her hair black and changed into a black long dress. He never found her and she literally disappeared out of his life overnight.

Today Janine is very happy and lives an abuse free lifestyle along with her husband which she met in that very town.



An Interpretation of the Mental State of the Abused and the Abuser

There is just one way to escape misogynistic abuse, and that is to disappear into thin air. However, when children are involved, this escape will never be as easy to execute.

Most women in South Africa are not aware of their legal rights, especially those from the rural areas. Legal aid is available, but with a price. Many women give up due to the costs involved. Legal processes can go on for months due to the overflow of cases the court has to deal with.

Mothers, who realise that their own child is being sexually abused by the father, are in fact in a different situation. She has the power to report the abuse, get medical evidence, and take him to court. However, the mothers are not aware of the signs and warnings of child sexual abuse behaviour. In these cases social workers and psychologists become involved.

4. WHEN PARENTS MAKE CHILDREN THEIR SEXUAL PARTNERS

This thesis will focus on incestuous abuse between a parent and child. The incestuous controversy of a step-parent and child will be discussed as a child is in fact obliged to respect the new adult figure in the household.

4.1 The Father And His Daughter

This thesis has found that in numerous case studies the phrase "when mommy was gone, I was daddy's wife" was shockingly common. It appeared that



An Interpretation of the Mental State of the Abused and the Abuser

fathers deceived their own daughters with this phrase making them believe that they have to substitute their mother for the father's sexual needs.

Case Study: Charmaine and Harry

Charmaine and Harry seek marital counselling. Harry was raised in a religious and respectful household. It was always his first priority to respect his wife, unfortunately, the respect factor in its physical form went on for almost three years. Charmaine is afraid to have sex and Harry wants children.

The therapist had her hands in the hair with Charmaine. When she suggested a sex therapist for the marriage's sake, Charmaine got out of control. Charmaine went from an anger state, to begging. The therapist realised there might be something deeper.

She calmed Charmaine by holding her, Charmaine whispered, "My father made me his wife when my mom left the house." She started talking for the first time in seventeen years of her sexual encounters with own father since she was eight.

The therapist says that Charmaine was sexually abused by her father, even if the molesting started at age five, the oral sex started at age eight and escalated into sexual intercourse until she was twelve.

Charmaine sees the sex factor later in her childhood, as her father would fondle her, she would get wet and he said that it is supposed to do that; he would introduce cunnilingus to her. He reeled her in and prepared her



An Interpretation of the Mental State of the Abused and the Abuser

for three years to practise fellatio. One session got out of hand and everything ended up on her face. She vomited and he was extremely apologetic.

Upon asking Charmaine when she realised this behaviour was wrong, she fell to pieces. Her father introduced her to pornography by watching video material and magazines. He always encouraged her that they must try it out or they can do it better. He never made her feel that what they were doing was wrong. It was always a matter of being secretive and no one can know.

He acted normal when the rest of the family had dinner at their house. It was always a matter of "this is special what we have; I love you more than your mother." Charmaine accepted it, seeing that her mother was always working very long hours or have social events until midnight.

Charmaine and her father's sexual lifestyle came to a screeching halt when her mother returned home very early. Her social event was cancelled and she walked in on them while having intercourse. Her father was still inside of her, and Charmaine says he was gentle for not trying to hurt her. Her mother's thought was not "my child is being sexually abused."

She put her feet on his buttocks and pushed him downwards, harder into Charmaine. Charmaine recall her mother saying she was a little whore trying to steal her husband. But she cannot recall that she accused her father of anything, only the thing inside of her is so filthy.



An Interpretation of the Mental State of the Abused and the Abuser

Her parents got a divorce and she was sent to a catholic boarding school for girls. The nuns exclaimed how wrong sex was and that she was a victim of a sex offender from hell. She lost contact with her father after he was sentenced for one year imprisonment.

She has no relationship or contact with her mother, she feels her mother did not have the right to verbally abuse her, she could have inform her what was really taking place. She lived as a renewed virgin and met her husband at university. She told him that she was a virgin and would only have sex when they marry.

Charmaine's experience is typical of an introduction to sex, but this was incest. Although there are other cases where the father commits incest and teaches the brothers of sex by practising it on their sister.

The significance of this case is of which the daughter has anger and resentment towards the mother, not the father. The manner in which the mother responded hurt far more than of the sexual intercourse with the father. In this case the daughter is at peace with her father even if she knows now that what he has done was wrong. The mother however, has earned hatred, rebellion and unforgiveness.

The mother accused her of being a whore, she sent her to a boarding school, i.e. rejecting her, and every teacher knew everything. She was treated as a dirty child with an obsession for older men. The humiliation of not being allowed to enter a male teacher's office without a nun present was overwhelming.



4.1.1 Techniques adults use to prepare a child

There are not a definite manual for sex offenders on how to prepare a child for a sexual encounter. Studies have shown that the first step is how they befriended the child into deception. In this case, the father deceived his own child into false-love.

He constantly reminded her that he is so in love with her and that she meant the world to him. He knew exactly what to buy her to win her trust. He deceived her into the "I know you so well, I know what you want." By doing this he gives her the false security and false protection of belonging to him. He would test her by an accidental fondling and await her response.

Charmaine cannot remember when everything exactly started, and this proves that it started in a playful manner in a safe place, which is the family home. 90% of child sex abuse starts within their family home.²⁵

She can remember the first time cunnilingus had taken place. She was naked in front of him and he dried her with a towel. He accidentally towelled too hard over her vagina and she pulled away. He then wanted to kiss it better... with a Judas Kiss.

The question arises of what is so significant of kissing it better when it hurts.

²⁵ Wiehe, Vernon R. (1998) Understanding Family Violence: Treating and Preventing Partner, Child, Sibling, and Elder Abuse. UK: Sage Publications, Inc. p.94



4.1.1.1 The Kiss-it-better factor

A child falls and is hurt and the mother would usually arrive and kiss it better. Scientists are of the opinion that it is psychological and by kissing someone spontaneously will encourage feelings of attachment and affection.²⁶ A child truly believes his mother's kiss will heal the physical hurt instantly.

4.1.1.2 A Mother's Voice

A mother's voice brings comfort to her child in distress. The question arises of what is so significant of a mother's comfort. When a child had a bad day at school, he would walk into his mother's arms and everything is fine. How is this possible that a mother can have that effect on her child? Dr Leslie J. Seltzer²⁷ hypothesized that social vocalizations can release *oxytocin* in humans, suggesting that a mother's voice can comfort her offspring.

Oxytocin is a neurohypophysial hormone that acts primarily as a neuromodulator in the brain. Oxytocin plays a role in sexual reproduction, especially during and after the birth of a child.

²⁶ Kissing it better: <http://www.howstuffworks.com/kissing1.htm>

²⁷ Seltzer, Leslie J.; Ziegler, Toni E.; Pollak, Seth D. (2010) Social Vocalisations Can Release Oxytocin In Humans. UK: Proceedings of the Royal Society B. Biological Sciences. p.2661



This hormone is released in large quantities after expansion of the cervix and uterus during labour, facilitating birth, maternal bonding, and breastfeeding. Both childbirth and milk discharge result from positive feedback mechanisms.²⁸

Seltzer²⁹ claims that vocalizations are essential mechanisms of social behaviour. The neurohormone, oxytocin, partly governs a number of biological and social processes critical to fitness, such as the bond between mothers and their young.

For the hypothesis, they chose mother-daughter pairs and used a social stressor to the daughters, following which they randomly assigned the mothers and daughters into complete contact, speech-only or no-contact conditions.

The daughters received a complement of comfort including physical, vocal and non-verbal contact, they showed the highest levels of oxytocin and the rapidest return *to baseline of a biological marker of stress* (salivary cortisol), but an extraordinarily parallel hormonal profile emerged in daughters comforted uniquely by their mother's voice.

²⁸ Marieb, Elaine N.; Hoehn, Katja (2011) Human Anatomy And Physiology, 8th Edition. USA: Benjamin Cummings Publishers. p.11(see Chapter 28)

²⁹ Seltzer, Leslie J.; Ziegler, Toni E.; Pollak, Seth D. (2010) Social Vocalisations Can Release Oxytocin In Humans. UK: Proceedings of the Royal Society B. Biological Sciences. p.2661



An Interpretation of the Mental State of the Abused and the Abuser

Seltzer's results suggested that vocalizations might be as *important as touch to the neuroendocrine regulation of social bonding.*

This thesis accepts that Seltzer has biologically proven that a mother's voice can comfort her child. From here the question arises of how is it then possible for a mother to listen to her child's cries while being sexually abused. There are many instances where mothers will groom their daughters to be prostitutes from a very young age.

4.1.2 The Indirect Abuser

In 2010, Australian News³⁰ reported that a 41 year old mother of three sold her daughter for sex and that she provided a hotel room for the sexual services:

Case Study: Mother's Prostitute

The child was under a care and protection order at the time and had only recently been permitted to live with her mother. The court heard the woman paid for a hotel room where her child had sex with a number of men for \$100 per half-hour.

³⁰ Australian News – 12 Year Old Prostitute: <http://www.abc.net.au/news/2010-05-10/12yo-prostitutes-mother-segregated-in-jail/429834>



An Interpretation of the Mental State of the Abused and the Abuser

The prostitution continued for about a month at the Glenorchy home of Gary John Devine. Devine, 51, has been convicted of acting as the girl's pimp and will spend up to 10 years in jail.

The mother originally lied to police, saying she paid for the room so her daughter could have a few drinks with her friends and that she did not know about the prostitution until after it happened.

The prosecution said when the child's 15-year-old sister questioned her whereabouts, the mother replied: "She's laying on her back at a hotel in the city making money to buy both of you a new car."

Defence counsel Rochelle Mainwaring said nothing can excuse her client's horrendous crimes but they should be viewed in light of her personal circumstances. "She was sexually abused by her adoptive uncle and developed a drug addiction after her husband left her," she told the court.

Ms Mainwaring said the mother of three has been segregated in prison because of the outcry from other inmates.

In this case the mother's defence for her cruelty was due to her own abusive childhood. The fact that she can say that her own daughter is lying on her back making money gives room for concern of her mental and emotional condition towards her own blood.



She is taking out her inner anger of childhood out on her daughter. This mother is without a doubt stone cold towards her child, the child only served as a money making object. There was no concern for sexual transmitted diseases or an early pregnancy. The mother and her partner in crime only got a 10 year jail sentence, whereas the 12 year old girl has to live with the shame for the rest of her life.

4.2 The Mother And Her Son

There is little to no reports of mothers having intercourse with their sons, but young step-mothers having sex with their husband's son can occur very easily. Adult survivors of incest testify how sick they became of playing the father's role.

Case Study: Ruben Plays Daddy

Ruben described his ordeal with his mother as shameful and disgusting. He said that he can remember the first obvious encounter at age 6. Mother would have a bath with him; and while they played in the bubble bath, she would accidentally rub his foot against her private parts.

Later on in his young life, he remembers that it was his job to rub oil on her breasts. Ruben did not know it was wrong, he was making her happy and daddy could not.



Case Study: Steven The Playmate

Steven got married to a wonderful woman. He remembers how he fell in love with her. By the time they had their first baby, certain memories were triggered. His wife stood by him and realised not all is well. She made an appointment with a therapist who has experience with adults that were sexually abused by a parent.

Steven's memories started to pour out in the sessions. Steven remembered why he has no need to be in contact with his mother. He cannot remember how he was groomed. He can only remember the physical pain of the last incident.

He described the vibrator as a long egg-shaped silver thing that was connected to a smaller thing. His mother had these silver things inside of her making noises; he sucked on her nipples. He remembered the strange noises she made.

This happened often until the day she inserted the smaller one into his anus for not wanting to suck her nipples. Steven screamed of the pain and he can only remember that she said "it's almost over!"

Everything went white and he felt dizzy. When he came to, he was in his aunt's arms and she was screaming at his mother. He never saw his mother after that and his aunt took him and his father in.



An Interpretation of the Mental State of the Abused and the Abuser

In both these cases the boys could not remember how the grooming started. The mother is the protector of the family but in these two cases both testified that the mothers told them that the father cannot love her the way they do. Ruben hates women and feels sick when they are around him. He is a homosexual and took the role of the female in the relationship. Steven admits he is not in touch with his masculinity as he should be, and prefers to rather do needlework than mow the lawn.

The question arises of the possibility that mothers who molest their sons are resultant of homosexuality are best left for another research study.

4.3 Incestuous Families

There is most of time a disturbed marital relationship where incest occurs. The spouses have a little or nothing in common and there is a great chasm of emotional distance between the two people. The spouses have very poor communication and conflict-resolution skills. They are unable to meet each other's needs for affection, nurturance, and companionship.

The fact of the matter is they cannot communicate effectively, and are unable to function as an effective parental team. Resultant of incestuous families, children are at times cast in adult roles; they are required to act as go-betweens, hear grievances against the other parent, or meet adult needs.

Incestuous family systems have deprived boundaries, troubled marital relationships, and children functioning playing the adult roles. Abusive environments wound a child's development and can be resultant of negative



identity problems, failures in long-or-short-term memory, dysfunctional perception, and dysfunctional physiology of the developing child.³¹

5. THE PSYCHOLOGICAL TRAUMA ON CHILDREN

Any abuser is selfish. They do not recognize the pain they cause in the family home. Children were always seen as children, but in the case studies of this thesis, many survivors of domestic violence can remember the curse words, the hitting and slamming of doors, the mother's cries, and the helplessness of the mother, the father's rage and anger, the hatred in his eyes for the mother and so on.

These memories will remain in the child's mind for the rest of his life. Children are like a sponge, they are receptive of their direct environment which is the family home. Children can look at a mother's eyes and knows she has been crying, even if she is smiling the day away.

5.1 The Effects of Domestic Violence On Children

Mothers have the tendency to pacify their children upon questions being asked of the violence that took place. Mothers can answer these questions and it can soothe the child for the time being.

The irony of many women staying with their abuser believes that it is *the best for the children* not to have divorced parents. But the fact of the matter is

³¹ Langberg, Diane (2003) Counseling Survivors of Sexual Abuse. USA: XulonPress.p.84



many women make the mistake that such a violent home has negative effects on the children. The women in fact are keeping the generational cycle of abuse in place.

5.1.1 Research Studies On Negative Effects By Mothers

Research studies have proven that domestic violence can have a negative effect on children. These studies have found that:³²

Evason (1982): 72% of the mothers felt that the children experienced negative emotional impact.

Abrahams (1994): 91% of the mothers felt that the children suffered negative effects and 86% said that these effects continued in the long term into the children's adolescence.

Mama (1996): 100% of the mothers felt that the violence had detrimental effects on their children.

A Meta-evaluation of 118 quantitative research studies of psychosocial outcomes of children exposed to domestic violence, showed a significant correlation between exposure to domestic violence and occurrence of child problems.

³² McGee, Caroline (2000) *Childhood Experiences of Domestic Violence*. UK: Jessica Kingsley Publishers. p.69



An Interpretation of the Mental State of the Abused and the Abuser

Children who had witnessed domestic violence had considerably worse outcomes than comparison groups of children who did not witness domestic violence.

62% were not performing as well as the average child.³³

In current research studies, mothers reported that the children demonstrate:

- Fear and anxiety
- Anger and tantrums
- Powerlessness
- Depression
- Sadness and crying for no apparent reason
- Impaired social relations
- Under achievement in schoolwork or non-interest
- Self-image and identity

Other impacts reported by mothers is the child's relationship with extended family members, the child's relationship with their mother, and the relationship with the father is clearly affected by the violence towards the mother.

³³ Hester, Marianne; Pearson, Chris; Harwin, Nicola; Abrahams, Hilary. (2007) UK: Athenaeum Press. p.44



5.2 The Effects On Children's Behaviour Towards The Mother

A mother and child relationship is precious. A mother is the child's protective stronghold in life. Unfortunately for this precious relationship, this stronghold's walls can tremble and be affected by domestic violence. Young boys might imitate the abuser's behaviour and show violent behaviour towards the mother, whereas young girls might attract the victim behaviour and be bullied easily.

In contrast to this behaviour, some children become over protective of their mother. Smaller children will cling to their mother or keep her in sight at all times.³⁴

5.2.1 Blaming the Mother for Leaving the Abusive Father

Most children will understand why the mother has left the abusive father. But for some it is difficult, due to the fact that their little minds tell them "mommy did wrong, daddy gave her a hiding, why must he leave?"

In a few case studies of this thesis where children have had anger towards their mother, is due to the fear of not having a father in their life. At first it was difficult for everybody to adjust to the single-parent home, but most of the children recognize that their mother is happier and not under stress to get things done before father returns home.

³⁴ McGee, Caroline (2000) *Childhood Experiences of Domestic Violence*. UK: Jessica Kingsley Publishers. p.83



An Interpretation of the Mental State of the Abused and the Abuser

The children had similarities in the interviews upon asking how is their mother and father now after the divorce in comparison to when they were living together in violence:

- They can have a conversation with her as if she is their best friend.
- They see the father very often, and it seems that the father is taking all the time with his children very seriously.
- Most children said that it is better to have the best of both parents than to have them together and live in fear.

The children were asked if they blamed their mother for divorcing their father:

- Some children said they were actually glad the divorce took place, they can go to bed at normal times and not be awoken by violence in the next room
- Other children stated that they felt they could have worked things out without the violence
- Some children had no need into blaming their mother; they experienced physical or verbal abuse themselves. Since the divorce, their schoolwork picked up and the teachers praise them for it.



5.3 The Effects On Children's Behaviour Towards The Father

A reported fact of domestic violence was that a child's behaviour towards his father changed immediately if he witnessed the violence towards his mother. Children are enraged with the idea of having a violent father. Especially teenagers who witnessed violence between parents, they say that the violent parent is psychotic and needs therapy.

For the research purpose of this study, teenagers were interviewed at a high school. They feel deep sympathy for the fellow students who are experiencing domestic violence. The fathers are almost always never involved in school activities and the children of these fathers does not keep it a secret that they "don't care if he pitches or not."

A reported fact is that children from a domestic violence home could not care less if they ever see their father again. They are angry with him for abusing their mother, their protective stronghold, the way he did. In their eyes, he tried to break their stronghold.

Children from the case study did not make a secret of how embarrassing the domestic violence was. Some of the neighbours were children that went to school with them, sitting in the same class or staying two houses from a teacher's house.

Children cannot be disappointed in their father. A child wants to be proud of his father and wants to honour their father. Some of these children and teenagers said that their father is much calmer after the divorce, and they enjoy him and the time with him.



5.4 When The Abused Abuse Themselves

Children that experience the trauma of abuse have a sense of rejection from the one that was supposed to protect them and nurture them with love. In some cases women were overwhelmed with verbal abuse, and physical abuse, and the chances of them having suicidal thoughts for believing the lies of the verbal abuse might be present.

Female children that were sexually exploited do not necessarily become a prostitute, but statistics has proven otherwise.

57% prostitutes in a study done in 1998 with almost a 140 participants reported a history of childhood sexual abuse, by an average of 3 perpetrators. 49% of prostitutes reported that as children, they were physically abused.³⁵ And another study shows that 95% of women involved in prostitution claims to have been sexually abused as children.³⁶

Advocate Barbie was discussed in Chapter I and her victims at the time of the sexual abuse was left with emotional scars for life. The media focussed on Cezanne Visser's conviction, but the question is what happened to her victims and their mental health. Her victims was addicted to street drugs, left school early, became a *cutter*, and the third victim committed suicide in 2010, she was addicted to heroin.

³⁵ Farley, Melissa; Barkan, Howard (1998) Prostitution, Violence, and Post Traumatic Stress Disorder: Research Paper. USA: University of Oklahoma.p.40

³⁶ Stats on Prostitutes: <http://iwantrest.com/2013/06/04/the-thing-95-of-women-involved-in-prostitution-report-infographic/>



5.4.1 Self-Mutilation as a Result of Abuse

Self-mutilation is not a rare behaviour. For example, one study found that about 40% of college students have engaged in self-mutilation at least once, and about 10% have engaged in self-mutilation 10 or more times. There is evidence that men and women engage in self-mutilation at equal rates.

People who have experienced child abuse or who were separated from a caregiver in childhood are at greater risk for self-mutilation than the general population.³⁷

Research has shown that people who practice self-mutilation help regulate internal experiences such as emotions, thoughts, memories, and physical sensations. Self-mutilators reported that they execute the behaviour to escape from emotional pain, to release anger, to slow racing thoughts, to end episodes of dissociation, or have a sense of control.³⁸

5.4.2 Suicidal Tendencies of Victims

South Korea is considered the Suicide Capital according to the World Health Organization:³⁹ Suicide is the leading cause of death in under 40's in South Korea and there is an average of 40-43 suicides committed *every day* across all ages, giving South Korea the highest

³⁷ Self-Mutilation Stats: <http://bpd.about.com/od/understandingbpd/a/selfharm.htm>

³⁸ Self-Mutilation Motive: <http://www.articlesbase.com/psychology-articles/self-mutilation-what-it-really-is-1251729.html>

³⁹ WHO Stats on Suicide: <http://beyondhallyu.com/culture/south-korea-the-suicide-capital-of-the-world/>



An Interpretation of the Mental State of the Abused and the Abuser

suicide rate in OECD (Organisation for Economic Co-operation and Development) countries and one of the highest suicide rates in the world.

Suicide is now a major social issue with suicide rates having risen almost 20% from 12,270 in 2008 to 14,579 in 2009 and having doubled in the last decade. The suicide rate in South Korea decreased by 11 percent last year, a drop believed to be linked to a ban on fatal pesticides two years ago.

In 2011, the government decided to restrict production of *Gramoxone*, a herbicide linked to suicides, and outlawed its sale and storage in 2012.

"The number of suicides by poisoning including Gramoxone fell by 477, which accounts for about 27% of the total decrease in the number of people committing suicide," said Lee Jae-won, an official at Statistics Korea.

The motives for suicide appear to be surcease and manipulation. Those who seek surcease are people who have given up on life. They see death as the only solution to their problems and take their lives.

Opposing to *surcease* cases, those who view suicide as a means of manipulation use suicide to manoeuvre the world according to their desires.⁴⁰

⁴⁰ Sternberg, Robert J (2001) Psychology: In Search of the Human Mind. USA: Harcourt College Publishers. p.531



An Interpretation of the Mental State of the Abused and the Abuser

They may view suicide as a way to inflict revenge on a lover who has rejected them, to gain the attention of those who have ignored them, to hurt those who have hurt them, or to have the last word in an argument.

5.4.2.1 Myths About Suicide⁴¹

Myth 1: All people who commit suicide have definitely decided that they want to die.

Many of those who commit suicide are not certain that they really want to die; they often take a gamble that someone will reach them just in time.

Myth 2: People who talk about committing suicide do not actually go ahead and do it.

Close to 8 out of 10 of the people who commit suicide have given some/multiple warnings beforehand that they was about to do something.

Myth 3: Suicide occurs more often among people who are wealthy.

Suicide is about equally prevalent at all levels of the socio-economic spectrum.

⁴¹ Sternberg, Robert J (2001) Psychology: In Search of the Human Mind. USA: Harcourt College Publishers. p.531



Myth 4: People who commit suicide are always depressed beforehand.

Depression is linked with suicide, although some people, who take their own lives, show no signs of depression. People with terminal physical illness, for example, may commit suicide not because they are depressed, but to spare loved ones the suffering of having to support them, or because they have made peace with the idea of death and have decided that it is time to enter eternity.

Myth 5: People who commit suicide are crazy.

Although suicide is linked to depression, relatively few of the people who commit suicide are truly out of touch with reality.

Myth 6: The Risk of suicide ends when a person improves in mood following a major depression or a previous suicidal crisis.

Most suicides occur while an individual is still depressed but after the individual has begun to show some recovery. Often, people who are severely depressed are unable even to gather the energy to put together the means to commit suicide, so the suicide is more likely to occur as



they are beginning to feel better and have the energy to do something about their wish to die.

Myth 7: suicide is influenced by the cosmos – sun spots, phases of the moon, the position of the planets, etc.

No psychological evidence supports any of these beliefs.

6. SOLUTIONS FOR THE ABUSER'S BEHAVIOUR

A highly controversial argument is that of can molesters truly be rehabilitated; women abusers are usually send to attend anger management classes to control their anger.

6.1 Rehabilitation For Sexual Offenders

There is a vast controversy of the rehabilitation of sexual offenders. The individuals who are interested in helping offenders to rehabilitate by modifying their behaviour, are usually accused of "being soft" on them.⁴² Some therapists believe in group sessions, whereas others argue that Chemical Castration must be legalised to reduce sex offence statistics.

Psychotherapists are of the opinion that the effective treatment of psychotherapy of child sex offenders was the same, regardless of the issue, the naïve belief of the nature of therapy. The exact principle was thought to apply

⁴² Ward, Tony; Polaschek, Devon; Beech, Anthony R. (2006) Theories of Sexual Offending. UK: John Wiley & Sons, Ltd. pp.263-264



whether it was depression, marital problems, or child sexual abuse. This however, has changed over the years and clinicians hold different principles, tolerate a different relationship with the sex offender, and less trust and more control.⁴³

6.1.1 Cognitive therapy in group sessions

The group intervention for sex offenders is for the purpose of restructuring their cognitive distortions. The participant had to write his offense in detail along with his pre and post-feelings of the event(s); the methods he used to manipulate, coerce, or force of the victim.

The participant's perception of the victim's reactions was then discussed. In group-session the participants were encouraged to challenge the defence mechanisms and cognitive distortions of the offence.

The therapist must compare the offender's disclosure and would now read a summary of all the reports including the victim's statement. This process is repeated until the offender's story is close to the facts with the *smallest amount of minimization, denial, and projection*.⁴⁴

⁴³ Salter, Anna C. (1988) Treating Child Sex Offenders And Victims: A Practical Guide. USA: Sage Publications. pp.84-85

⁴⁴ Marvasti, Jamshid A. (2004) Psychiatric Treatment of Sexual Offenders: Treating the Past Trauma in Traumatizers, A Bio-Psycho-Social Perspective. USA: Charles C Thomas Publisher, Ltd. p.90



6.1.2 Chemical Castration

Chemical castration is the administration of medication designed to reduce libido and sexual activity. Many countries are in the rise of introduce this form of sentence to sex offenders that ruined young children and women's lives.

Korea presented chemical castration on convicted sexual offenders in July 2011. This is the first country in Asia to take drastic action against sex offenders. This new law was instated for offenders that were convicted of sexual crimes against children under the age of 16.

There is still a rising concern for harsher punishment against sexual offenders; this is due to an aftermath of a series of violent sex crimes oppressing women and children in this country.⁴⁵

New South Wales, Australia, has made it public in August 2013 that the parliament is considering C.C. for sex offenders.⁴⁶

England and Wales proposed trials in prisons in 2007, approximately 100 sex offenders have volunteered for this treatment.⁴⁷

In Poland, the President, Lech Kaczynski, signed a law in November 2009 permitting the treatment of some sex offenders with chemical

⁴⁵ Lee, Joo Y; Cho, Kong S. (2013) Chemical Castration for Sex Offenders: Physicians' Views. Published Online: Journal of Korean Science: <http://www.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/pmc/articles/PMC3565125/>

⁴⁶ NSW, Australia Chemical Castration: <http://www.abc.net.au/news/2013-08-11/chemical-castration-being-considered-for-child-sex-offenders/4878824?section=nsw>

⁴⁷ UK: Chemical Castration: <http://www.theguardian.com/society/2013/jan/18/chemical-castration-soft-option-sex-offenders>



castration in response to high profile sex offences committed against children.⁴⁸

The Hurriyet Daily News of Istanbul reported on August 15, 2013 that the Deputy Prime Minister, Bekir Bozdağ, dismissed claims that a ground-breaking draft bill on sexual abuse crimes would be introducing chemical castration for sex offenders convicted of sexual crimes. Bozdağ commented on the bill and said that "*the new provision foresaw medical treatments rather than chemical castration.*"⁴⁹

This can conclude that the world is taking action against sex offenders, but with some against this treatment. Convicted sex offenders that is now registered has different opinions; some was only watching child pornography in which they feel that it is harsh to undergo the treatment, reason being, they did not harm anyone.

Sex offenders that harm women and children physically through sex deny that they have problem and does not want to volunteer for this treatment. The seriousness and awareness of sex crimes is escalating across the globe.

The question from here arises of what initiated the sex offender to act out. Some are of the expert opinion that pornography plays a role, whereas others argue that it could be sexual fantasies that became reality.

⁴⁸ Poland: Chemical Castration: <http://www.bmj.com/content/340/bmj.c74?ijkey=rcCG6E9p6AKqY&keytype=ref&siteid=bmjournals>

⁴⁹ Istanbul: Chemical Castration: <http://www.hurriyetdailynews.com/Default.aspx?pageID=238&nid=51953>



6.1.3 Sexual Fantasies of Sexual Offenders

Sexual Fantasy (SF) has been regarded as a vital component for sex offender treatment programmes. Behavioural modification techniques have been employed to recondition sexual fantasies and neutralise it effectively. Fantasy modification for sexual offenders is a keystone in the United Kingdom's cognitive behavioural programmes.⁵⁰

Forensic Psychologists Brown and Campbell stated that sexual fantasies are hypothesized to serve many functions in the development and maintenance of normal sexual behaviour, including providing a means of escaping from reality, releasing anger, and maintaining and increasing arousal.

They reviewed the key theories and concluded that there are multiple functions of fantasy implied, there is a central assumption within all that fantasy leads to, or facilitates, sexual offending.⁵¹

Many researches have shown that sexual fantasies of sexual offenders differ. Some are of the opinion that SF plays a role in abuse, whereas others are of the expert opinion that any human being has SF's.

The thought of SF is still being disputed, the link between SF, thought and acting out are not necessarily pin pointed to a simple explanation of sexual behaviour that went to the extreme of abuse.

⁵⁰ Howitt, Dennis; Sheldon, Kerry (2007) Sex Offenders and the Internet. UK: John Wiley & Sons, Ltd. p.191

⁵¹ Brown, Jennifer M.; Campbell, Elizabeth A. (2010) The Cambridge Handbook of Forensic Psychology. USA: Cambridge University Press. pp.555-6



6.2 Rehabilitation For Women Abusers

Donald, G. Dutton (PhD) wrote a book "The Batterer: A Psychological Profile." He describes a rehabilitation process of Robert, a woman-batterer. This case was of great concern for this thesis to show what professionals has to endure along with the wife. This professional got deeply involved in the marriage and this proves that a professional can also undergo intense emotional abuse.

Dutton⁵² explains that batterers experience depression and anxiety and refers to dysphoric states. Batterers need to suppress these feelings of depression and anxiety; one of the common ways is by using alcohol. Alcohol is a disinhibitor and if these dysphoric feelings are mixed, the results are a concoction of unhappiness and anger.

Dutton is against the view that the alcohol factor is to blame for the violent behaviour. Alcohol is just one symptom to be blamed; the violent behaviour is from within that can be traced back to childhood trauma.

In the United States domestic violence is a crime in fifty states. Judges order batterers to a program as condition of their probation.⁵³ Anger management programs for batterers are usually proposed by therapists as a start to take control over the anger. This thesis will discuss this further in Chapter VI from a spiritual point of view.

⁵² Dutton, Donald G. (1997) *The Batterer: A Psychological Profile*. USA: Basic Books. p.53

⁵³ Renzetti, Claire M.; Edleson, Jeffrey L.; Bergen, Raquel K. (2001) *Sourcebook On Violence Against Women*. USA: Sage Publications. p.263



6.2.1 Anger Management

Many physical abused women would appreciate it if their violent partners can attend Anger Management programs. In a group session of nine battered women, 1 out of the 9 women said that she is not convinced that this type of program might work. 2 out of the 9 stated that the anger would only be shifted to objects or worse, the children.

The rest of the women are willing to give AM programs an opportunity, however the question arises of will their partners be willing to attend a program.

Anger Management (AM) programs are a derivative of Cognitive Behavioural Counselling that concentrates on anger as the stimulus for violence. The objective is to recognize the physiological warning signs and to implement relaxation techniques to pacify the anger.

The individual signals a time-out period when his anger indications become evident and then leaves for a chosen period to pacify his anger.⁵⁴

AM is easy to teach and seems to suggest instant, short-term results. According to its advocates, it is fairly simple for batterers to learn and execute. AM has impending inadequacies, however. AM cannot account for the intentional controlling behaviours related with abuse.

⁵⁴ Gondolf, Edward W. (2002) *Batterer Intervention Systems: Issues, Outcomes, And Recommendations*. USA: Sage Publications. pp.13-14



An Interpretation of the Mental State of the Abused and the Abuser

AM is often distorted as a “quick fix” and can be a compromise for battered women. AM do not explicitly address the social cavalries for violence against women.⁵⁵

6.2.1.1 Physiological Anger Indications

According to Dr. Harry Mills people that experience physiological anger indicators will recognise the following symptoms of the emerging anger:⁵⁶

- clenching your jaws or grinding your teeth
- headache
- stomach ache
- increased and rapid heart rate
- sweating, especially your palms
- feeling hot in the neck/face
- shaking or trembling
- dizziness

Emotionally feelings might include:

- like you want to get away from the situation
- irritated
- sad or depressed
- guilty
- resentful
- anxious
- like striking out verbally or physically

⁵⁵ Gondolf, Edward W. (2002) Batterer Intervention Systems: Issues, Outcomes, And Recommendations. USA: Sage Publications. p.14

⁵⁶ Ricker, Muriel M. (2011) When the Walls Come Tumbling Down: A Survival Guide For Divorcing Families. USA: Xlibris Corporation. pp.15-16



An Interpretation of the Mental State of the Abused and the Abuser

The following can also be noticed:

- rubbing your head
- cupping your fist with your other hand
- pacing
- getting sarcastic
- losing your sense of humor
- acting in an abusive or abrasive manner
- craving a drink, a smoke or other substances that relax you
- raising your voice
- beginning to yell, scream, or cry

These anger indicators are of concern for the further study of what can happen in the Spiritual World. These indicators will be discussed in Chapter VI to expose the spiritual impact of anger.



7. CONCLUSION

This Chapter has concluded that the fields of psychology and forensic psychology have recognized abusive forms in its physical and mental form. This would however be used as a foundation to expose the demonic activities behind the abusive nature in a later Chapter.

It is founded that therapists who has been in practice for years are able to recognize a Misogynist, whereas not so experienced therapists are having difficulty identifying them. The behaviour of a misogynist will be proven as demonic behaviour manifesting in a person. The controlling behaviour is a challenge in a therapist's rooms, but they seem to teach the controller to take control of his control.

In the many case studies this thesis has gathered, women that experienced the Misogynistic behaviour had their own challenges. It seems as if they are embarrassed to seek therapy, due to the fact that they feel tremendously pathetic.

Many women that is experiencing the controlling behaviour of a partner, does not want to hurt his reputation, but is still in the inner conflict of wanting to help him and leave him. In the cases where the woman is the abuser, the man would rather suffer in silence. This behaviour can lead to extra marital affairs where the man can find the love and respect.

In a case study of interviewing prostitutes of men who wants to be the leader in the bedroom, the prostitutes advocates that men that experience the controlling abusive nature of a women, seek only a conversation where they



An Interpretation of the Mental State of the Abused and the Abuser

can feel like a man. The prostitutes are of the strong opinion that there are so many men that wants a loving woman only to speak to; these men pay for this conversation. Men are paying for emotional stimulation.

This Chapter discussed the man as the abuser, but if the woman is the abuser, the man is more likely to get involved in emotional relationships. The male abuser would get involved in sexual relationships, as he is accusing his victim of infidelity in the case of coercive control. He is questioning her love and commitment; this is the typical case of blame shifting where he is the one that is guilty and accusing his woman for his infidelities.

This thesis has concluded that any abuser of any form has an introductory for his victim. In the cases where the adult has sexual relations with a child, it is proven that there is no psychological statement found by this thesis that sex offenders are trained to seduce a child into sexual activity. It can, in fact, not really be explain.

The similarities are proven in actual case studies that there is an introduction phase and the victims cannot pin point the exact date when it started.

As for women who were abused by their so called loved one. They cannot remember when the verbal or emotional abuse commenced. It is a matter of saying something that is not taken seriously that escalated into character murder.

For women across the world, it is a very difficult task to leave their abusers. Many would ask the question why she did not left him. But the fact remains that this controlling abuser is making it absolutely impossible for her to leave.



An Interpretation of the Mental State of the Abused and the Abuser

If the abused woman is alone, it is done very easily, but, when there are children involved, it can be emotionally draining.

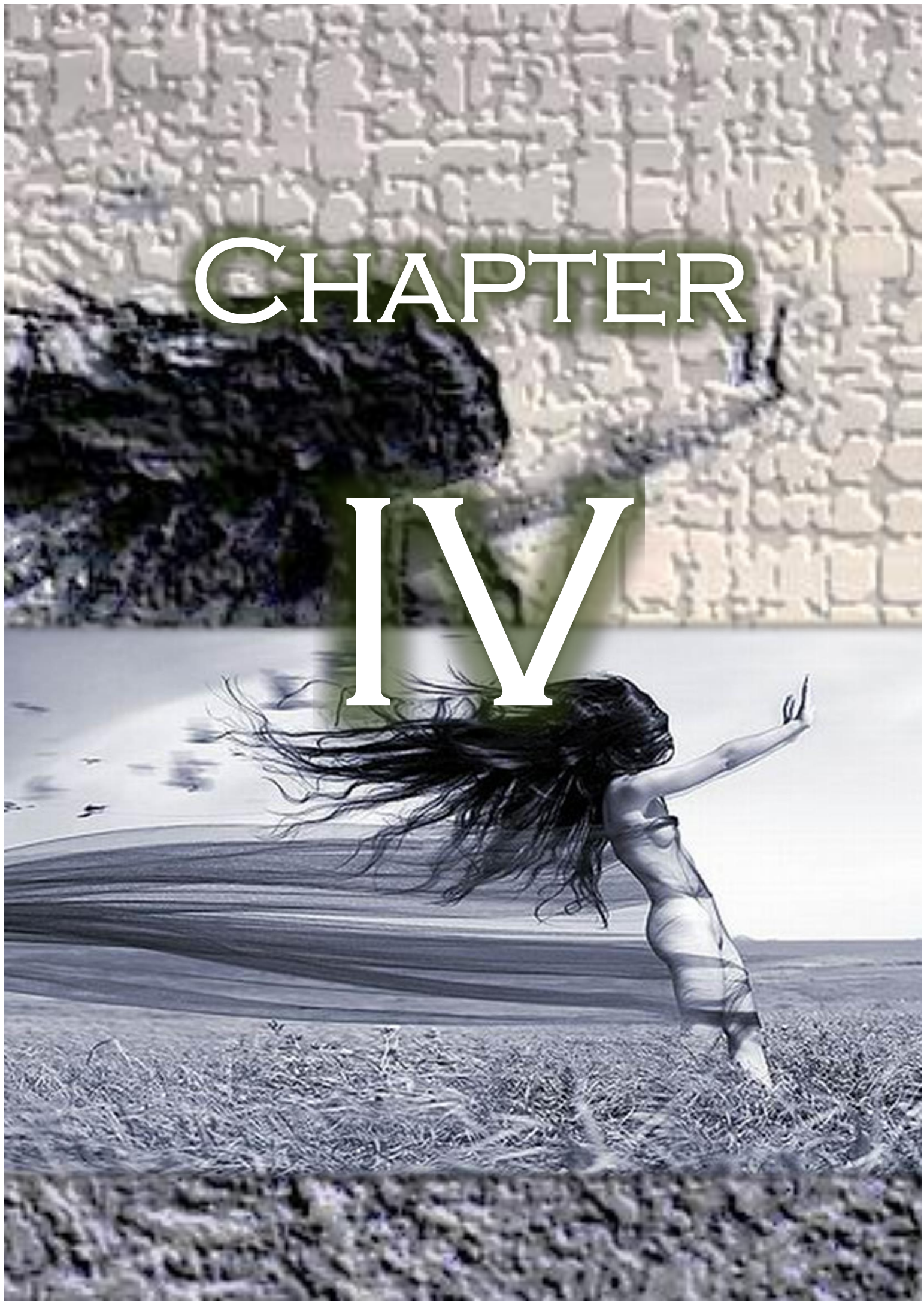
Children do not want an unhappy mother. A mother must be there to assist the children in schoolwork and the fruit is high academic marks. In contrast, the question arises of is the mother doing this to show or prove to the father that she is good in something.

Women and children that experience a form of abuse carry these unhealthy feelings for years in their heart. Some children have the tendency to block these feelings; in later life when they have their own children, that blocked memories is unlocked and it will manifest through reminders of what happened in the past.

oooOooo

CHAPTER

IV



CHAPTER FOUR

AN EXPOSÉ ON THE CAUSES AND CONSEQUENCES OF ABUSE

Then Pharisees and scribes came to Jesus from Jerusalem and said, “Why do your disciples break the tradition of the elders? For they do not wash their hands when they eat.” He answered them, “And why do you break the commandment of God for the sake of your tradition?”

Matthew 15:1-3

1. INTRODUCTION

This chapter intend to investigate the causes and consequences of abuse. Even if experts cannot pin point the origin of abuse, this thesis will look into factors that contribute to the abuse. Abuse in all its forms imprints scars for life, and it hurts every victim in some way.

The effects abuse has on a child reflects in his adult life; the cycle of violence could be never ending if the child or young adult seek help.



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

Sexual abuse is considered a serious offence and awareness has grown globally. This form of abuse is taken more seriously than verbal abuse for example, for verbal abuse cannot be seen by the court. Sexual abuse is reported and it can physically be explained in court. Children that experience physical abuse also has to have blue or black marks before anything can be reported. A slap across the head cannot be seen, but it is damaging the brain.

This chapter intend to discuss possible health risks where abuse is present. A blow to the child's head can have an effect on the brain, and this should be discussed to examine how the growth of the developing brain might be distorted.

Another form of abuse that has little research done is teenagers or adolescents that abuse their parents. The interaction between the parents and teenagers will be discussed and the causes for abusing their parents will be investigated. The adolescent years are fragile years for a young adult; they are not entirely an adult, but also not a child any more.

Victims that seek revenge on their abusers threaten to do so, but the revenge seems to remain as a fantasy. This chapter intend to examine case studies for this thesis to show that the possibility of taking action against the abuser remain a fantasy, in very rare occasions victims might take action.

Expert opinions bring victims to the forgiveness factor. This thesis aims to explain forgiveness, from a victim's perspective, as well as the abuser's viewpoint. Questions arise of why the victim should forgive the abuser; can the abuser ask for forgiveness, where does forgiveness begin and so on.



2. CAUSES AND CONSEQUENCES OF ABUSE

There is no definite answer to what the causes of abuse can be, but in the cases where physical abuse played a role, it can be traced back to the abuser's upbringing. Verbal abuse leaves emotional scars that can only be undone in therapy. Sexual abuse, however, is the worst abuse that can occur in society. Not only is the victim's body violated in the cruellest way, the victim's soul was penetrated with violence.

In many cases that were studied abused women declared that they would rather take the punches (physical abuse) than the words (verbal abuse). By investigating this declaration, this thesis found that physical scares heal, but the scares that reached the heart on an emotional level, were as sharp knives cutting through the heart.

Abuse occurs mostly from the person who is supposedly in the position of protecting his victim. Victims of all kinds knew their abuser very well, a person that was trusted by the family.

The consequences of abuse can only be identified the moment the victim discuss his upbringing. Children that are in primary school or even in preschool can show signs or symptoms of what is going on in their household. Teachers were asked if they can identify the children who live in a troubled home. The more experienced teachers were able to easily point out the children that come from a violent home, and those who live in a protected non-violent home. Children who are sexually abused has a significant behaviour that is extremely obvious to teachers.



2.1 Causes of Abuse

A strong forecaster of domestic violence in adulthood is domestic violence in the household in which the person was nurtured. For example, a child's experience to the father's abuse of the mother is a strong risk factor for conducting domestic violence from one generation to the next. This cycle of domestic violence is difficult to break due to the fact that parents have introduced violence as the norm of managing conflict.

Individuals living with domestic violence in their households have learned that violence and mistreatment are the way to vent anger. Research is not clear as to the causes of abuse. Numerous factors are involved and the issue of abuse is complex. Someone resorts to physical violence due to the fact that:

- in the past problems were solved with violence; a child see the abuse and learn that violence solve conflict,
- violence was effectively exercised with control and power over others in the household,
- they were not stopped from being violent in the past,
- alcohol and drug abuse are almost always linked to domestic violence, but are not seen as a cause for abuse,
- lack in communication skills contribute to physical abuse, due to the fact that conflict and anger cannot be managed.
- Cultural upbringing can only be seen as a risk factor as some cultures accept physical abuse and therefor is it practically impossible to break a violence cycle.¹

¹ Newman, Willis C; Newman, Esmeralda (2008) Domestic Violence: Causes and Cures and Anger Management. USA: Newman International, LLC.p.11



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

Some instantaneous causes that can set off abuse are:

- stress
- provocation by the intimate partner
- economic hardship, such as prolonged unemployment
- depression
- desperation
- jealousy
- anger

In some cases of physical abuse low self-esteem can be identified at the abuser. The abuser's jealousy change into anger and the anger change into the rage that causes him to be violent. Another factor that plays a role at the abuser is his guilt. Many physical abusers are guilty of flirting with the opposite sex at the workplace for example and this guilt change into guilt-shifting, in his mind he will figure that his partner is doing exactly the same and confront her of having an affair.

These are generally facts of physical abuse, but the question arises in the case of sexual abuse of which the victim is raped or sexually assaulted by a stranger, what is the rapist's motive to choose a random woman.

2.1.1 The Motive of Rape and Sexual Assault

Rapists have altered motives for raping which creates diverse patterns of attacks. Every attack has its own diverse pattern conditional on the motives of the rapist. The patterns of rape include the anger rape, the



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

power rape and the sadistic rape. Stranger rape will also be discussed to get to the root of the motive behind rape.

2.1.1.1 The Anger Rape²

The anger rape accounts for 40% of the rapes that happen nationwide. It is characterized by physical violence with the rapist using far more force than is necessary to pacify the victim. The understanding for the rapist is of conscious anger and rage. He expresses his rage physically and verbally upon the victim during the attack.

His objective is to hurt and humiliate his victim. He often shows his disrespect through abusive and blasphemous language.

The anger rapist deliberates rape as the ultimate crime he can commit against his victim. Such a rapist strikes periodically and irregularly, due to the fact that the attack will discharge his anger and relieves his frustrations for a period of time. In due course the rapist will reach his need again and he will exercise his crime once more.

His need is to hurt and destroy his victim, his weapon is aggressive sex and his motive is revenge.

² Allison, Julie A (1993) Rape: The Misunderstood Crime. USA: Sage Publications, Inc.pp.55-56



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

2.1.1.2 The Power Rape³

The objective of the power rapist is to control his victim, not to harm her. Sexuality becomes a way to compensate for his underlying feelings of inadequacy and feeds his issues of mastery, control, strength, authority and capability.

The power rapist relies upon verbal threats, intimidation with a weapon, and only uses the amount of force necessary to subdue his victim. Nationally, power rapes account for 55% of all rapes.

The power rapists tend to have fantasies about sexual conquests and rape. He may even believe that even though the victim initially resists him, that once he overpowers her, she will eventually enjoy the rape.

He needs to believe that the victim enjoyed "it", and he may even ask her for a date later. Because this is only a fantasy, he does not feel reassured by either his own performance or the victim's response. He feels that he must find another victim, convinced that this victim will be "the right one". Hence, his offenses may become repetitive and compulsive. He may commit a series of rapes over a short period of time.

³ Allison, Julie A (1993) Rape: The Misunderstood Crime. USA: Sage Publications, Inc.p.56



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

2.1.1.3 The Sadistic Rape⁴

In the sadistic rape, the rapist transforms anger and power so that aggression becomes sexual and thus eroticized for him. He finds deliberate maltreatment of his victim sexually gratifying. He takes pleasure in her torment, distress and agony. This type of rape accounts for 5% of rapes nationally.

Sadistic rape usually involves torture and restraint. It might take on ritualistic or other bizarre acts. The victim's injuries will be primarily concentrated on the sexual areas of her body; there might be mutilation on these areas. The rapist may use some type of instrument or object to penetrate his victim. The Modimole Monster that was discussed in Chapter I tortured his estranged wife by using pliers.

The sadistic rapists' assaults are deliberate, calculated and premeditated. He will often wear a disguise or might blindfold his victim. Prostitutes or other women whom he recognizes to be "promiscuous" are often the sadistic rapist's targets.

The victims of a sadistic rapist may not survive the sadistic attack. For some offenders, the ultimate satisfaction is gained from finally executing his victim.

⁴ Allison, Julie A (1993) Rape: The Misunderstood Crime. USA: Sage Publications, Inc.p.57



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

2.1.1.4 Stranger Rape

Stranger Rape is a rape or sexual assault exercised by someone that is not known to the victim. There are three types of sexual assault that is defined as:

Blitz sexual assault - The perpetrator swiftly and brutally assaults the victim with no prior contact. Blitz assaults commonly occur at night in a public place.

Contact sexual assault - The perpetrator makes contact with the victim and tries to gain her/his trust before assaulting her/him. Contact perpetrators pick their victims in bars, lure them into their cars, or otherwise try to coerce the victim into a situation of sexual assault.

Home invasion sexual assault - When a stranger breaks into the victim's home to commit the assault.

It is believed by some academics that anger and power be the primary motivation for most rapes.⁵ Richard Felson coauthored the controversial book "Aggression and Coercive Actions: A Social-Interactionist Perspective" with James Tedeschi, a book which argues and states that sexual fulfilment is the motive of rapists, rather than the aggressive desire to dominate the victim.

⁵ Dicano, Margaret (1993) Encyclopedia of Violence Origins, Attitudes, Consequences. USA: Facts on File, Inc.



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

Felson⁶ believes that rape is an aggressive form of sexual coercion and the goal of rape is sexual satisfaction rather than power.

Most rapists do not have a preference for rape over consensual sex. In one study, male rapists evaluated with *penile plethysmography*⁷ demonstrated more arousal to forced sex and less discrimination between forced and consensual sex than non-rapist control subjects, though both groups responded more strongly to consensual sex scenarios.

2.2 Consequences of Abuse

The results of abuse can be very long-lasting. Women who were abused by their partner or husband may develop:

- sleeping problems
- depression
- anxiety attacks
- low self-esteem
- lack of trust in others
- feelings of abandonment
- anger

⁶ Rape Sexual Satisfaction: <http://www.thefinancialexpress-bd.com/index.php?ref=MjBfMDNfMTZfMTNfMV8yN18xNjMzMzMDU=>

⁷ **Penile Plethysmography:** *The penile plethysmograph is an individually applied physiological test, which measures the flow of blood to and from the genital area. Over the past 20 years the plethysmograph has evolved into a sophisticated computerized instrument capable of measuring slight changes in the circumference of the penis.* Kercher, Glen (1993) Use of the Penile Plethysmograph in the Assessment and Treatment of Sex Offenders. Report of the Interagency Council on Sex Offender Treatment to the Senate Interim Committee on Health and Human Services and the Senate Committee on Criminal Justice, USA.



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

- sensitivity to rejection
- diminished mental and physical health
- inability to work
- poor relationships with their children and other loved ones
- substance abuse as a way of coping
- Physical abuse may result in death, if the victim does not leave the relationship.

Women who experience physical abuse by their husband's often show that their self-respect is destroyed and her will is paralyzed.⁸ Another fact here is that of a wife losing respect for her husband and furthermore does not feel protected, but rather betrayed.

The trust that she had in her husband the on their wedding day, has faded. This affects the children of the marriage, due to the fact that the head of the household cannot be trusted and he is unable to protect his family.

2.2.1 The Effect on Children From A Domestic Violence Home

Children who witness domestic violence may develop serious emotional, behavioural, developmental, or academic problems. As children, they may become violent themselves, or withdraw. Some act out at home or school; others try to be the perfect child. Children from violent homes may become depressed and have low self-esteem.

⁸ Martin, Del (1981) Battered Wives. USA: Volcano Press. p.8



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

As they develop, children and teens that were nurtured with domestic violence in the household are:

- more likely to use violence at school or in the community in response to perceived threats
- more likely to attempt suicide
- more likely to use drugs
- more likely to commit crimes, especially sexual assault
- more likely to use violence to enhance their reputation and self-esteem
- more likely to become abusers in their own relationships later in life

Research studies in the United States indicated links between child abuse and domestic violence. It was found that between 32 to 53% of all the families where the women experienced physical abuse, the children were also victims of abuse by the same abuser.⁹

The most common context for child abuse is domestic violence. Even if it is stated that male abusers in the household are more likely to be abusive to children,¹⁰ this thesis however differs. The mother would also act out and be abusive towards the children; her intention would be to protect the children from being abused and verbal abuse can occur to encourage the children not to upset the abuser. She might do this with a good intention, but it might get out of hand and physical

⁹ Pearson, Chris; Hester, Marianne; Harwin, Nicola (2007) Making An Impact – Children and Domestic Violence: A Reader. UK: Jessica Kingsley.p.43

¹⁰ Pearson, Chris; Hester, Marianne; Harwin, Nicola (2007) Making An Impact – Children and Domestic Violence: A Reader. UK: Jessica Kingsley.p.44



abuse can occur. Thus and therefor, the children in the domestic violent household are being abused by both the parents.

2.2.2 Childhood Trauma and the Consequences in Adulthood

The relationship between childhood trauma and later health concerns has been the subject of numerous studies. Research has found that childhood experiences of abuse contribute to the probability of depression, anxiety disorders, addictions, personality disorders, eating disorders, sexual disorders and suicidal behaviour.¹¹

A study by Palmer, Brown, Rae-Grant, and Loughin,¹² *Survivors of childhood abuse: their reported experiences with professional help*, with 384 survivors of childhood abuse found that the survivors of child abuse have a tendency to be depressed, to have a low self-esteem, and to have problems to function in a family.

A recent study found that nearly 76% of adults reporting child physical abuse and neglect have at least one psychiatric disorder in their lifetime; almost 50% have three or more psychiatric disorders.¹³

Adults with abuse histories also presented with physical problems were more frequently than those who have not experienced. Furthermore, child sexual abuse has been found to be a key factor in the cause and

¹¹ Childhood Trauma and Health Risks: <http://www.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/books/NBK64178/>

¹² Survivors of childhood abuse: their reported experiences with professional help: <http://www.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/pubmed/11329643>

¹³ Harper, Kim; Stalker, Carol A; Palmer, Sally; Gadbois, Sue (2007) Adults Traumatized by Child Abuse. UK: Journal of Mental Health.



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

continuation of youth homelessness with between 50-70% of young people within Supported Accommodation Assistance Programs having experienced childhood sexual assault.¹⁴

3. AN OVERVIEW ON CHILDREN WHO ABUSE THEIR PARENTS

Children who abuse their own parents is a common matter, but it is under reported and a under researched subject. Parents are subjected to the stages of childhood aggression, and it is almost always in the form of verbal or physical abuse.

Parents feel a sense of shame and embarrassment to have an abusive child and therefor barely seek help. Counselling assistance in these cases are there, but rare to find.

Teenagers can abuse their parents verbally, emotionally and financially. Some abusive teenagers will call their parents' names out of disrespect. They will play on their parents' emotions to get what they want. Teenagers will play the "it is embarrassing" – card to get extra money to go out.

The adolescent phase is probably the most difficult phase in life; the teen is too old to play but too young to have a good time. They get trapped indoors where all hell can be born.

¹⁴ Childhood Trauma and Youth Homelessness: <http://www.asca.org.au/displaycommon.cfm?an=1&subarticlenbr=201>



3.1 Causes of Abusive Behaviour from teenagers

According to Cottrell,¹⁵ who wrote the book: "The Abuse of Parents by Their Teenage Children," the reasons for parental abuse are:

- arguments that is getting out of control;
- aggressive behavioural propensities;
- being frustrated or feeling unable to deal with problems;
- not capable of managing angry feelings;
- witnessing direct abuses in the family home can trigger similar behaviours;
- lack of respect for their parents;
- lack of consequences for unacceptable behaviour;
- fear;
- drugs and alcohol;
- "gang" culture;
- not having an acceptable role model;
- being unable to deal with a disabled or mentally ill parent(s);
- revenge or punishment for something the parents should have or could have done;
- mental illness or an addiction problem

The question from here on arises of can this be the result of miscommunication?

¹⁵ Cottrell, Barbara (2003) Parent Abuse: The Abuse of Parents by Their Teenage Children. Canada: National Clearinghouse on Family Violence.



3.2 Typical model of Interaction between parent and a teenager

According to Spitzberg¹⁶ the typical interaction leading to parental abuse often seems to occur in the following sequence:

- 1. the adolescent makes a request;*
- 2. the parent asks for clarifying information;*
- 3. the adolescent responds courteously and provides the requested information;*
- 4. the parent acknowledges the teen's point of view but decides to say "no" based on the information provided, while possibly continuing the conversation regarding a possible "next time";*
- 5. the adolescent tries to change the mind of the parent by asking the parent to explain the decision, sometimes using the information to continue to challenge the parent until certain that the answer would not change; and*
- 6. if the parent holds firm to his or her decision, the teen may start using abusive remarks and threats, harass the parent by following the parent around, and finally responding with verbal threats, physical*

¹⁶ Spitzberg, B H; Cupach W R (2011) Adolescent-to-parent Abuse: Exploring the Communicative Patterns Leading to Verbal, Physical, and Emotional Abuse. The Dark Side of Interpersonal Communication. USA: Routledge.pp.363-385



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

force, emotional abuse, and often destruction of property or financial damage.

These types of aggressive behaviours are very important to recognize for appropriate treatment of adolescents and parents abused by the same. Yet the escalation of violence is an interactive process. When parents or others overreact and intervene emotionally, they can cause the adolescent's aggression to escalate to a higher level, by exerting examples of violence and unreasonableness as a parent.

The more tendencies towards abuse and negative behaviours that the parent exemplifies, the more responsive the child will also be, more often in a negative style. Balancing these two forces is the key to healthy family dynamics in reducing potential abuse within families, whether it is parental abuses or child abuses.

Case Study: Lisa and her Parents

Lisa is a young dynamic academic and in grade 10. Her parents support her in everything she wants to do. Her parents discussed it with her that her "personal" credit card is too high and she should spend less. The conversation was calm until it was her turn to speak. She told her parents very politely that she has a social status to uphold and that it their problem to pay the credit card, that being said, she reminded them that the grade 10 High School Dance is underway and she hopes that the credit card will be settled by then. Lisa had her eye on a R3,000 (approximately \$29,000) dress.



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

Lisa's parents realised that they need an intervention and quickly. Their princess feels that she did not asked to be born and that it is her parents' responsibility to give her the world. Lisa's parents visited the family pastor to consult with him of their daughter who is financially reckless. The pastor carefully discussed it with the parents that they should pretend to have lost their jobs, and move into a small apartment; keeping all the bank statements in a safe place. This was an enormous thing to ask from the parents.

The father pretended to have lost his job and a month later, the mother really lost her job. Lisa was in fact only worried about her car that she will not have.

Over time they took Lisa to poor suburbs to help hand out soups and blankets. It brought the child to her knees and she came to another realisation. By the time she was eighteen, the parents moved back into their home and handed the keys of the apartment over to Lisa. Lisa bought her own vehicle and is now running her own company that is assisting in the need of the poor.

This could only be one successful story, but in the case where teenage boys verbally abuse their own mother, proved that there is not respect for the mother.

This however is the way the father spoke to the mother; boys look at their father for guidance and see how he manages his conflict. Boys that were reared in a home where the mother was verbally abused will do to their wives or partners the same in later life.



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

Mothers are seen as being pathetic beings that is helpless. A form of hatred develops and later on will manifest as despise for women.

3.3 Children Who Kill Their Parents

Children who kill their parents are socially unacceptable. Questions arise of why they would do that or was there life insurance involved. Psychologists investigated this and found that there is three types of children that can kill their parents.

1. The severely abused child
2. The severely mentally ill child
3. The dangerously antisocial child

Studies of adolescents who have killed their parents have suggested that they were severely abused by their parents due to the fact that they could not tolerate the conditions of the home environment. This type of adolescents was psychologically abused by one of the parents or both. They might have witnessed abuse or experienced physical or sexual or verbal abuse. It is reported that these children could no longer endure the familial situations and most likely kill out of desperation.¹⁷

It is reported that self-defence was present at the time of the murder. The adolescents had reason to believe that the abuser was threatening them with

¹⁷ Block, Carolyn; Block, Richard (1995) Trends, Risks, And Intervention in Lethal Violence: Proceedings of the Third Annual Spring Symposium of the Homicide Research Working Group. USA: Diane Publishing.p.191



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

death or serious injury, therefor, the adolescent felt that it was necessary to prevent this threat and defended him/herself.

This only prove that a victim can only endure that much, a victim will retaliate at one point and the consequences can be death of an abuser. Children that live in a threatening environment will conclude that they have to defend themselves or they will die.

Children believe their parents' word and take it very seriously. Verbal threats that accompany physical abuse harvest the ultimate fear within the adolescent. Small children are defenceless and can only rely on a sibling or other parent to protect them. Adolescents have a more physical advantage as they are not looked down upon.

Children look up to their parents and feel the fear from their eyes. A significance here is of how children look up to their parent as an idol. Every person look up to an authority, an authority is a higher force that has a presence from above. Children want to look up and believe in their parental authority to be protected, but when this protection is threatening them, the wrong elements are reaped.

Abusers have the tendency to physically look down upon their victims to intimidate them. Adolescents are practically the same height as the abuser and feel more equal and less defenceless. The abuser however would have to look the adolescent in the eyes on his level, the abuser might have generated a fear and a child can sense fear in a parent's eyes.



3.3.1 Children Who Killed

In recent decades a few children made headlines when they killed their parents for various reasons:

- In 1987 Toru Sakai stabbed his father to death in California, USA; he is still a wanted person and remains a fugitive.¹⁸ No motive was established.
- In 1998 a troubled teen named Kip Kinkel (15) killed his parents and two fellow students at his school in Oregon, USA; he was sentenced to 111 years in prison without parole.¹⁹ No motive for the shooting was found.
- In 2003 Sarah Marie Johnson (16) shot her parents for not allowing her to date a 19 year old; she was convicted²⁰
- In 2001 Dipendra of Nepal massacred nine of his royal family members at a royal dinner; the motive was that of a Romeo and Juliet scenario. Dipendra wanted to marry Devyani Rana of the Rana clan, and his family was against it and they have a great historic animosity with the Rana clan.²¹
- Christopher Porco murdered his father and disfigured his mother with an axe; his motive: his parents were angered of his poor

¹⁸ Toru Sakai: http://www.lapdonline.org/all_most_wanted/most_wanted_view/12742

¹⁹ Kip Kinkel: <http://murderpedia.org/male.K/k/kinkel-kipland.htm>

²⁰ Sarah Marie Johnson: <http://murderpedia.org/female.J/j/johnson-sarah.htm>

²¹ Dipendra of Nepal: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Dipendra_of_Nepal#Motive_for_murder



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

grades and his money spending; he was sentenced to 50 years to life in prison in 2006.²²

- The Menendez Brothers killed their parents in 1989 claiming that their wealthy parents abused them verbally, physically and sexually; both were convicted in a second trial in 1996.²³
- In 2008 Nicolette and Hardus Lotter murdered their parents in their home, Durban, South Africa. Nicolette's ex-boyfriend, Mathew Naidoo was the mastermind behind the killing, Naidoo claimed to be the third son of God and the parents must be killed for their sins. Nicolette and her brother, Hardus, got sentenced to 12 years in prison; Naidoo got two life sentences for the plot.²⁴

These few cases resulted in dramatic trauma for the rest of the families. Children who murdered their own parents for the simple motive of life insurance money were overwhelmed by Greed. These cases make it difficult for those children who defend themselves in actual abuse cases.

A teenage girl who stabs her abuser with a knife for having enough, can be argued in court; this traumatic experience delta into more traumatic experiences. Many victims of abuse, who take action against their abuser, must furthermore defend themselves in court to prove

²² Christopher Porco: <http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2296764/Chris-Porco-murdered-parents-ax-successfully-blocks-new-Lifetime-movie.html>

²³ The Menendez Brothers: http://www.trutv.com/library/crime/notorious_murders/famous/menendez/trial_17.html

²⁴ Lotter Children: <http://www.news24.com/SouthAfrica/News/Nicolette-Lotter-was-programmed-to-kill-20120319>



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

that they were the victim. Some victims remain quiet and patiently wait for the day of revenge.

4. VICTIMS OF ABUSE AVENGING THEIR ABUSERS

Victims of abuse might try to forget their abusive past by trying to make a brighter future. In some cases married couples are married for years, and one of the marital partners will reveal to the other that there was abuse in his/her childhood. Other cases seemed to forget and accepted the past, but deep in their heart a darkness kept lingering.

Case Study: Jason

Jason was sexually abused by his father's best friend; he never told anyone, nor did he seek therapy. Jason moved on and was a prestigious student at University. His father was delighted and extremely proud of him for being so focussed.

Jason received his Master's degree and he was promoted. He had to do interviews and the next person on the list did not seem to ring a bell. It was his father's old friend, uncle James. Uncle James applied for a position and Jason had the final say. Jason rejected his application the same day. That night he told his wife of his sexual abuse as a child.

* * * * *



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

Jason was in a position of authority over his abuser. Even if his abuser did not recognize him or his name for that matter, Jason took revenge without killing anybody. Jason forgave this man and tried to forget the sexual abuse by being a hard worker.

Victims of abuse tend to have unforgiveness towards their abusers, and they would try to avenge what is being done to them by the perpetrator. In many situations where abused women gathered for an interview, a significance occurred: they all fantasized to do to their abuser what's being done to them. By talking about their anger and rage, they all experienced laughter, a moment of happiness in a safe environment.

Bringing these women to the point of forgiving their perpetrators to be set free of their thoughts that keep them in captivity took some persuasion. It was found that some women have in fact an inner need to forgive their abuser.

4.1 Forgiving the Abuser

The most difficult thing to do for some victims is to forgive their abuser, but many trauma specialists have written about the need to forgive the abuser. The only way to get rid of the anger and hate towards the abuser is in fact to forgive him. Forgiveness will also release the desire of revenge.²⁵ There are many abusers who do not deserve forgiveness from a global point of view. Abusers have difficulty to admit to their wrongdoing and are not fazed if they are forgiven or not.²⁶

²⁵ Williams, Mary B (2002) *The PTSD Workbook: Simple Effective Techniques for Overcoming Traumatic Stress Symptoms*. USA: New Harbinger Publications. p.385

²⁶ Blake, Scott (2010) *Ptsd: The Ageless Disorder*. UK: Chipmunka Publishing. p.28



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

In the women abuse group it was found that the women all said that they wish they had defended themselves. Most agree due to the fact that they use to see themselves as strong women with strong personalities and that they are angry at themselves for not reacting to the abuse. They felt disappointed in themselves and experienced self-hatred; they called themselves pathetic and useless.

Forgiveness does not happen overnight. Forgiveness is a process and might be practiced every day.

- The abuser must be forgiven on an emotional level as the abused feel sympathy towards the abuser.
- The abuser must also be forgiven on a cognitive level as he remains in the abused's statements and/or thoughts.
- The abuser must then be forgiven on a spiritual level.

Case Study: Jimmy

Jimmy's mother passed away when he was five years old. He was left in his father's care – a stranger who he never knew. His father's wife was not satisfied to have a new son whom she never met. It was already difficult to adjust to the new surroundings and a new mother, unfortunately within a year, Jimmy's new mother physically attacked him for not picking up a towel in his bedroom.



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

Jimmy tried to hide the blue eye from his father; his new mother threatened him that she will break his legs if he told his father. Jimmy had a list of injuries, but when his father suspected that his boy cannot be that accidental, he installed hidden cameras in the house.

After two weeks, Jimmy's father took the video tape to a friend to watch the activity taken place. After 20 minutes Jimmy's father broke down in tears; he was stunned to look at a video tape of his wife smashing his boy's head against the wall. The friend took Jimmy in and his father got a divorce. Jimmy felt he lost his father and Jimmy is responsible for making him so unhappy that he gave his only son away.

Jimmy had bitterness in his heart for the mother figure. In his teen years he followed her to the stores, he knew where she took her children for an outing, and her whole itinerary was general knowledge. Jimmy became a stalker. He took revenge by cutting her vehicle's tyres while she is shopping; he broke into her house and switched on the gas stove; he spilled oil at her kitchen doorsteps; and the list go on.

Jimmy had a teacher who noticed that this boy might need someone to talk. The teacher assisted Jimmy in finding a counsellor that can help him overcome this extreme bitterness. Jimmy realised his behaviour was abnormal.



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

To focus on forgiveness is to cope strategically to improve psychological functioning.²⁷ Many abused women and children are having difficulty to forgive²⁸ for the reason being that they pardon their abuser's conduct and ask the simple question of why they must have mercy on them when no mercy was shown to them.

4.2 Forgiving Oneself

Abuse victims have the tendency to blame themselves for the traumatic abuse. They feel they could or might have avoided the situation or defend themselves in some way. They feel that they could have stopped the abuse in different ways.²⁹

The process to forgive oneself and by accepting the past might be difficult, but resultant to this is the release of the power the abuser still has over the victim.

Victims have a problem of not being able to stop thinking about the abuse, due to the fact that they feel hopeless and helpless. Low self-esteem levels are a common fact in most cases of abuse victims. The trauma of abuse is fear. The fear that the abuser will return, the questions of how hard is it going to be this time, this constant fear surrounding the victim is stealing reality. The victim's fear becomes his/her world. Victim's harvest hatred, the end result for hatred is bitterness.

²⁷ Williams, Mary B (2002) *The PTSD Workbook: Simple Effective Techniques for Overcoming Traumatic Stress Symptoms*. USA: New Harbinger Publications. p.386

²⁸ Nason-Clark, Nancy (1997) *The Battered Wife: How Christians Confront Violence*. USA: John Knox Press. p.54

²⁹ Williams, Mary B (2002) *The PTSD Workbook: Simple Effective Techniques for Overcoming Traumatic Stress Symptoms*. USA: New Harbinger Publications. p.387



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

Many victims are in a dark place that spirals into a never ending hole. Some victims testified of how they could have changed the situation or they should have known better or they could have protected themselves more. This unrealistic questioning of oneself can be infinite. These characteristics are associated with a primary diagnosis of depression.

4.2.1 Characteristics of Depression

According to the World Health Organization³⁰ *Depression is a common mental disorder, characterized by sadness, loss of interest or pleasure, feelings of guilt or low self-worth, disturbed sleep or appetite, feelings of tiredness and poor concentration.*

It can be long lasting or recurrent, substantially impairing a person's ability to function at work or school, or cope with daily life. At its most severe, depression can lead to suicide. When mild, depression can be treated without medicines but, when moderate or severe, people may need medication and professional talking treatments.

According to Catherine Kroeger and James R Beck³¹ who wrote the book, *Women, Abuse and the Bible*, depression is a disturbance of a person's mood and it is a normal response to the painful events an individual experience during his lifetime. Temporary feelings of sadness, grief, discouragement, and loss of hope are common for someone who are overwhelmed with depression.

³⁰ WHO-Depression: <http://www.euro.who.int/en/what-we-do/health-topics/noncommunicable-diseases/mental-health/news/news/2012/10/depression-in-europe/depression-definition>

³¹ Kroeger Clark, Catherine; Beck, James R (1996) *Women, Abuse and the Bible*. UK: Patenoster Press.p.133



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

Clinical depression can be distinguished from the normal life response of feeling discouraged or being “blue.” These symptoms include a persistent sadness, constant feelings of hopelessness, pessimism, feelings of guilt or worthlessness or helplessness, loss of interest or pleasure in activities, eating disorders, decreased energy, thoughts of death or suicide or suicide plans or suicide attempts, restlessness or irritability, difficulty to concentrate or to remember or difficulty making decisions and so on.

According to the American Psychiatric Association if four or more of these symptoms can be identified, the person should seek professional help promptly.³²

4.3 Forgiving the Sexual Abuse Perpetrator

John Shore³³ argues that a sexual abuse victim does not need to forgive the abuser. He is of the opinion that a victim is not obligated to forgive. He further addresses the victim to understand that the victim was the one who got hurt. He states very aggressively “whatever forgiving means” in his attempt of helping the victim.

However, in his rage of stating this, he mentions that no one can force a victim to forgive, and this is second by this thesis that a victim cannot be pressured to forgive. As being discussed – forgiveness is a process.

³² Kroeger Clark, Catherine; Beck, James R (1996) Women, Abuse and the Bible. UK: Patenoster Press.p.134

³³ Forgiving Sexual Abuser: <http://johnshore.com/2013/03/18/six-things-to-know-about-sexual-abuse-and-forgiveness/>



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

A sexual abuse victim is a different form of trauma to overcome. The shame and guilt upon the victim is overwhelming and therefore it is of utmost importance that the victim overcomes the shame and guilt that he placed upon himself – this is not only a spiritual, but mental issue to overcome.

The victim's body was disgraced, innocence was stolen, and resultant of this is the constant feeling of being dirty.

Case Study: Tanya

Tanya was molested by her biological father from the age of 6. Her mother divorced her father the moment she suspected sexual abuse. Tanya can remember that she love to take a shower. But 20 years later, her house is a "mess" according to her. It is never clean. Upon visiting her house, it was found that the floors were squeaking clean and everything sparkled. The smell of cleaning materials is draping the atmosphere.

In this case study this thesis found that Tanya never dealt with the sexual abuse, she did not receive any treatment. The fact that she loved to be clean on herself by taking a shower three times a day, escalated into a very clean house. Tanya is obsessively cleaning her "dirty" house. This wall had to be broken down, and the forgiveness factor was brought to the table. After only four months Tanya forgave herself for being unclean and the obsessiveness in the house has calmed down.



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

This thesis found that she hated herself for not telling her mother; she was angry at herself for not talking to her teacher in grade two when they discussed Molestation. She despised herself for not talking to her grandmother the day she asked her if everything is "ok." Her Grandmother said to her that she can trust her and can always help her and her mother. She strongly believes that her grandmother sensed there was something wrong and tried to reach out to her.

Tanya blames herself for not talking the moment there was a chance to talk. On the other hand her parents got divorced and she never saw her father again... but now she feels she is ready to face him.

Tanya will now go into the process of facing her biggest fear: her father. After about 20 odd years she wants to ask him why. This is normal for victims to ask the "why did you do it" question. In most cases the abuser will either apologise and show remorse or pretend that he has no idea what the accusation is all about.

5. PHYSICAL, SEXUAL, AND VERBAL ABUSE AS A HEALTH RISK

Domestic violence tops the list for admission into emergency rooms at hospitals globally. Many women arrive with physical injuries and receive immediate attention, for others who had a blow to the head that is only complaining of the pain to the head are not treated as immediate attention. A clinical indicator of domestic violence may be categorized into physical complaints or psychosocial indicators, or both.



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

Men who sexually abuse their partners are seen as dangerous, showing that women are at greater risk of death.

Physical abuse during pregnancy poses a significant health risk for the mother-to-be and her unborn child. In some case studies it was found that domestic violence started when the woman discovered she was pregnant and shared it with her partner.³⁴

The possibility of complications from domestic violence during pregnancy may include low birth weight, miscarriages, or even maternal death. These symptoms could result from abdominal trauma, inadequate prenatal care, suboptimal weight gain, unhealthy diets or severe stress.³⁵

5.1 Physical Reports of Abuse Victims

Physical reports of domestic violence victims are under-reported. Many victims give vague excuses for their injuries. In some instances where the doctors at the emergency rooms suspect domestic violence, they report it to their board, but this does not mean that the victim reported it to the police.

The following will look into the symptoms of domestic violence and discuss child physical abuse symptoms.

³⁴ Weiss, Elaine (2003) Family And Friends' Guide to Domestic Violence: How to Listen, Talk, and Take Action. USA: Volcano Press. pp.131-132

³⁵ Ricci, Susan S.; Kyle, Terry (2009) Maternity And Pediatric Nursing. USA: Walters Kluwer Health. p.246



5.1.1 Domestic Violence Reports

The most common areas on the body are the head, neck, upper extremity, breast, back, and buttock injuries in domestic violence cases.³⁶ Fewer recognizable signs and symptoms varies from loss of appetite, eating binges and self-induced vomiting, vaginal discharge, diarrhoea, or constipation, fainting, difficulty passing urine, hyperventilation, and headaches.

Other indicators that have been reported include injuries in numerous stages of healing, frequent doctor's visits, overdue treatment for injuries, hesitancy to name an injury, suspicious explanations for the injury.³⁷

5.1.2 Sexual Abuse Reports

Sexual abuse victims that were treated in the emergency rooms has shown problems such as pelvic inflammatory disease, sexually transmitted diseases (STD), HIV/AIDS, vaginal or anal tearing, urinary tract infections, dysmenorrhea, unexplained vaginal bleeding, and pelvic pain.

Medical indicators of child sexual abuse are a significant progress. Physicians are able to describe the effects of a certain sexual activity that took place. Some findings are obtained by a colposcope to

³⁶ Smith, Roger P. (2008) Netter's Obstetrics and Gynecology, 2nd Edition. USA: Saunders Elsevier Inc. p.24

³⁷ Mahan, Terry; Trybulski, JoAnn; Bailey, Patricia P.; Sanberg-Cook, Joanne (2012) Primary Care: A Collaborative Practice. USA: Saunders Elsevier Inc. p.138



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

magnify the physical damage. The progress has its controversies especially when it is used in court. The opinion of one physician, who has done the report, can be argued against the victim by an expert witness.

Paediatricians are usually called in to examine a sexually abused child. This thesis investigated this matter and found that paediatricians in private hospitals obtain permission to sedate the child and perform their medical investigation, whereas state hospitals painted another picture. The child must be naked and are not allowed to be clothed. A blanket is not preferred as the doctors say "it could tamper the evidence." The poor child has already been violated and now he/she must lie naked in front of a stranger.

Physicians has a difference of opinion and is primarily due to the fact that data collection has preceded careful documentation of the characteristics of the child's genitalia and anal anatomy of sexually abused children compared to normal children.³⁸

Case Study: Malcolm and Madelyn

Malcolm was five and Madelyn four years old. Teachers at the Nursery School phoned a therapist with shocking observations. Madelyn undress herself on the playground, and the boys reported that she wanted them to "lick my tinkle." Malcolm tried to get the girls to "suck my willy."

³⁸ Faller, Kathleen C (1993) Child Sexual Abuse: Intervention and Treatment Issues. USA: Diane Publishing.p.21



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

These children were in this nursery school for only three weeks, and the principle had to ask the mother to get professional help for the children, because the sexual behaviour was affecting the other children. Parents phoned in with alarming accusations and the teachers had their hands full with the parents. Children in Malcolm and Madelyn's classes were affected with the behaviour within a week.

The principle felt obligated to get treatment for the children as soon as Malcolm and Madelyn left her school. In an interview with the principle who confirmed that the parents was in the process of getting divorced. She shared information regarding Malcolm and Madelyn that could not end up in the media.

Malcolm and Madelyn were sexually abused by their father. Apparently he worked from home and their mother had a half-day job. The father took them out of school early and pretended to make them "movie stars."

Malcolm and Madelyn had oral sex with each other while their father videotaped it. The mother got hold of a cupboard full of tapes; she took some as evidence for the police report. Some investigating officers could not watch how a little girl can stimulate her own father while he is sodomizing his own son.

Malcolm and Madelyn were removed from their father's house as soon as this evidence was exposed. They underwent home schooling and therapy.



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

Two years later, Malcolm and Madelyn remarkably do not play their "games" anymore. Anything that could trigger their sexual behaviour is removed from their mother's house.

The therapists say that they are 75% over their sexual addictions, and that it might take another two years for them to be completely healed.

These two children were robbed of a normal playful child life. They adjusted well after the sick behaviour was brought upon them. However, the therapists say that they are afraid of later life; the question is, what will happen if something triggers these children's memories when they are young adults.

Their mother does not want to take the chance to send them to a public school yet. The father however, is under house arrest; his case is still being investigated.

5.1.3 Head Trauma Reports

In the cases where victims experience a blow to the head, this includes the nature of the force of the impact, the following can occur from a medical point of view:³⁹

³⁹ Head Trauma Injuries: <http://www.mayoclinic.com/health/traumatic-brain-injury/DS00552/DSECTION=causes>



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

- *Damage to brain cells may be limited to the area directly below the point of impact on the skull.*
- *A severe blow or jolt can cause multiple points of damage because the brain may move back and forth in the skull.*
- *A severe rotational or spinning jolt can cause the tearing of cellular structures.*
- *A blast, as from an explosive device, can cause widespread damage.*
- *An object penetrating the skull can cause severe, irreparable damage to brain cells, blood vessels and protective tissues around the brain.*
- *Bleeding in or around the brain, swelling, and blood clots can disrupt the oxygen supply to the brain and cause wider damage.*

10% of traumatic brain injuries are caused by violence, for example domestic violence or child abuse. The violent shaking of an infant, also known as Shaken Baby Syndrome, causes to damage the brain cells.⁴⁰

⁴⁰ Stats: <http://www.mayoclinic.com/health/traumatic-brain-injury/DS00552/DSECTION=causes>



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

5.1.3.1 Shaken Baby Syndrome⁴¹

The new term for Shaken baby syndrome is Abusive Head Trauma (AHT). This is the most serious complication of child physical abuse and is responsible for approximately 80% of child fatalities in the United States alone.

The term AHT reflects on the various mechanisms or the combinations of mechanisms which can cause inflicted head injury. Resultant of this injury is cerebral palsy, mental retardation, seizures, and visual loss. In most cases reported, the child's caregiver got frustrated with the child's crying and due to the feeling of helplessness, the caregiver's frustration turned into anger.

Children have shown other symptoms if the medical caregiver overlooked the possibility of AHT. Symptoms include:

- *Altered states of consciousness*
- *Irritability*
- *Choking*
- *Episodes*
- *Difficulty breathing or apnea*
- *Vomiting*
- *Seizures*
- *Poor appetite*

⁴¹ Elzouki, Abdelaziz Y; Harfi, Harb A; Nazer, Hisham M; Stapleton, Bruder F; Oh, William; Whitely, Richard J (2012) Textbook of Clinical Pediatrics. Berlin: Springer-Verlag. pp.671-672



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

- *Change in sleep patterns*
- *Increasing head size after several instances of AHT*

CT scans can illustrate acute haemorrhage and skull fractures, although smaller haemorrhages and cerebral lesions can be missed.⁴²

5.1.3.2 The Developing Brain and Abuse

Exposure to forms of abuse, disaster, or other traumatic events can have long-lasting effects on the developing brain. An enormous body of research now exists that provides evidence for the long-term damage of physical, sexual, and emotional abuse on babies and children. It is known that children who experience the stress of abuse **will focus their brains' resources on survival** and responding to threats in their environment.

This *chronic stimulation of the **brain's fear response** means that the regions of the brain involved in this response are frequently activated.* Other regions of the brain, such as those involved in complex thought and abstract cognition, are less frequently activated, and the child **becomes less competent** at processing this type of information.⁴³

⁴² Elzouki, Abdelaziz Y; Harfi, Harb A; Nazer, Hisham M; Stapleton, Bruder F; Oh, William; Whitely, Richard J (2012) Textbook of Clinical Pediatrics. Berlin: Springer-Verlag. p.671

⁴³ Jones, Adele D (2013) Understanding Child Sexual Abuse: Perspectives From The Carribean. USA: Palgrave McMillan. Chapter 5.



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

Neurochemical balance is a way for early maltreatment experiences by altering the brain that may alter a child's ability to interact with others in a positive sense. Research on children who experienced early emotional abuse or severe deprivation indicates that such maltreatment may permanently adjust the brain's ability to use serotonin, which helps produce feelings of well-being and emotional stability.⁴⁴

Altered brain development in children who have been maltreated may be the result of their brains adjusting to their abusive environment. If a child lives in a threatening, chaotic world, the child's brain may be alerted to a hyper level for the danger to come, due to the fact that survival may depend on it. If this environment remains, the developing brain will be focused on growing and strengthening its strategies to survive; the positive strategies may not develop to its fullest potential.

5.2 Child Sexual Abuse and Its Consequences

Children who have experienced sexual abuse can suffer from psychological and behavioural problems in the short and long term. The typical problems are depression, anxiety, guilt, fear, sexual dysfunction, withdrawal, and acting out.

⁴⁴ Allocca, John A (2007) Balancing Serotonin and Norepinephrine Levels. USA: Allocca Biotechnology, LLC.p.25



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

Children tend to develop a fear and/or an anxiety towards the opposite sex or any sexual related issue. This causes the child to socially display inappropriate sexual behaviour.⁴⁵ Children that have an unnatural knowledge of sex or have an unusual sexual interest can indicate that sexual abuse occurred.⁴⁶

Within two years of the termination of the sexual abuse the effects seize, unfortunately in the long-term the adult suffers from depression. In addition, it has been reported that high levels of anxiety can cause self-destructive behaviours⁴⁷ for example, alcoholism or drug abuse.⁴⁸

Research has proved that child victims are more likely to be the victims of rape⁴⁹ or be in a physical abusive relationship as an adult.⁵⁰ The cycle of abuse will also play a role here. The nature and nurture of the child will possibly be replicated in his adult life if proper counselling or therapy were not done.

5.2.1 Child Sexual Abuse and Health Risks

Children that were sexual abuse victims have the medically risk of sexually transmitted diseases or HIV/Aids for example. The greater concern is their Mental Health Risk. Studies have shown that 50-60%

⁴⁵ DiCataldo, Frank C (2009) *The Perversion of Youth: Controversies in the Assessment and Treatment of Juvenile Sex Offenders*. USA: New York University Press.p.136

⁴⁶ Deb, Sibnath; Mukherjee, Aparna (2009) *Impact of Sexual Abuse on mental Health of Children*. India: Ashok Kumar Mittal. p.34

⁴⁷ Sidoli, Mara; Bovensiepen, Gustav (1995) *Incest Fantasies and Self Destructive Acts: Jungian and Non-Jungian Psychotherapy in Adolescence*. USA: Transaction Publishers.p.21

⁴⁸ Deb, Sibnath; Mukherjee, Aparna (2009) *Impact of Sexual Abuse on mental Health of Children*. India: Ashok Kumar Mittal. p.35

⁴⁹ Horvath, Miranda AH; Woodhams, Jessica (2013) *Handbook of the Study of Multiple Perpetrator Rape: A Multidisciplinary Response to an International Problem*. USA: Routledge.p.202

⁵⁰ Deb, Sibnath; Mukherjee, Aparna (2009) *Impact of Sexual Abuse on mental Health of Children*. India: Ashok Kumar Mittal. p.35



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

of preschool children showed anxiety and behavioural problems; they have shown symptoms of Posttraumatic stress disorder and it was noted that sleep disturbance, hyper vigilance, and traumatic play as obvious behaviours. Children that were chronically abused in a sexual way may have symptoms in later life that is associated with borderline personality or multiple personality disorders.⁵¹

5.2.2 Borderline Personality

Borderline personality disorder (BPD) is a mental health condition that is characterized by instability in mood, thought and self-image; self-destructive behaviour; anger; and impulsiveness.⁵² This instability often disrupts relationships at work and in one's personal life as well as an individual's sense of self, and can lead to intense fear of abandonment and suicidal behaviour.⁵³

Unlike a person with depression or bipolar disorder, who typically endures the same mood for weeks, a person with BPD may experience powerful spells of emotion such as depression, anger or anxiety that last anywhere from a few hours to a few days. These may be linked with episodes of impulsive aggression, self-injury, drug and alcohol abuse, eating or spending binges or provocative behaviour.⁵⁴

⁵¹ Lyman, Robert D; Hembree-Kigin, Toni L (1994) *Mental Health Interventions with Preschool Children*. USA: Plenum Press.p.210

⁵² Alexander, Linda L; LaRosa, Judith; Bader, Helaine; Garfield, Susan (2010) *New Dimensions on Women's Health*, 5th Edition. USA: Jones & Bartlett's Books.p.350

⁵³ Coughlin, Sean (2009) *GP ST: Stage 2 2009 Edition: Practice Questions*. UK: Pastest, Ltd.p.230

⁵⁴ Reeve, Gretchen (2010) *Encyclopedia of Emotion*, Volume 1. USA: ABC-CLIO.p.309



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

People with BPD often have exceedingly unstable patterns of social relationships. They may be prone to abrupt changes in their view of others who might be seen as friends one moment and as an enemy a minute later. BPD people feel they have been ill-treated, they may spend an enormous amount of energy combating that mistreatment, often to the exclusion of all other events in their life.⁵⁵

Some people with BPD respond to the despair and unrealistic fear of being abandoned. Feeling unfairly misunderstood or mistreated, bored and empty, they may perform self-mutilation (such as cutting or burning oneself) or suicidal behaviours. Such actions are most likely to occur when people with BPD feel isolated, and may result in frantic efforts to avoid being alone.

Frequently, BPD occurs with other psychiatric conditions such as bipolar disorder, depression, anxiety disorders, eating disorders, and problems with addictions such as substance abuse, gambling or sexual behaviour. It can affect anyone, but is more commonly diagnosed in young adults, adolescents and women.⁵⁶

5.2.2.1 Causes of Borderline Personality Disorder (BPD)

The specific cause of BPD is unknown; experts are of the opinion that psychological and biological factors might be involved. BPD was formerly thought to “border on”

⁵⁵ Kreger, Randi (2008) Family Guide to Borderline Personality Disorder: New Tools and Techniques to Stop Walking on Eggshells. USA: Hazelden.pp.49-50

⁵⁶ Kreger, Randi (2008) Family Guide to Borderline Personality Disorder: New Tools and Techniques to Stop Walking on Eggshells. USA: Hazelden.p.124



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

Schizophrenia, but BPD appears to be related to serious depressive illness. In some cases, neurological disorders may be present.⁵⁷

Research has indicated that an impaired brain mechanism intended to regulate emotion may make a person more susceptible to the impulsivity, mood instability, aggression, anger and negative emotion seen in BPD, these emotions can contribute to troubled relationships.⁵⁸ Research is being conducted to clarify these theories as well as to explore a possible genetic connection.

5.2.2.2 Symptoms of BPD

Individuals with BPD have several of the following symptoms:⁵⁹

- Marked mood swings with periods of intense depression, irritability, and/or anxiety lasting a few hours to a few days;
- Demand constant attention and make unreasonable demands;
- Display provocative behaviour;
- Inappropriate, intense or uncontrolled anger;

⁵⁷ Mondimore, Francis; Kelly, Patrick (2011) Borderline Personality Disorder: New Reasons for Hope.pp.15-19

⁵⁸ Mahari, Ace-Jensen (2006) The Legacy of Abandonment in Borderline Personality Disorder: The Core Wound of Abandonment in BPD Examined and Explained. eBook: Phoenix Rising Publishers.p.15

⁵⁹ Porr, Valerie (2010) Overcoming Borderline Personality Disorder: A Family Guide For Healing and Change. USA:Oxford University Press.pp.9-10



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

- Impulsiveness in spending, sex, substance use, shoplifting, reckless driving, or binge eating;
- Recurring suicidal threats or self-injurious behaviour such as cutting, burning or scratching themselves;
- Unstable, intense personal relationships with extreme, black and white views of people and experiences, sometimes alternating between “all good” idealization and “all bad” devaluation;
- Marked, persistent uncertainty about self-image, long-term goals, friendships, and values;
- Chronic boredom or feelings of emptiness due to lacking a sense of self; and,
- Frantic efforts to avoid abandonment, either real or imagined, often by acting out a crises or dramatizing a problem.

5.2.2.3 Treatment for BPD⁶⁰

A combination of medication and psychotherapy appears to provide the best results for treatment of BPD. Anti-depressants, anti-*convulsants*, and the new atypical anti-psychotics are commonly used medications for BPD. Decisions about medication use should be made cooperatively between the individual and their psychiatrist.

⁶⁰ Porr, Valerie (2010) *Overcoming Borderline Personality Disorder: A Family Guide For Healing and Change*. USA:Oxford University Press.p.126



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

Factors such as an individual's willingness to take the medication as prescribed, and the possible benefits, risks and side effects of the medication should be considered in this decision.⁶¹

Although medications can be helpful in controlling disruptive impulses, depression and reducing anxiety, and may help an individual deal with the harmful patterns that disrupt everyday life, they are rarely effective without some form of psychotherapy.

Since personality disorders involve the way in which one copes with the world and handles interpersonal relationships, they often require long-term treatment.⁶²

Long-term outpatient psychotherapy and group therapy (if the individual is carefully matched to the group) can be helpful. Short-term hospitalization may be necessary during times of extreme stress, impulsive behaviour, or substance abuse.⁶³

⁶¹ Mondimore, Francis; Kelly, Patrick (2011) Borderline Personality Disorder: New Reasons for Hope. Chapter 9

⁶² Mahari, Ace-Jensen (2006) The Legacy of Abandonment in Borderline Personality Disorder: The Core Wound of Abandonment in BPD Examined and Explained. eBook: Phoenix Rising Publishers.p.23

⁶³ Mondimore, Francis; Kelly, Patrick (2011) Borderline Personality Disorder: New Reasons for Hope. Chapter 9



5.2.3 Sexually Transmitted Diseases and Sexually Abused Children

Sexually Transmitted Diseases (STD's) can infect children that experienced sexual abuse in any form. STD's come in various forms and can be conveyed as bacterial, viral, parasitic and protozoal.⁶⁴

- Bacterial infections include Chlamydia and Gonorrhea. Viral infections include HPV and HIV.
- Parasites include Pubic Lice and Scabies. Protozoal infections include Trichomoniasis.
- Some fungal infections such as Candidiasis (yeast infection) can also be considered STD's in some cases.

Other infections can also be transmitted from one person to another during sexual activity. However, if this is not the main cause of their spread, they are not categorized as STD's. This list includes influenza, common colds, pneumonia and meningitis.

Unprotected intercourse, even in circumstances where there is only minimal penetration, can allow the transmission of gonorrhoea, genital warts, genital herpes, chlamydia, HIV and syphilis. Even if the male does not ejaculate there is still risk as the infection can be carried in all male fluids and in the female vaginal fluids. Anal intercourse bears a greater risk of infection of the same diseases due to the thin wall of the anus being easy to damage and allowing the infection to pass into the rest of body.

⁶⁴ What is STD?: <http://whatisstd.net/>



Chlamydia, herpes (*type 1 and type 2, which can cause cold sores around the mouth and on the genitals or anus*), **gonorrhoea, genital warts, hepatitis A, hepatitis B and hepatitis C, HIV, syphilis** can be transmitted through oral sex, especially if there is damage to the skin or tissue. By practising oral sex bears a greater risk than receiving it, due to the fact that the receiver of oral sex do not come in to contact with any bodily fluids, with the exception of saliva, which is a low risk factor in most cases.

Children that are only molested are also carrying a risk of being infected with STD's. Fingers carry little risk of passing on infections. The exception is when there are cuts or other blemishes on the fingers. This can heighten the risk of transmission of blood-borne infections such as HIV and Hepatitis B and C.

Urine and faeces carry little risk of infection unless coming in contact with mouth, eyes or broken skin. Faeces carry the most risk as it contains organisms that can cause illness or infection.⁶⁵

5.2.4 Child Sexual Abuse And The Crime Investigator

A detective in the South African police department spoke of his experiences of child sexual abuse cases that ended up as homicide he had to solve.

⁶⁵ Duggan, Christopher; Watkins, John B; Walker, Allan W (2008) Nutrition in Pediatrics 4: Science Clinical Application. India: Print-O-Pact, Inc.p.183



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

"The girl was probably two years old, she lied on her back, and her face was full of mud. She only had a white dress on, but her female parts were exposed and her little legs spread apart. There was blood all over her tiny body. It was the first time in 20 years that I got sick."

The detective told the story of a two year old black girl from the rural areas. She was raped for her virginity. The cultural belief was that you can be cured from HIV/Aids by having sexual intercourse with a virgin. The perpetrator was not caught, but the community identified him and dealt with him in a traditional manner. They took him "over the hill" and only the direct family members of the little girl may attend his conviction. He admitted that he believed in the virgin-cure for HIV/Aids.

The father of the girl was "the judge" and the mother decided the sentencing. Her decision was that the young 19 year old man must be tied to a pole and his genitals be chopped off by the father of the girl and the young man must bleed to death. The brothers of the young girl can literally rub salt in his wound until his hour of death.

The detective was only informed after the young man's death that he has been found. There was no proof of who sentenced this young man to his death and the case was closed as a traditional affair.



5.3 Verbal Abuse as a Mental Health Risk

Verbal or Emotional Abuse occurs when the primary caregiver of the child, which is usually the mother, criticize, belittle or ignore a child's achievements. Children strive on support of their caregiver and want to impress the caregiver by "achieving" certain accomplishments. Small children are extremely eager "to show" his achievements, if the child gets rewarded with a "well done" response, he develops into a secure adult.

Unfortunately there are mothers who give their child a bombastic answer. This cause the child to not be interested in showing the mother of his accomplishments and in effect create a life for himself in his own little world.

A child is never at fault, his behaviour is at fault. If the child showed inappropriate behaviour, the negative mother will tell him "are you stupid, why did you do that?." Whereas a mother who show the child that what he had done was wrong, and rather "do it like that, then, no one can be angry with you."

In two case studies of two five year old boys that were evaluated, it was found that Mother Negative was unable to praise her child; she was more likely to be irritated by the child. Mother Positive supported her child and showed that she admired him. An obvious comparison to make is Mother Negative does not show love to her child, whereas Mother Positive were showered with hugs and kisses from her child.

Six teenagers of 15 years of age stated that they either have a Mother Positive or a Mother Negative. Two had Mother Positives and the mothers were praised



by the other teenagers for respecting their daughters and “are the best friend to talk to.” When this study referred to the Mother Negatives, all four teenagers showed shame for their mothers. There is no respect for mother as there should be. The mother’s attitudes were discussed in depth. Mother Negatives was fighting most of the time, rather than asking to assist in chores.

These two studies concluded that the treatment a mother gives her child is the treatment that she will receive when this child is an adult. It is again a cycle of “treatment” from the parent to the child.

5.3.1 Types of Verbal Abuse

The following is some types of Verbal Abuse that are identified in therapy. Experts reckon that if a person can tick seven or more on this list, they are very likely to be in a verbal abusive relationship.

Emotional Abuse	Hateful Things	Blaming
Manipulative Yelling	Subtle Innuendos	Shaming
Name Calling	Bullying	Crazy Gestures
Conned	Screaming	Guilt Tripping
Putdowns	Accusing	Patronizing
Withholding	Criticizing	Countering
Sarcasm	Insinuations	Shouting
Lying	Trivializing	Judging
Taunt	Slur	Sabotaging
Fake Forgetting	Threatening	Walking On Eggshells

Terms that are being classified under Verbal Abuse is valuable for therapists to extract information from the abused to investigate further



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

into the possibility of mental illnesses. The following terms are found in every abusive form; it is important for this thesis to bring forth terms that might be recognized in supernaturalism that will be discussed in Chapter VI.

Emotional abuse uses words to hurt, but sometimes requires meaning derived from the context in which the words were used or pairing with a behavior. Neither the words, nor the context or the behavior alone may be abusive, but the words together with the context or behavior are abusive.

Beverly Engels defines emotional abuse "as any nonphysical behavior that is designed to control, intimidate, subjugate, demean, punish, or isolate another person through the use of degradation, humiliation, or fear." The purpose or attitude behind emotional abuse can be conscious, subconscious or unconscious.

An Emotionally Abusive Relationship is a relationship where verbal abuse is frequent and/or there is a pattern of emotionally abusive behaviors. An abuser has a style of communication that is abusive. Emotionally abusive people use language as weapons. When you are being abused emotionally, you are being treated as if you are the enemy.

<p><i>Emotional and Psychological abuse are synonymous terms.</i></p>
--

Abusive Expectations is placing unreasonable demands on another person or never being satisfied with the other person or how much the



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

other person has done, regardless of the amount of care and effort put into a task. Instead the abuser complains that something more could be done, offers criticism about how it could have done better, or even berates the other person for not satisfying his or her needs. Constant criticism is the pattern in this type of emotional abuse.

Accusing: to charge with an offense, wrongdoing, error, fault, or mistake. Originally it was only used as a legal term, but being in a verbally abusive relationship can feel a lot like being on trial.

Bigoted remark: a remark that is strongly partial to one's own group, religion, race, or politics and/or is intolerant of those who are different

Blaming:⁶⁶ fault finding; holding responsible; from Late Latin blasphemare to blaspheme, from Greek blasphemēin. Accusing and Blaming are verbally abusive when without basis or when excessive.

Accusing and Blaming tend to be “automatic” and habitual in verbally abusive relationships.

Blocking:⁶⁷ it is an attempt to derail or end a valid conversation prematurely or to avoid a relevant issue. Often blocking is done by unfairly insinuating that the person that s/he is trying to block is being unreasonable or is nagging. An example would be saying, “Get off my back,” in response to a reasonable discussion. A common form of

⁶⁶ Blaming: <http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/blaming>

⁶⁷ Blocking: <http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/blocking>



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

blocking is to go on the offense and become accusatory of the other person.

Bullying⁶⁸ has a variety of definitions: to be habitually cruel or physically aggressive to another person, especially to someone who is physically weaker, younger, shorter, or someone who has less social status; to intimidate; or when one child is physically or verbally abusive to another child.

Character assassination is a deliberate attempt or strategy employed to damage or discredits the reputation, status, or achievements of another person; to defame.

Con: win someone's confidence or trust in order to deceive or cheat them.

Condescension:⁶⁹ to deal with people in a patronizingly superior manner; "talk down to." The word patron comes from the latin word for father, pater. The inference is as one would speak to a child, or to a person of less rank or understanding. It does not say much for the history of parenting. It is abusive to speak in a condescending manner to a child.

Constant Chaos and Crisis is the emotional climate of a relationship with someone with Borderline Personality Disorder. A person with BPD is easily triggered into an emotional outburst or frequently starts

⁶⁸ Bullying: <http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/bullying>

⁶⁹ The American Heritage Dictionary



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

arguments or fights with others. A big deal is often made of small problems. Periods of calm are short and far between.

Countering: to routinely oppose with words or disagree without fully listening; automatically disagreeing

Crazymaking is slang for emotionally abusive behaviour. It is also used to sum up the stress, confusion, and frustration one feels in being in a relationship with someone who is emotionally abusive, usually someone with a personality disorder.

Criticizing: disparaging remarks, sharp disapproval, "dissing," words that attack the person rather than address problematic behaviour. To criticize in this sense of the word is not giving feedback as there is no real attempt to provide an accurate assessment or information. Criticizing comments often begin with you or s/he.

Cyber Bullying is using technology to abuse another person. It can take many forms: hate messages, any of the types of verbal abuse, spamming, tormenting on games, Identity theft, locking someone out of their account, stealing someone's password, death threats; posing as another person online and sending rude, embarrassing, harassing, or otherwise abusive messages to others; computer hacking and sending computer viruses, Trojan horses, and spyware; wiping out hard drive; post provocative photographs or other information on dangerous sites like pedophile sites; tricking into revealing a secret and revealing the secret; and bashing on website with negative superlatives.



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

Denial is when someone claims that s/he did not say or do something that s/he said or did.

Discounting is the invalidation of another person's thoughts, feelings, opinions, or perceptions. Discounting is often an automatic response without listening first rather than reasoned response after careful listening. Discounting comments often begin with you or s/he.

Diverting is changing the subject by making an irrelevant, distracting, or critical comment.

Domination is a pattern of behaviour used to control another person. Methods of control include ordering, threats, negative consequences, monitoring, isolating, monopolizing and restricting. Persistently making it unpleasant for the victim to be assertive is a way of using negative consequences to dominate. For example, an abuser may agree to go to a restaurant only to incessantly complain. The abuser wears down the resistance of the victim over time. Abusive men also make use of male privilege and the myth of male superiority to impose their will over women who have been en-culturated in the myth.

Domination can take many forms. Phone calls, spending, and chores are examples of activities that might be monitored and restricted. An abuser may attempt to isolate the victim by undermining relationships with friends through subtle criticism of the victim, or disagreeableness around friends and family, or character assassination of the victim



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

behind her back, or character assassination of friends and family of the victim to the victim. The abuser may monopolize conversations, decision making, or economic resources. The abuser may criticize every penny the victim spends while lavishly spending on himself. The abuser may guilt trip by employing moral arguments or lofty principles to get his way.

Double Binds: A simple double bind is when the respondent is offered the illusion of a choice of two possibilities, when fulfilling one request/option would make fulfilling the other impossible. An example is when your boss requests that you complete two projects in the time it takes to do one of them. However double binds are usually more complex. They often involve an injunction with a threat (you will pay/suffer if you do or don't do what I say). Often the threat is implied rather than stated. The recipient of the double bind message finds it difficult to respond due to the sheer complexity of the bind(s), lack of experience (especially of children), and/or because there is a social rule or taboo or inner vulnerability that the person issuing the double bind is manipulating.

Emotional Blackmail is a complex and sometimes highly subtle form of emotional abuse in which the abuser uses F.O.G. – Fear, Obligation, and Guilt tripping – consciously or unconsciously to coerce you to do what s/he wants. Your innermost fears and an unreasonable sense of obligation are manipulated to coerce your compliance. Threats, punishment, withholding, self-harm, self-pitying, hysterics, passive aggressiveness, or the holding out of an eternal carrot stick that never arrives are different forms that emotional blackmail may take. If you



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

are conscientious and somehow you are always labeled the bad guy, you are probably in a relationship with an Emotional Blackmailer. You may be “pathologized” as sick, crazy, or some other label. An Emotional Blackmailer may triangulate others against you and enlist their support or use negative comparisons with other to guilt trip.⁷⁰

Ethnic Slur: a disrespectful, insulting, belittling, or slighting remark or innuendo directed at another person’s ethnic or national identity

Fake Forgetting has two forms. One is when someone claims s/he forgot when the agreed behaviour was not done because it was inconvenient, unpleasant, etc. (a pattern has to be established before you will know someone is faking). The other form of fake forgetting is when the other person breaks an important promise or forgets an important date and claims that s/he has forgotten even though there was significant discussion. The Abused will probably not get a sincere apology. Fake Forgetting is different from the type of forgetting someone does when s/he has ADD or dementia in that Fake Forgetting is purposeful.

Gaslighting is a pattern of deceptive manipulation aimed at diminishing another person’s perception of reality to serve the abuser’s agenda. Gaslighting is when someone tries to convince you to do what your intuition tells you not to do and to believe untruths for some hidden agenda of the abuser. The agenda can serve a variety of purposes from covering up an affair or addictive behaviour to gaining

⁷⁰ Forward, Susan (1997) Emotional Blackmail. USA: Harper Collings.p.x



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

access to the victim's job or money to covering up their own insecurities.

The abuser may employ character assassination as part of the strategy to achieve their ends. Relentlessness, firmness of insistence, charm or anger, and subtlety are used to incite self-doubt of the victim's ideas, memories, perception, feelings, and opinions. In time the victim can become depressed or in extreme cases, doubt his/her own sanity.

Gaslighting is a form of emotional abuse that employs a wide variety of verbal abuse types: forgetting, denial, lying, criticism, blocking and diverting. The abuser may make a hurtful remark and then accuse the victim of being too sensitive, unable to take a joke, misperceiving the meaning of the remark, or flat out deny the comment was ever made. Another tactic is to hyper focus or exaggerates or invent shortcomings of the victim, while denying their own shortcomings. The abuser may rage at the victim for not believing the lies and shame the victim for being mistrustful. In short, Gaslighting involves denying the reality of the victim to serve a hidden agenda of the abuser.

Guilt tripping is an attempt to make someone feel guilty for the purpose of getting one's way; restricting another person's behaviour for selfish reasons; or for instilling doubt and confusion in another person to keep him/her submissive.

Healing involves recognizing that it has nothing to do with the principle of the issue and everything to do with the security, pleasure, prestige or power the abuser feels in dominating the victim or getting his way.



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

The moral arguments or lofty principles employed in guilt tripping can sound very convincing and valid. *You will need to notice whether the rationale is used to get his/her way; are impractical or inconvenient for you; or whether the abuser is ever satisfied. A big clue is when you go along with his desire and he still criticizes you or you do it right a dozen times, but are criticized, often harshly, for the one time you don't* (even when the real life consequences for not doing the task are minor).

Abusers are masters at manipulating a tender conscience. However, the conscientious person will have great difficulty getting an abuser to admit to any wrong doing.

<p><i>Harassment is often synonymous with Bullying.</i></p>
--

Hidden Dagger: only the two of you may know that an apparently harmless or amusing statement had additional hurtful meaning from a different context. It is a hidden dagger because the comment, which seems innocuous in its current form, refers to something painful that happened to you or between the two of you at an earlier time. The comment is made when other people are around and who are ignorant of the earlier situation.

Innuendoes and Insinuations: An innuendo is an indirect or subtle comment, usually having derogatory implication. Innuendoes and insinuations are synonyms. Sometimes insinuations are meant to confuse in order to disguise true intent (often harmful or manipulative), and as such are a wily form of diverting. Ambivalent compliments are a type of this kind of insinuation.



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

Judging: condemning, denouncing, or appraising a person's character in a rejecting manner. Judging in this sense is to be unfair. To judge in this sense is the opposite of discerning or the normal definition of judge: to form an opinion about through careful weighing of evidence and testing of premises. Judging comments often begin with *you or s/he*.

Lying and other patterns and other patterns of deception are a cornerstone of many emotionally abusive relationships. Lying effectively blocks the goals of assertive communication: informing, cooperating, equitable problem solving, understanding and intimacy. It also creates an uneven playing field if the other person believes the lies and remains open, and thus vulnerable to exploitation. White lies are not included, unless the lies become hurtful.

Manipulative: to manoeuvre a social interaction to one's advantage over another, to harm another person, or to get one's way

Malevolent Abuse is a deliberate pattern of emotional abuse aimed at undermining or destroying another person's success, relationships, or health.

Name calling or Labeling: Name calling is what most people think of as verbal abuse and includes swearing at someone. It is using a word in a way that is derogatory. Labeling is the use of psychological jargon to negatively describe the other person rather than identifying the problematic behavior.



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

Ordering is telling another person what to do as opposed to asking them politely. Expecting another person to always do what you want them to do when you want them to do it is also ordering.

Prejudice: a negative judgment or opinion formed before knowing the facts; detrimental or injurious; an irrational bias against a group of people different from your own. Prejudiced comments reflect the negative preformed judgment or irrational bias.

Racial epithet: abusive word or label in some way referring to a person's race.

Racial slur: a disrespectful, insulting, belittling, or slighting remark or innuendo directed at another person's racial identity.

Racism: a belief that talents, character, or morality is attributable to racial characteristics; a pattern of discrimination and abuse against another race; a belief that one race is superior over another race. Racism is a set of attitudes and beliefs that result in a pattern of abuses, including emotional abuse against members of another race.

Sarcasm is the use of an ironic comment or joke to hurt someone.

Scold: berate, reprimand, condemn severely and at length.

Sexism is discrimination based on the sex of a person; the belief that one sex is superior to another sex; attitudes, conditions, and behaviour



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

that reinforce stereotypes of male and female talents, characteristics, and roles; abusive behaviour based on gender. Sexism is a set of attitudes and beliefs that result in a pattern of abuses, including emotional abuse aimed at gender.

Sexual Harassment is unwanted sexual comments, affection, or gestures.

Taunt is the use of sarcasm to provoke a negative response.

Threatening is the expression of intent to harm, punish, inflict pain or loss.

Tone of Voice: loud, sarcastic, condescending, hissing, phony inflection, yelling, screaming, and the disappointed sigh

Trivializing is referring to another person's accomplishment, opinion, experience, or feeling in a way that diminishes its significance.

Types of Emotional Abuse of Children: Rejecting, Ignoring, Terrorizing, Isolating, Corrupting, and Exploiting⁷¹

Undermining is a comment aimed at weakening, discouraging, or halting another person's interest, enthusiasm or good spirits.

Unpredictable Responses: In this abusive pattern, there are severe mood swings, inconsistent responses to the same situation, sudden

⁷¹ Types of Emotional Abuse of Children: <http://www.teach-through-love.com/types-of-emotional-abuse.html>



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

emotional outbursts that have no reasonable explanation, stark inconsistency in preferences, saying one thing one day and reversing themselves the next. This pattern of behavior is common in people with bipolar disorder, addicts (including alcoholics), and BPD. It is highly stressful to live with or work for with someone with these issues and is described as feeling like Walking on Eggshells.

***Verbal abuse is sometimes disguised as a joke,
but it hurts the receiver instead of being funny.***

Withholding is the refusal to share of oneself in an intimate relationship in an appropriate way. Withholding includes the silent treatment, failure to disclose intimations that might deepen the relationship, withholding relevant information, and refusing or withholding normal affections as a way to punish, demean or otherwise hurt the other person.

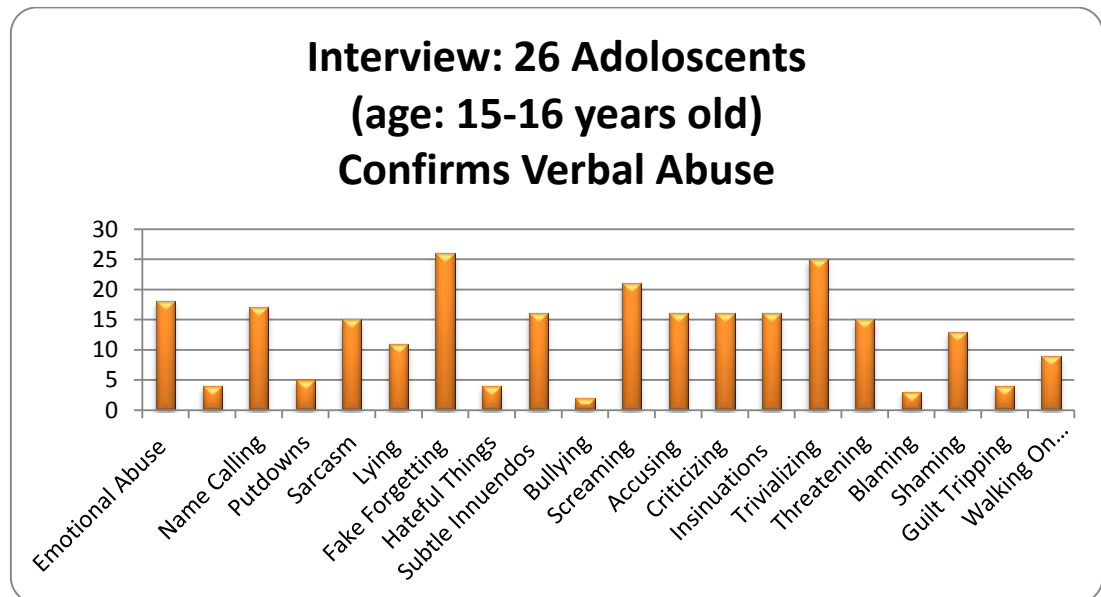
This is different from refraining from sex until one has resolved one's anger, having the right to private thoughts and feelings, and having the right to say no to sex and other forms of affection. There is a pattern of withholding used as a way to hurt the other person.

In an interview held with 26 adolescents a certain level of verbal abuse forms indicated that they are well aware of their parents pretend to forget certain social activities or arrangements made.



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

It was also clear that the parents question their adolescents in detail of their social life, which is not appreciated. This usually turns into a shouting match and the parents criticize, accuse or threaten the teen.



The average form of verbal abuse from this interview was Name Calling, Sarcasm, Subtle Innuendos, Accusations, Criticism, Insinuations, Threats, and Shame.

These adolescents felt that they were under eagle's eyes and that their parents do not seem to trust them to make important decisions, for example, declining an offer to use drugs or alcohol. Some felt that they were cross-questioned instead of having a straight question from a parent, and if this happen, the parent does not accept the straight answer. This comes down to parents not trusting their adolescents with basic information.



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

This was a small group that participated in this survey with their parent's consent to reply on the questions as shown to parents at first.

From hereof, this thesis feels that there is a need to explore the possibility of verbal abuse that can become physical abuse in the next generation.

5.4 Physical Abuse As A Result of Verbal Abuse in the Next generation

The terms of verbal abuse was discussed in depth in the previous section of this chapter. The necessity to discuss the possibility of this verbal abuse might be a cause to physical abuse in the next generation came to mind.

Case Study: Iona

Iona left the family home and moved to another province. She worked and became the best in her field. However, Iona has little to no contact with her mother. She barely makes an effort to see her mother on special holidays, she always has the excuse of having other plans or she is drenched in her work.

Iona and her child showed up very unexpectedly at a family gathering. She surprised everyone with gifts. After lunch everyone helped to clean up, and not long before her mother starts to question her sudden appearance. It caused so much conflict that Iona and her child had to stay with her sister.



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

That night she opened up to her sister. She is having difficulty visiting their mother, due to the abuse she experienced as a child. Her sister comforted her and said she knows how their mother used to verbally abuse Iona. She criticized her schoolwork; she questioned her whereabouts between school and the house; she accused Iona of being a like a bitch on heat.

Iona left home due to the verbal abuse and became a very successful young woman. She knows she is a good mother, but she does not want to be like her mother towards her child. She confessed to her sister with repentance that she physically abused her child. Iona's sister referred her to a counsellor to help overcome her past abuse and not repeating history.

Many child abuse victims are understandably hesitant to revisit agonizing memories from their childhoods; it is critical for the healing process of making peace with the past. It is believed that victims who don not deal with their past are often destined to inflict similar abuse on their own children.

Child abuse is the beginning of a multigenerational trauma process; it is repetitive from the one generation to the next, unless it is addressed in a counselling or therapy session to stop it.

In other cases, an adult survivor of child abuse will not repeat the abuse on his children or other victims, but instead will turn the anger, rejection, and frustration inward and become a depressed person. It is also true that adult survivors of child abuse have a greater risk of committing child abuse than



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

adults who were not abused as children. Approximately 35-40% of adult survivors will repeat the abusive behaviour pattern among their children in later life.⁷²

Adult survivors may be blind to abuse because they have blocked their own memories of the trauma. Some experts call this "*betrayal trauma*," and explain that the cruelties a victim is most likely to forget may not be the most terrifying, but the ones that involve being betrayed by someone they love and trust.⁷³

⁷² Clark, Robin E; Clark, Judith F; Adamec, Christine A (2007) The Encyclopedia of Child Abuse, 3rd Edition. p.26

⁷³ Freyd, Jennifer J (1996) Betrayal Trauma: The Logic of Forgetting Childhood Abuse. USA: Harvard University Press. pp.4-5



6. CONCLUSION

This Chapter has concluded that according to the experts in the field of psychology, they cannot say what the cause of abuse is. They can only speculate that certain factors have certain outcomes. For example, they receive a case, from thereon they can investigate the nature and the nurture of the case; they are able to show that this case is a classic case of child sexual abuse, due to the fact that the person is showing or manifesting the symptoms, or consequences, of sexual abuse experienced as a child.

The consequences of any form of abuse are a global manual, but it still remains a cycle of abuse. The root cause of any abuse can be traced back into the family bloodline; the cycle of abuse can then be identified as the child is use to violence. Any environmental factor can be traced back to the abuser's irritability. No researches delivered this factor as a top priority that must be investigated. Any abuser is irritated with his victim in some sense. What this irritation triggers can hopefully be explained in a later chapter.

Violence in the household has an effect on the children. The children's behaviour will manifest it at school on a social level. Not only does the child have the pressure of schoolwork, but teachers and other children seeing them as a problem child that must be dealt with in another way. This behaviour at school triggers rejection in the child's heart.

Children can also be abusive towards their parents. Even if this is a topic that did not receive any research attention, this still remains abuse. Adolescents can be cruel and expect their parents to "pay" for their needs and commands. Parents cannot report this; they are in fear of other people's thoughts. The



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

changing roles of parent becoming obedient and the adolescent becoming the authority figure have its consequences. This cannot be explained in social science studies, but this thesis will attempt to identify this in a later chapter if possible.

Any victim of abuse harvests hatred in their heart for the abuser. The possibility of a victim that takes revenge on his abuser is not that rare. It can occur when therapy was absent after the traumatic experience. Therapists of all kinds bring the victim to forgiving the abuser.

This thesis concluded that forgiveness in that sense is a process. This process can bring closure to the trauma experienced. The experience can then be accepted by protecting oneself through the forgiveness process. A victim cannot remain captured in the thoughts of the trauma when forgiveness conquered the abuse experience.

One needs to forgive oneself as well. Many victims felt that they could have done something different to avoid the abuse, it is unfortunate, but no one is born with psychological skills. However, the mind can adjust itself by developing differently in response of the abuse. Physicians reported that a physical abuser will almost always harm the head and neck area at first. This can be very dangerous. Significant of this, is that if the abuser wants to harm the head, he wants to kill the soul of his victim.

Sexual abuse victims' soul was ripped out of them; their innocence was stolen and violated. Even if this trauma was not enough, they have to face their fear again and again to hopefully convict the sexual abuser in court. Many victims would rather suffer in silence and hope for that one day when "this will be over."



An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

The consequences of a child sexual abuse victim are inevitable. The child will manifest inappropriate behaviour amongst his/her peers. In any form of abuse verbal and emotional abuse plays a role. This child will believe that this sexual behaviour is normal, due to the fact that he/she believes the lie of the abuser. Verbal and emotional abuse breaks down the self-image of the victim.

Courts find it difficult to use it against the abuser as these abuses cannot be seen. Abusive husbands break their wives down to a pathetic state, consequently the children will have less respect for her. Mothers are respected for rearing strong sons and gentle daughters.

This Chapter concluded that victims of abuse must receive therapy to forgive their abuser, or the chances of having traumatic consequences can be just as much hurtful as the traumatic experience. That being said, victims of childhood abuse are more likely to abuse their own children than people who were not abuse as children.

oooOooo



PHILOSOPHAE DOCTOR

An Exposé On The Causes And Consequences Of Abuse

I cannot think of any need in childhood as strong as the need for a father's protection.

-Sigmund Freud-

CHAPTER

V



A graphic for Chapter Five. It features the words "CHAPTER" and "FIVE" in a large, red, serif font with a white outline. The text is set against a dark, textured background that appears to be a close-up of a person's face, possibly a woman, with a red, almost blood-like, color scheme. The entire graphic is enclosed in a rounded square border.

CHAPTER FIVE

AN INTERPRETATION OF THE LAW PROTECTING ABUSED WOMEN AND CHILDREN

It is to be with him, and he is to read it all the days of his life so that he may learn to revere the LORD his God and follow carefully all the words of this law and these decrees

Deuteronomy 17:19

1. INTRODUCTION

Many women across the world experience their wedding as the most beautiful day in their life. They can recall the preparations and the wedding dress that fitted with the grooms outfit. Days of happiness and laughter thereafter; until he lost his temper in a puny argument and hit his wife to the ground, calling her a bitch, a worthless whore.

Confused and hurt, she questions him what he had done, he realises his doing and starts to apologise. In the coming weeks he showers his wife with gifts and



An Interpretation of the Law Protecting Abused Women and Children

flowers until the gifts fade away and become less frequent. The quarrels start again and convert into arguments; another blow from nowhere and this time medical assistance is necessary.

Women turn to the police for assistance and with many saying that they are turned away, not much trust is left in the people that have the authority to stop unnecessary violence. Substance abuse is not a factor in all cases of violence against women, although research studies showed that police officers lack the knowledge of assisting women in violent cases. The battered woman has many challenges before living in peace.

The legal system has come to extremes toward addressing abuse of women, problems with legislation, lack of enforcement and entrenched approaches that accept domestic violence, have hindered women's ability to access the legislative preparations effectively and prevent further abuse.

These failures are predominantly destructive because women learn from experience, and from one another, whether the law will protect them from violence, this however is the main reason why women do not use the legal system's channels and are usually confronted with the inner thought of protecting herself. This could lead to the death of an abuser.

There are different theories used in court to defend an abused woman, such as: Battered Woman Syndrome; Coercive Control; and Post-Traumatic Stress Disorder. This thesis will expose these defences and its merits to abused women.

A few terms are required for the study and are defined as follows:



An Interpretation of the Law Protecting Abused Women and Children

Abused women:¹ The term refers to various forms of violence, abuse, mistreatment and neglect that women experience in their intimate, kin or dependent relationships. These include current, dissolving or past relationships with husbands, common-law partners, lovers, dating partners, family members and caregivers.

Battered women:² Many terms have been used to describe the abuse of women within relationships, including *wife abuse*, *wife assault*, *wife battering*, *spouse abuse*, and *partner abuse*. Recently, activists within the shelter movement have begun to use the more inclusive term *woman abuse* or *woman battering*.

Domestic violence:³ the continuing crime and problem of the physical beating of a wife, girlfriend or children, usually by the woman's male partner (although may be female violence against a male). It is now recognized as an anti-social mental illness. Sometimes a woman's dependence, low self-esteem, and fear of leaving cause her to endure this conduct or fail to protect a child. Prosecutors and police often face the problem that a battered woman will not press charges due to fear, intimidation and misplaced "love."

These terms caused havoc in the courts of South Africa. For example, when is a blow to the head hard enough to qualify for abuse? If there is medical prove of this incident, the defence will argue that the abused could have fell and bumped her head causing the head trauma; the blue eye evidence are argued

¹ Duffy, Ann; Momirov, Julianne (1997) Family Violence: A Canadian Introduction. Canada: James Lorimer & Company. pp.26-27.

² Battered Women definition: <http://www.phac-aspc.gc.ca/ncfv-cnivf/publications/femviof-eng.php>

³ Legal Definition Domestic Violence: <http://legal-dictionary.thefreedictionary.com/Domestic+Violence>



An Interpretation of the Law Protecting Abused Women and Children

that she walked into a door; Scratches on her body are argued that she held a wild domestic cat. The list can be endless.

The only prove a woman can show that is difficult to argue in court, is in the case of sexual assault. Many defended that she gave consent unless the medical records can prove force.

Abuse in this modern world is still very young, and many books have been written on this subject, but the fact of the matter is, awareness to the public does not carry a strong enough message. Women in South Africa are not aware of their legal rights, because of their cultural beliefs and lack of knowledge. Only a few studies were done in the South African context which raises concern for the urgency to protect women in this country.

2. DIFFERENT FORMS OF WIFE BATTERING

Wife battering is defined as wife beating, the leading form of domestic violence; other related terms are intraspousal assault; interspousal violence, and intramarital assault, "wife-battering behaviour" is sometimes quantitatively defined as deliberate, sever, and repeated (more than three time) physical assault resulting in demonstrable injury, such as severe bruising. It has been estimated that in the United States almost 1.8 million wives are battered at least one by their husbands.⁴

Spousal abuse has serious psychological and emotional consequences, including Post Traumatic Stress Disorder, depression, and low self-esteem.

⁴ Campbell, Robert J. (2004) Campbell's Psychiatric Dictionary. USA: Oxford University Press. p.694



An Interpretation of the Law Protecting Abused Women and Children

When children are involved, battering appears to be related to serious behavioural problems, as well as emotional and cognitive developmental difficulties.

Wife battering is frequently accompanied by child abuse, both physical and sexual. Battering, as well as sexual abuse and incest frequently occurs hand-in-hand with alcohol or other substance abuse. Wife batterers are typically men with aggressive personalities or, less often, depression; in either case, they are often pathologically jealous or heavy drinkers, or both.

Many wives are kept emotionally and financially dependent by their husbands who make job training and placement a problem. Wife battering has many forms and it is not just physical abuse.⁵

The evidence presented in the report *Wife Battering in Canada: The Vicious Circle*, gathered interviews with workers in 73 transition houses for battered women across Canada, through the statistics these houses collected in 1978 on the women who came to them to temporarily escape their battering and perhaps start a new life, and through first- and second-hand reports of the experiences of women who have been battered. The picture that emerges is very different from the picture which forms the popular view of wife battering.⁶

Wife battering is rarely a one-time occurrence – one-third of the women surveyed were beaten weekly or daily. Wife battering occur at all socio-economic levels, in rural areas as well as large urban centres. It frequently results in serious injury, miscarriage, permanent disability or even death.

⁵ Martin, Del (1981) *Battered Wives*. USA: Volcano Press. p.207

⁶ Pierson, Ruth R.; Cohen, Marjorie G.; Bourne, Paula; Masters, Philinda (1993) *Canadian Women's Issues: Volume 1 Strong Voices*. Canada: James Lorimer & Company Ltd Publishers. pp.160-161



An Interpretation of the Law Protecting Abused Women and Children

Wife battering is more than a number of isolated incidents of physical violence by a man against his wife. It has an added, crucial dimension. Wife battering includes the unspoken licence society gives the husband to use violence against his wife without fear of retribution. He may never take his licence, but he possesses it nonetheless.

Women who are battered and seek help learn very quickly that violence by a husband against his wife is an integral part, not just of certain family interactions. But of the dominant, accepted model of the family, and that violence in the family is indirectly supported by our laws, by practices and policies of the police, by the doctors, lawyers, social workers and the psychiatrists to whom battered women may go for help.⁷

It is globally a fact that women who phones the police, often finds that the they are hesitant to interfere in family disputes, and if they are willing to do so, they barely remove the batterer from the family home or offer the women and children a long-term protection. Most women find that their legal options are not clear; court dates are delayed interminably, and through this they must still live in the same house with their attackers.

Women discover to their confusion that their legal rights stop at the doorstep of the matrimonial home, and that wives do not have the same rights as other to call on the law for assistance and to expect true potential for action when they feel that the law is their only or best possible recourse.

⁷ Pierson, Ruth R.; Cohen, Marjorie G.; Bourne, Paula; Masters, Philinda (1993) Canadian Women's Issues: Volume 1 Strong Voices. Canada: James Lorimer & Company Ltd Publishers. pp.160-161



An Interpretation of the Law Protecting Abused Women and Children

Children from homes where the mother is battered learn first-hand that violence is acceptable behaviour. They see outsiders take their father's side; they often join the majority and turn against their mother. They learn to accept women as appropriate victims of violence within the family.

Violence against women infects every society and refers to violent acts: psychological, sexual, or physical assault by an assailant against his wife or partner made with the intent of controlling the partner by inducing fear and pain. Wife beating is common in some cultures to such an extent that it is considered a routine family affair, particularly in strata with low socioeconomic status. Such cases are not reported to the police, even in extreme situations. Only when the act may result in death is it reported to the authorities.

3. THE LEGAL PROCESS AND THE DOMESTIC VIOLENCE ACT

There are three major theories explaining the nature and effects in the court of law. These theories are used in the legal processes to expound the experience of being at the mercy of another person's power. The primary goal of abused women is survival.

Abused women have a major challenge to prove the abusive circumstances. Even though South Africa has one of the most efficient Domestic Violence Acts in the world, the process are hindered with illiterate police officers that can barely write down a statement to open a docket to clerks that are unsure of their job specifications. Many court forms or documentation does not have the proper information and are later in the process find useless to the plaintiff but, ammunition for the defence.



An Interpretation of the Law Protecting Abused Women and Children

Gender Rights Activist, Lisa Vetten,⁸ who is a Senior Researcher and Political analyst for the Tshwaranang Legal Advocacy Centre; previous Manager for the Centre for the Study of Violence and Reconciliation's gender programme (CSVR); a member of the management committee for the Reproductive Rights Alliance; a member of the executive committee of the Gauteng Network on Violence Against Women, strongly states that there is no single, defining, psychological profile of an abused women.

As the body of scientific literature in this field makes it clear, there are many diverse profiles. Abused women will not respond identically to abusive circumstances, nor will abusive circumstances have exactly the same effects on all women.⁹

Vetten is of the opinion that the following explain the nature and effects of domestic abuse and these factors are used in court to defend an abused woman who is accused of murdering her abuser:

3.1 Battered Women's Syndrome

Lenore E. Walker¹⁰ explains the term, Battered Woman Syndrome (BWS), as follows: BWS was first used in 1977 for a research study at the United States National Institute of Mental Health. The collected data, on over 400 self-referred women, met the definition of a battered woman that formed the basis

⁸ Lisa Vetten: <http://www.whoswho.co.za/lisa-vetten-5905>

⁹ Ludsins, Hallie; Vetten, Lisa (2005) *Spiral of Entrapment: Abused Women in Conflict With the Law*. RSA: Jacana Media (Pty) Ltd. pp.60-61

¹⁰ Walker, Lenore E. (2009) *The Battered Syndrome*. USA: Springer Publishing Company, LLC. pp.41-42



An Interpretation of the Law Protecting Abused Women and Children

for the original research. BWS has been used in the psychological literature as a subcategory of Post-Traumatic Stress Disorder (PTSD). Until now, it was never empirically demonstrated to have the same or similar criteria. Despite its popularity in clinical and forensic psychology, and its similarity to trauma theory, BWS had not been subjected to the scientific analysis provided.

To understand the term BWS, one needs to understand some form of analysis. BWS consists of the pattern of the signs and symptoms that have been found to occur after a woman has been physically, sexually, or mentally abused by her husband or intimate partner. In the case where the husband exerted power and control over his wife to coerce her into doing as he wants, without regard for her right or feelings.

Walker considers a woman to be battered who has been through the battering cycle at least twice. She further argues any physical aggression constitutes battering, which would mean that a woman whose husband grabbed her are two times and a woman who is repeatedly beaten and terrorized would both be considered *battered*.¹¹

This definition of BWS is a problematic term to define and cause major legal battles in courts. Forensic Psychologists however, defines BWS as a battered woman is a woman who is repeatedly subjected to any forceful physical or psychological behaviour by a man in order to coerce her to do something he wants her to do without any concern for her rights.

¹¹ Weiner, Irving B.; Freedheim, Donald K.; Goldstein, Alan M. (---) Handbook of Psychology, Forensic Psychology. USA: Wiley Publishers. p.490



An Interpretation of the Law Protecting Abused Women and Children

Thus, Walker's definition left the possibility of BWS open; it could result from psychological abuse without accompanying physical violence. The broadening of the concept of abuse to include psychological forms and the stretching of the concept of battering to include low-frequency, mild aggression might have value from a political, therapeutic, or advocacy standpoint, but has undermined attempts to precisely define core terms in the field, which is necessary if this information is presented as scientifically credible in other arenas.

Many writers in the field have argued that the very attempt to define BWS from an objective-empirical perspective is misguided and an affront to the subjectivity of the battered woman's experience, which they argue should be the standard by which abuse is judged and defined.¹²

Walker formulated the definition of BWS and has changed since. However, most definitions include a combination of the cycle of violence, learned helplessness, and Post-Traumatic Stress Disorder (PTSD). Walker's term Cycle of Violence refers to the cyclical nature of abusive relationships as they move through three key phases.¹³

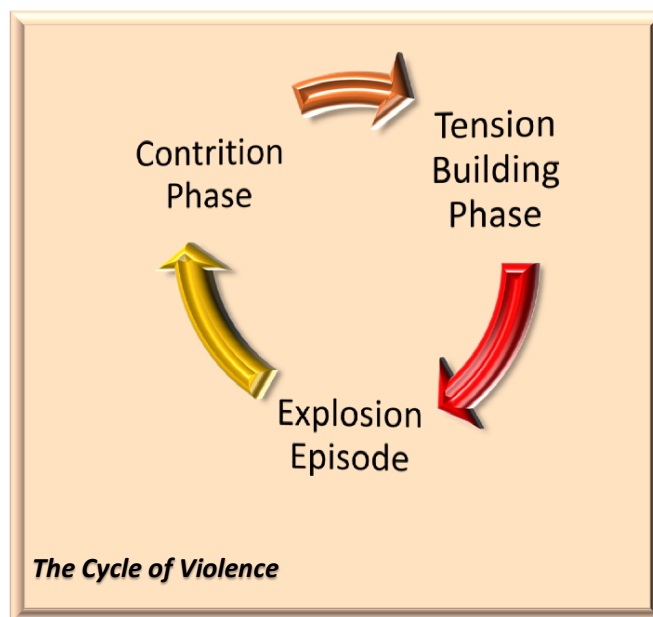
This thesis will accept that a battered woman is a woman that is being physically assaulted by: objects or by the use of hands including fists; or legs including kicking or pushing, step upon; any physical assaults that left injuries, marks or serious scratches. Psychological intimidation: pertaining to verbal abuse and/or sexual nature, which is disrespectful to a woman.

¹² Weiner, Irving B. (2013) Handbook of Psychology Second Edition, Forensic Psychology Volume 11. Canada: John Wiley & Sons Inc. p.491

¹³ Fisher, Bonnie S.; Lab, Steven P. (2010) Encyclopedia of Victimology and Crime Prevention, Volume 1. USA: Sage Publications, Inc. p.30

3.1.1 The Cycle of Violence

Walker concludes that violent relationships are cyclical in nature and consist of three stages:



3.1.1.1 First Phase: Tension Building

In this phase the relationship becomes strained and difficult and minor abuse starts. The woman senses it and tries to pacify her abuser by showering him love. She grows complaisant to the minor abuse which the abuser distrusts and therefor increases the tension.



An Interpretation of the Law Protecting Abused Women and Children

3.1.1.2 Second Phase: Explosion

The tension alleviates only after the abuser explodes into a violent outburst. In his mind he either lost control or gave her what she deserves. He would also blame her for his violent outburst.

3.1.1.3 Third Phase: Contrition

This phase is the remorse / apology / renewal phase. The abuser is deeply remorseful and regrets the violent outburst and apologises to her, and showers her with gifts and attention to demonstrate their contrition. The abused woman renews her faith in her abuser's basic goodness.

* * * * *

Walker further noted that over time this cycle of violence becomes more severe as the contrition phase becomes shorter and the tension building phase and explosive episode becomes longer and more frequent.¹⁴

¹⁴ Ludsin, Hallie; Vetten, Lisa (2005) *Spiral of Entrapment: Abused Women in Conflict With the Law*. RSA: Jacana Media (Pty) Ltd. p.63



3.1.2 The Effect of the Cycle of Violence on Women

The effect of this cycle is described as *Learned Helplessness*. This concept is derived from behavioural psychologist, Martin Seligman, who has experimented with dogs. Seligman defined Learned Helplessness as the state of mind created when an animal or human being learns to behave helplessly, even with the means to escape or avoid an unpleasant situation. The learned helplessness theory holds that clinical depression and other mental illnesses may arise from the perceived lack of control over a situation.

Martin Seligman, together with psychologist Steve Maier, studied depression at the University of Pennsylvania. In 1967 they found that the conditioning of dogs created outcomes that challenged B.F. Skinner's behaviourism theory, which was the leading psychological theory at the time. From the Journal of Experimental Psychology, Volume 74, No 1, May 1967, the following experiments were conducted: ¹⁵

The very first experiment involved three separate groups of dogs that were restrained with harnesses. This group was the control group; they were placed in harnesses for a set period of time and then released. In this group, no external stimulus was presented. ¹⁶

The second group of dogs were yoked together in pairs of two. One

¹⁵ Martin Seligman's Experiment Dogs: <http://psych.hanover.edu/classes/learning/papers/seligman%20maier%201967.pdf>

¹⁶ Learned Helplessness Theory: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Learned_helplessness



An Interpretation of the Law Protecting Abused Women and Children

dog in a pair would then be given mild electrical shocks. The dog could end the pain of the electric shocks by pressing a lever.

The third group dogs were also harnessed in pairs of two. One dog in a pair would be wired corresponding with a dog in group two who was receiving the electric shocks. The dog would then receive shocks for the same period as the dog in group two, but his particular lever could not discontinue the electric shocks. This caused the third group dogs to receive a random electrical shock that could not be absconded.

The conclusion to this experiment was that the dogs in the first two groups recovered swiftly from the experience. The third group did not recover that simply. They indicated symptoms of clinical depression and learned to be helpless.

In the late 1960's approximately 150 dogs were tested in this experiment. Almost one-third of the dogs did not become helpless; they found **a way out of the situation** despite the experiences they endured.

The experiments were later conducted on humans by using disrupting sounds. These parallels were also found in studies relating to brainwashing in the 1950's. The Seligman tests studied the differences in people who break under long-term psychological abuse and those **who learn to adapt.**

This experiment is used in the court of law even if it offends the abused woman. It is of course an insult to an abused woman to be



An Interpretation of the Law Protecting Abused Women and Children

compared to an experimental dog. However, the abused dog's behaviour is similar to the abused woman or child's behaviour in controlled and isolated circumstances. In the case of an abused woman who recognises that she has no escape or to stop the violence, she would believe that her abuser is overwhelmingly powerful and that he will prevent her escape efforts.¹⁷

* * * * *

This experiment is acknowledged by behavioural psychologists to date, which bring this study to Coercive Control. Coercive Control would be defined as a course-of- conduct crime much like harassment, stalking, or kidnapping, rather than as a discrete act, and highlight its effects on liberty and autonomy.¹⁸

3.2 Coercive Control

Stark¹⁹ describes Coercive Control of men that uses controlling tactics much more often than women do, just as they use the severest forms of violence more frequently, and are somewhat more likely than women to be motivated by a desire to control her partner.

¹⁷ Ludsin, Hallie; Vetten, Lisa (2005) *Spiral of Entrapment: Abused Women in Conflict With the Law*. RSA: Jacana Media (Pty) Ltd. p.64

¹⁸ Stark, Evan (2007) *Coercive Control: How Men Entrap Women in Personal Life*. USA: Oxford University Press. p.382

¹⁹ Stark, Evan (2007) *Coercive Control: How Men Entrap Women in Personal Life*. USA: Oxford University Press. p.199



An Interpretation of the Law Protecting Abused Women and Children

Vetten²⁰ states that the origins of the Coercive Control Theory lie in the experiences of people who have lived in situations of captivity, such as Holocaust survivors or war prisoners, or who have been taken hostage and display symptoms of Stockholm Syndrome or Traumatic Bonding.

She further states that the purposes of such behaviour appear to be twofold: complete control of the victim; and making the victim appear to comply in her domination – for when victims can be made to seem complicit in their subjugation, then abusive behaviour can be justified and its harmful nature disguised.

The violence used in Coercive Control resembles the violence used in capture crimes in three ways primarily: it is designed to punish, hurt, or control a victim. The victim's susceptibility to injury is a function of the degree to which her capabilities for defence, resistance, escape, or to garner support have been disabled by a combination of exploitation, structural constraints, and isolation according to Stark.²¹

Psychoanalyst, Anna Freud, describes situations of Coercive Control as identification with the aggressor. This refers to the way those in life-threatening situations come to identify with the person who holds power over them; i.e. seeing the world through the aggressor's eyes in an attempt to anticipate and ward off danger.²²

²⁰ Ludsin, Hallie; Vetten, Lisa (2005) *Spiral of Entrapment: Abused Women in Conflict With the Law*. RSA: Jacana Media (Pty) Ltd. p.67

²¹ Stark, Evan (2007) *Coercive Control: How Men Entrap Women in Personal Life*. USA: Oxford University Press.p.205

²² Ludsin, Hallie; Vetten, Lisa (2005) *Spiral of Entrapment: Abused Women in Conflict With the Law*. RSA: Jacana Media (Pty) Ltd. p.67



3.2.1 Methods and Techniques of Coercive Control

Okun²³ refers to Coercive Control as *brainwashing*. Brainwashing is the English mistranslation of *thought reform*. The Chinese term for techniques used shortly after the revolution in Communist China in order to induce behavioural and attitudinal changes in political prisoners.

The principal procedures of thought reform used by the Chinese Communists were imprisonment, verbal humiliation, beatings, and other means of physical torture. These techniques were used to induce false confessions by captives, confessions to having committed exaggerated or patently unreal crimes.

The battered woman's situation resembles that of a prisoner subject to thought reform. Like the brainwashed captives, battered women are subjected to verbal abuse, beatings, other forms of physical abuse, and to confinement or imprisonment. Okun strongly states that the battered woman's free movement is the most important technique of woman-battering. This imprisonment of a battered woman does not happen overnight. It is a systematic process.

Vetten²⁴ concluded that through the systematic, repetitive infliction of psychological trauma coupled with violence, terror and helplessness are inculcated in the battered woman and her sense of self in relation to

²³ Okun, Lewis (1986) *Woman Abuse, Facts Replacing Myths*. USA: State University of New York Press. pp.115-116

²⁴ Ludsin, Hallie; Vetten, Lisa (2005) *Spiral of Entrapment: Abused Women in Conflict With the Law*. RSA: Jacana Media (Pty) Ltd. p.68



An Interpretation of the Law Protecting Abused Women and Children

others is destroyed. These techniques may erode the battered woman's personality to the extent that a new self-image and identity must be reconstructed.

Okun²⁵ proved the similarities between prisoners and woman abuse. False confession destabilized the prisoner's beliefs and values through the effect of cognitive dissonance and therefore helped to promote further change by the prisoner in the controller's desired direction.

The abuser's intent is to make the woman feel responsible for the abuse through the extraction of confessions. The abuser will force the women to admit to transgressions to justify his abusive behaviour. Forced confessions are usually accompanied by other techniques designed to instil Pseudo-Guilt.

3.2.1.1 Pseudo-Guilt

Guilt is invoked by the abuser in order to justify his maltreatment of his victim.

Guilt by association in woman abuse would be the woman being held culpable for associating with individuals the abuser dislikes, or with people of whom he disapproves.

Guilt by intention would include any display of a wish to leave. It is punishable if the woman has knowledge of shelters or hotlines. If the woman talks with an extra familial

²⁵ Okun, Lewis (1986) *Woman Abuse, Facts Replacing Myths*. USA: State University of New York Press. p.116



An Interpretation of the Law Protecting Abused Women and Children

person, the abuser can interpret this as her showing guilt with the intent to leave him.

Guilt for incorrect attitudes is negative to the abuser or for doubting any decision by the abuser.

Guilt for having knowledge which could in any conceivable way is used against the abuser, i.e. she can use the abuse against her abuser at a social event and damage his social status.

Guilt for taking action can be harmful to the abusers interests, which is assessed without regard for whether the victim intended harm to the abuser or not.²⁶

3.2.1.2 Emotional and Physical Depletion

Abusive circumstances drain their victims not only emotionally but physically by depleting them. In many cases of woman abuse, women admit to a general conclusion of the abuser. The abuser will keep on going through the night with endless arguments or irrational cross-examinations.

The arguments are almost always senseless and highly self-centred. The abuser will attempt to drill the importance of

²⁶ Okun, Lewis (1986) *Woman Abuse, Facts Replacing Myths*. USA: State University of New York Press. pp.130-131



An Interpretation of the Law Protecting Abused Women and Children

his existence into her very soul. If she does not show enough remorse and tears of regret, he would cross-examine her on his self.

3.2.1.3 Basic Necessities

In South Africa men would deprive women from basic necessities. This has a major impact on the children in the household too. Even if she is not allowed to take food, the children would not dare to take any. He would accuse the children of stealing from him or the woman would be accused of using the children to get to the food.

In other cases the abuser restricted the woman from using the toilet. She can only go outside unnoticed in the garden, but if caught, she will face the verbal humiliation too. Many women told how they were chased out of the house in their sleep wear in the middle of the night to sleep outside "with the dogs" or had to endure the cold winter's night with only a pair of socks and basic sleep wear.

3.2.1.4 Pregnant Women

Women told of their experiences at the time of this restrictions and humiliations while they were pregnant.



An Interpretation of the Law Protecting Abused Women and Children

There is absolutely no remorse whatsoever of the effects this stressful moment have on the unborn child.

In most cases women confess that they were accused of infidelity and the unborn child is not their husband's, and this gave reason for the humiliation of sleeping outside like a dog.

3.2.1.5 The Children's Response

Children also go through the stress, anxiety, insecurity and humiliation. They learn from the man of the household how to treat a woman when she is not serving him. This is very conflicting for children, they want to help their mother and cannot understand why she is being treated the way the father treats her, on the other hand, they turn against the mother because she did not do her job or complied with his needs.

3.2.1.6 The Abused Woman's Response

The abused or battered woman will attempt to understand what will keep the abuser happy, and reduce the likelihood of his harming her; the victim will attempt to "get inside his head."



An Interpretation of the Law Protecting Abused Women and Children

Under these abusive circumstances she would become sensitive to his moods and crazes. She would then adopt the abuser's outlook and perspective, including that she both causes and deserves the abuse. A personality transformation will evolve as she will come constituted or defined by the abuser and therefor substitute her own former self.²⁷

As the power of the abuser magnifies, the self-esteem of the women slowly disappears, making her dependence on the abuser more pronounced. Concomitantly, the controller becomes dependent on his victim to sustain his inflated sense of power. This ensures a two-way bond. The abuser is as dependent upon the victim as she is on him. This bond develops over time.

3.2.1.7 The Emotional Bond

The emotional bond created by the trauma of domestic violence is fairly strong. The effects of this bond can be discerned when women who have left suddenly decide to return. Time apart increases the positive memories and the abusive experiences become overwhelmed with this optimism of the abuser might have changed for the better.

²⁷ Ludsin, Hallie; Vetten, Lisa (2005) *Spiral of Entrapment: Abused Women in Conflict With the Law*. RSA: Jacana Media (Pty) Ltd. p.69



An Interpretation of the Law Protecting Abused Women and Children

3.2.1.8 Returning to the Abuser

Many abused women are ostracized in court hearings for returning to their abusers. For a woman with children from an isolated environment to leave into a world with no supportive relatives (there are no friends at this stage), has nowhere to go. She has no income of her own to support herself and her children.

The children have to be placed in pre-school, or after-care if in primary school, in order for her to have a decent income. This is more accounts to pay. The abuser knows he is her financial safety net, and plays his strategic game to have her under his control again.

3.2.2 Statistics of Woman Battering in South Africa

The Department of Justice estimates that 1 out of every four South African women are survivors of domestic violence.²⁸ (Domestic Violence: Submission to the South African Law Commission in the Light of International and Constitutional Human Rights Jurisprudence Part 1, May 1997).

²⁸ Statistics Domestic Abuse South Africa: <http://www.womeninaction.co.za/social-affairs/statistics-on-domestic-violence-in-south-africa>



An Interpretation of the Law Protecting Abused Women and Children

According to People Opposing Woman Abuse (POWA) 1 in every 6 women who die in Gauteng Province are killed by an intimate partner.

The Institute of Security Studies did a research project in 1999 and found that:

- 90% of the women interviewed had experienced emotional abuse by being humiliated in front of others was most commonly reported.
- 90% had also experienced physical abuse: being pushed or shoved and being slapped or hit were highlighted.
- 71% had experienced sexual abuse: attempts to kiss or touch followed by forced sexual intercourse occurred most often.
- 58% experienced economic abuse: money taken without consent was most common.
- 42.5% of women had experienced all forms of abuse.
- 60% of all cases of abuse were committed by partners, lovers or spouses.
- Emotional abuse-either as a category on its own or in combination with other types of abuse was referred to by 63% of women as being the most serious.

According to a Medical Research Council study, young women are more subjected to assault (ranging from slapping to beating with objects and stabbing) and sexual coercion by partners and others.



3.3 Post-Traumatic Stress Disorder

PTSD is characterized by the re-experiencing of an extremely traumatic event accompanied by symptoms of increased arousal and by avoidance of stimuli associated with the trauma.²⁹

3.3.1 Symptoms of PTSD

There is considerable overlap between the symptoms listed in the diagnostic criteria for psychiatric disorders associated with traumatic stress. Many defend the abuser in court that the abused woman suffered from depression. Many symptoms of depression are identical to symptoms of PTSD, which include decreased sleep, decreased concentration, and the feeling cut off from others.

The only different symptom of PTSD and depression is depressed mood, whereas increased startle, feeling on guard, flashbacks, and amnesia are not symptoms of depression.³⁰

Emotional processing theory posits that the fear structure underlying PTSD is characterized by a particularly large number of harmless stimulus representations that are erroneously associated with the meaning of danger, as well as representations of physiological arousal and of behavioural reactions that result in the symptoms of PTSD.

²⁹ American Psychiatric Association (2000) Diagnostic and Statistical Manual of Mental Disorders: DSM-IV-TR: Text Revision. USA: American Psychiatric Publishing, Inc. p.429

³⁰ Bremner, J. Douglas; Marmar, Charles R. (1998) Trauma, Memory, and Dissociation. USA: American Psychiatric Press, Inc. p.368



An Interpretation of the Law Protecting Abused Women and Children

Due to the fact that a large number of stimuli can activate the fear structure, individuals with PTSD perceive the world as completely dangerous.

In addition, representations of how the person behaved during the trauma and his or her subsequent symptoms inaccurately become associated with the meaning of self-incompetence. These two broad sets of negative cognitions further promote the severity of PTSD symptoms, which in turn reinforce the inaccurate perceptions.³¹

In an abusive environment the woman experience the trauma, and the children that listen or saw the incidents also experience psychological trauma. PTSD symptoms according to the medical field will manifest in nightmares, flashbacks, the feeling of the traumatic event is occurring again, uncontrollable terrifying thoughts, avoiding objects or places that stimulates the incident, the feeling of: worry; guilt; sadness; being alone; or on the edge, insomnia, anger outbursts, suicidal thoughts, are all basic symptoms of women who experienced abused.

PTSD in children can include: behaving like they did when they were younger, they are unable to talk, they complain of stomach problems or headaches; they refuse to be in a social environment.³²

³¹ Friedman, Matthew J; Keane, Terrence M.; Resick, Patricia A. (2007) Handbook of PTSD: Science and Practice. USA: The Guilford Press. p.63

³² PTSD Medical Symptoms: <http://www.nimh.nih.gov/health/publications/post-traumatic-stress-disorder-easy-to-read/complete-index.shtml>



3.3.2 Emotional Distresses

Other symptoms abused women experience is: depression, suicidal ideation, drug and alcohol dependency, sleep disorders, phobias, anxiety disorders, somatisation and cognitive difficulties. These symptoms conclude to fear.

Some abused women managed to hide their abuse. In many situations the woman will uphold the perfect marriage image, even if she knows there will be abuse by the time she arrive at home with her husband. None of the other guests will ever assume that there she is in a troubled marriage. Until, the shocking announcement of divorce is made.

Society is almost always shocked with the news knowing they were the perfect marital couple. This proves that society as a whole is not aware of abuse, due to fact that women can wear a mask to protect her marital status. No one will know that she took refuge in a shelter. Shelters in South Africa cannot cope with the high command of abused women with their children.

In many cases, the abuser will search for his wife and children, if he is unable to find them, he will report child abduction to the police. Legal advisors say that this is a problem to protect the wife along with her children. If the police find them, they inform the abuser immediately and turn the children over to him and the mother has no choice but to go along.



An Interpretation of the Law Protecting Abused Women and Children

The emotional stresses an abused mother experience is overwhelming. Usually the abused mother protects her children to escape the abuse the children see or hear. In most cases the abuser will threaten her with the children's safety. Some legal advisors say this is the main reason why they leave immediately "like thieves in the night." The woman and her children is overpowered by fear for the abuser. A woman will (almost) never leave her child(ren) with a physical abuser.

In some cases the abused woman pleads self-defence, but when one looks into these situations the woman's children were threatened. She endured the abuse, not defending herself, but as soon as the abuser threatened her children, she turned on him. She finds a boldness of fearlessness to protect her young offspring. In court cases this situation is usually a fact that will be used against her.

Argumentatively, she has a history of abuse with the now "victim," she could have withstood him then, why now. Her only defence would be that he threatened to abuse the children and that she was protecting her children.

4. THE LEGAL PROCESS AND THE DOMESTIC VIOLENCE ACT OF SOUTH AFRICA

The legal process and the Domestic Violence Act (DVA) of South Africa are regarded as the most efficient in the legal world. The implementation of the legal process is unfortunate. In any country women turn to the police for assistance.



An Interpretation of the Law Protecting Abused Women and Children

There are certain processes to follow to have the abuse on record. In divorce cases the abused woman has no legal ground if she does not have evidence of the abuse; this includes medical records or witnesses that took photographs.

4.1 The Legal Process

Women turn to the law for protection and assistance in South Africa. Women can attain an interdict in terms of the Prevention of Family Violence Act (PFVA) and then lay a charge against the abuser. The DVA and the PFVA require the support of the SAPS. The PFVA interdict requires that the police arrest the abuser if the interdict was violated, and the SAPS can hold him in jail for up to 24 hours.

In laying a charge, the woman must go to her nearest police station or call the police to make a statement. The police must investigate the case. The abused woman can also lay a charge when she or someone on her behalf has called the police during the ordeal. The police are then dispatched to the residence. There is a range of charges that the abused woman can lay against her abuser, this includes: common assault, assault with intent to do grievous bodily harm, attempted murder, rape and *crimen injuria*.

4.1.1 The Protection Order

An abused woman may apply for a protection order to stop the abuse and stop the abuser from entering the primary residence or the abused woman's work environment. The court may place other conditions on



An Interpretation of the Law Protecting Abused Women and Children

the order, including reports from the SAPS that, for example, fire arms were removed from the property if she was threatened with fire arm.

4.1.2 The Application

The abused woman (or child) can apply for a protection order against the abuser at police stations as well as at the courts. It can only be done during court hours, but if the abused can prove that she is in a critical situation and cannot wait for the court to open, she might get an interim protection order in waiting for a hearing on a final protection order. The DVA requires the court to hear these applications for protection immediately. Any protection order becomes effective on serving the abuser.³³

In South Africa problems arise in the application process as soon as the documentation starts. The application is almost always done by volunteers.

Firstly, South Africa has eleven official languages. The application is written in either English or Afrikaans. This makes it practically difficult to translate from another language to English. The application is therefore confusing and relatively time-consuming. The abused can fill out the application with the assistance of the clerk of the court, if the

³³ Ludsin, Hallie; Vetten, Lisa (2005) *Spiral of Entrapment: Abused Women in Conflict With the Law*. RSA: Jacana Media (Pty) Ltd. p.30



An Interpretation of the Law Protecting Abused Women and Children

clerk has the time, otherwise on their own. This application must then be certified at a police station or at the courts.³⁴

4.1.3 The Court Hearing

An interim protection order are provided and sets a return date for the case and this gives the abused and abuser the opportunity to provide information of the alleged incident. Many problems arise here in the process. If the clerk or police officer took down the information provided from the abused woman incorrectly, the errors can cost her the protection order. More studies proved that forms were filled in incorrectly, inaccurately and were incomplete. If the protection order has no problems, it can either be confirmed or amended or set aside. The magistrate only signs the protection order.³⁵

The DVA allows for the eviction of abusers from the joint home if it is in the best interests of the abused. This provision recognizes that women have limited access to shelters and should not be forced into homelessness to avoid abuse.

Despite the logic of the provision, researchers noted that magistrates, untutored in the dynamics of domestic violence and politicized in terms

³⁴ Parenzee, Penny; Artz, Lillian; Moul, Kelly (2001) Monitoring the Implementation of the Domestic Violence Act 1995. RSA: Institute of Criminology, Cape Town University. p.20

³⁵ Parenzee, Penny; Artz, Lillian; Moul, Kelly (2001) Monitoring the Implementation of the Domestic Violence Act 1995. RSA: Institute of Criminology, Cape Town University.p.20



An Interpretation of the Law Protecting Abused Women and Children

of gender politics, are reluctant to evict abusers from the primary residence.³⁶

If the protection order is granted, the abused will be provided with a copy of the interim order and directed to the Sheriff or police to have the protection order served. The abused must pay the fees of the protection order, and if she is unable to, the state is then responsible for the fees.³⁷

This is one of the reasons women do not follow through, they do not have the money and other studies showed that women are turned down to keep the costs low for the state.

The courts suffer from extensive delays, and have limited resources to hear these cases. This means that the abused woman has to wait for a protection order. Research showed that women can wait from one day to three weeks in Cape Town; up to three months in George; and in Mitchells Plain up to four months.³⁸

Clerks and police officers that assist the abused women are usually unsympathetic, and this can cause the magistrate to have autonomy to interpret the terms.³⁹

³⁶ Ludsin, Hallie; Vetten, Lisa (2005) *Spiral of Entrapment: Abused Women in Conflict With the Law*. RSA: Jacana Media (Pty) Ltd. p.32

³⁷ Parenzee, Penny; Artz, Lillian; Moul, Kelly (2001) *Monitoring the Implementation of the Domestic Violence Act 1995*. RSA: Institute of Criminology, Cape Town University. pp.21

³⁸ Ludsin, Hallie; Vetten, Lisa (2005) *Spiral of Entrapment: Abused Women in Conflict With the Law*. RSA: Jacana Media (Pty) Ltd. p.31

³⁹ Ludsin, Hallie; Vetten, Lisa (2005) *Spiral of Entrapment: Abused Women in Conflict With the Law*. RSA: Jacana Media (Pty) Ltd. p.31



4.1.4 Breaching the Protection Order

Protection orders do little to protect the long-term safety of an abused woman. In the instance of seer violence, a man who breaches the protection order, is arrested and released on bail within 24 hours. If the abuser awaits a trial, he still has the opportunity to breach the protection order and do the abused further harm.⁴⁰ In some cases in South Africa, murder the abused due to the fact that he feels humiliated for being arrested.

The National Study of Female Homicide in South Africa showed the 1999 statistics of women by race who were murdered by their intimate partner:⁴¹

African: 8.9 per 100 000; Coloured: 18.3 per 100 000; Indian: 7.5 per 100 000; White: 2.8 per 100 000; overall: 8.8 per 100 000. This concludes that 8.8 per 100 000 women, 14 years and older, were killed by an intimate partner in 1999. This amounts to 4 women killed per day or 1 woman killed every 6 hours.

4.1.5 Criminal Charges

Women can lay a range of charges against their abuser. The DVA recognizes an unlimited scope of behaviours as constituting abuse, not all of these behaviours can be prosecuted. Prosecutors treat abuse or

⁴⁰ Ludsin, Hallie; Vetten, Lisa (2005) *Spiral of Entrapment: Abused Women in Conflict With the Law*. RSA: Jacana Media (Pty) Ltd. p 32

⁴¹ Matthews, Shanaaz; Abrahams, Noemah; Martin, Lorna J.; Vetten, Lisa; Van der Merwe, Lize; Jewkes, Rachel (2004) *Every Six Hours a Woman is Killed By Her Intimate Partner*. RSA: MRC Policy Brief No 5. p.2



An Interpretation of the Law Protecting Abused Women and Children

better known, domestic violence cases less seriously than other cases. Human Rights Watch reported that prosecutors drop domestic violence charges easily.⁴²

This however, gives women the impression that they do not have legal support and therefore drop the charges against their abusers. The MRC Policy Brief no 5 of 2004 stated that there is unreasonable bias in conviction and sentencing. Conviction was more likely and sentences were longer if white women were victims.⁴³

This racial statement caused concern and this thesis found that evidence is a problem in the case of black women. Due to the fact that black women cannot prove physical abuse; they qualify for physical abuse when there is blood or a swollen eye. Blue marks are not always visible on their dark skin and therefore lack evidence at the police station or later in court. White women's black and blue marks are more obvious than that of black women on the naked eye, and can easily prove their abuse.

4.1.6 The Role of the SAPS

One of the main reasons why women are not confident with the SAPS is due to the fact that the police fail to assist the abused woman. The police must protect the citizens of harm. Reported activities involved checking the documents, calming the applicant and explaining her

⁴² Human Rights Watch: Violence Against Women and the Medico Legal System: <http://www.hrw.org/reports/1997/08/01/south-africa-violence-against-women-and-medico-legal-system>

⁴³ Matthews, Shanaaz; Abrahams, Noemah; Martin, Lorna J.; Vetten, Lisa; Van der Merwe, Lize; Jewkes, Rachel (2004) Every Six Hours a Woman is Killed By Her Intimate Partner. RSA: MRC Policy Brief No 5. p.4



An Interpretation of the Law Protecting Abused Women and Children

rights, travelling to the home or *shebeen*, checking the respondent understood the order, informing the woman about a shelter or counselling, taking the woman home or to a place of safety, returning to the office, recording and registering the case, photocopying documents, and carrying out follow up.⁴⁴

This thesis researched five police stations in Pretoria, Gauteng Province. All of the police officers said that they are not obligated to take an abused woman to a place of safety; she can use the telephone to contact relatives or friends to take her home. By questioning this statement, they answered that they are too busy with more important cases or that it depends on availability of a vehicle.

When a physical abused woman entered the police station, one of the five said that she must stay outside; he does not want to clean up her blood. Two out of the five police stations said they will assist her with her wounds if there is a first aid kit close by.

The other two police stations said they will take her to hospital or call in an ambulance and take the case in hospital on a later stage. In the case of sexual assault including rape, three of the police stations said that the victim must show them the bleeding, because "some women lie and only want to make trouble." The other two police stations said they will take the victim to a nearby hospital immediately.

⁴⁴ Vetten, Lisa; Budlender, Debbie; Schneider, Vera (2005) The Price of Protection: Costing the Implementation of the Domestic Violence Act (no 116 of 1998). RSA: DSVR Gender Programme, Policy Brief No. 2.



An Interpretation of the Law Protecting Abused Women and Children

The police station in Mpumalanga was quite more efficient and took their responsibility very serious. They said that any abused woman must open a case and will be taken to a nearby shelter. If she needs medical care, she will be taken to hospital by a female officer that will stand by her through the process. When the abused woman is calm, the female police officer will take her statement and assist her with protection orders.

4.1.6.1 Implementation Problems of the SAPS

In the few intensive research studies that have been conducted to date, the researchers found that the police officers needed training due to the lack of knowledge how to take care of these cases.

In these studies they found that police officers are unsympathetic, obstructive, and hostile towards women. Women are simply turned down in rural areas as the police officers do not take these cases seriously. There is no enthusiasm to investigate these cases.

Vetten⁴⁵ reported that they prioritise calls based on what they view the seriousness of violence: if they tell us that there is a serious domestic violence incident where the woman is bleeding and thrown out of the house, that (would) be important to respond to," but if the police

⁴⁵ Ludsin, Hallie; Vetten, Lisa (2005) *Spiral of Entrapment: Abused Women in Conflict With the Law*. RSA: Jacana Media (Pty) Ltd. p.35



An Interpretation of the Law Protecting Abused Women and Children

despatchers simply say domestic violence, it is not regarded as urgent.

4.1.7 Reasons for Dropping the Charges

This thesis found that women easily drop charges for a number of reasons. Firstly, the police officers do not assist them; the abused woman has to wait or she is treated unsympathetically.

Secondly, there is a cost involved for the protection order which makes it practically impossible for rural area victims.

Thirdly, the police befriend the abuser and leave the abused woman with no protection.

Fourth, the abuser are rarely removed from the house, the woman with her children has to seek refuge elsewhere.

Fifth, the abuser is intimidating the victim or trying to manipulate her emotionally into dropping the charges.

The abuser almost always denies this in court, because it is his word against hers.

* * * * *



An Interpretation of the Law Protecting Abused Women and Children

This information shows why abused or battered women believe that the police and/or legal system fail them. The police or legal system cannot stop the abuse with immediate effect.

Vetten⁴⁶ is of the strong opinion of the realities of the process that show the assumption that the justice system can always help an abused woman, is patently false.

Research can almost prove her statement, due to the fact that women testified that the police do not take them seriously and hardly assist them; to them it is just another minor incident.

5. LEGISLATION ON TECHNOLOGY IN CYBER BULLYING

This thesis will focus on Cyber Bullying for the sole purpose to prove that bullying through social networking can be more traumatic than actual abuse.

A **child** is defined in the Constitution of the Republic of South Africa, 1996 (Act 108 of 1996)⁴⁷ as a person under the age of 18 years.¹ As soon as a person reaches the age of 18 years he or she is regarded as an adult and is treated as such in the criminal justice system. Legislation does not make special provision for young persons (18–25-year- olds).

⁴⁶ Ludsin, Hallie; Vetten, Lisa (2005) *Spiral of Entrapment: Abused Women in Conflict With the Law*. RSA: Jacana Media (Pty) Ltd. p.37

⁴⁷ Child Definition according to Act of SA: <http://www.info.gov.za/documents/constitution/1996/a108-96.pdf>



An Interpretation of the Law Protecting Abused Women and Children

Children living in the early 21st-century are exposed to technology, numerous social networking sites, unlimited access to the internet, and a choice of mobile phone communications for example, Mxit. This has significantly changed the way in which children connect with each other, and about each other.

It has also drastically transformed the nature and content of the information they share with each other relating to both themselves and their friends. Children express themselves truly without thinking of the consequences.

The advances in technology and the diverse methods of communication have resulted in unacceptable and detrimental communication behaviour (or misconduct) among children. Children began to bully their peers by making use of these technologies.

5.1 Cyber Bullying

Cyber bullying can be defined as bullying that takes place using electronic technology, for example, mobile phones; internet chat rooms and so on, by sending inappropriate messages to another child.

Sexting can be defined as sending text messages from a mobile phone to another with sexual promiscuous content.

The Cyber world of internet communication, including mobile phones, creates a 'virtual' world where a lot of time is spent; there is no personal contact with other children, only messages and images.



An Interpretation of the Law Protecting Abused Women and Children

This cyber world makes it easier for children to forget about their inhibitions and to act and say things they would not typically do or say in personal interactions.

This can result in feelings of detachment, which contribute to the event of cyber bullying and sexting among children. Cyber bullying is widespread in this cyber world, where bullies may lose sight of the fact that they are causing harm to an actual person.

5.1.1 Types of Cyber Bullying

There are various types of Cyber Bullying, which include acts involving bullying and harassment through technology, and is carried out in various ways and methods:

- Text messages
- Picture/video/image clips
- Mobile phone calls
- E-mail
- Chat rooms or Skype conference calls
- Instant messages or SMS
- Websites and school blogs
- Social networking sites (such as Facebook, Twitter, Mxit)
- Internet games

Children get overwhelmed with themselves, they would want to say the extreme or do the extreme to be accepted as a “leader” of the group.



An Interpretation of the Law Protecting Abused Women and Children

Unfortunately children think they are “cool” and want to exclaim their “awesomeness” to their peers by harassing another child. This involves sending a cruel or threatening message to another child’s mobile phone on a frequent basis.

It is usually persistent and repeated and is directed to a specific child. It may cause alarm, annoyance or substantial emotional stress to the child.

The South African Law Reform Commission⁴⁸ (SALRC) distinguishes between direct and indirect online harassment. **Direct harassment** includes threats, bullying or intimidating electronic messages sent directly to the victim. **Indirect harassment** includes spreading rumours about the victim on internet discussion forums, subscribing the victim to unwanted online services and posting information about the victim on online dating or sex services. The SALRC defines the following terms that may be used in court or legal proceedings:

Denigration: sending or posting malicious gossip or rumours about a person to damage his or her reputation or friendships. It also includes posting or sending digitally altered photographs of someone to others, particularly pictures that portray the victim in a sexualised or harmful way.

Impersonation or identity theft. This occurs when someone breaks into someone else’s e-mail or social network account and poses as that person, sending messages or other information or pictures online in a

⁴⁸ South African Law Reform Commission (2004) p.19 (Stalking/1.53)



An Interpretation of the Law Protecting Abused Women and Children

bid to damage the victim's reputation and friendships, or to get the victim into trouble or danger.

Outing: Sharing another child's secrets or embarrassing information or images online with other children; this information was never intended to be shared with others. In some instances deception is used to trick someone into revealing their secrets or embarrassing information, and these are then shared online with others.

Happy slapping: This is incidents where children walk up to another child and slap them, while another captures the violence using a mobile phone camera.

Sexting: The sending of nude or semi-nude photos or videos and/or sexually suggestive messages via mobile phone texting or instant messaging.

Another definition of sexting focuses on the involvement of children in sexting. It emphasises that the sexually explicit texts or nude or partially nude images of minors are sent to other minors, and that these images may in some instances be classified as child pornography.⁴⁹

⁴⁹ Sacco DT, Argudin R, Maguire J & Tallon K (2010) Sexting: Youth Practices and Legal Implications. Youth and Media Policy Working Group Initiative. USA: Berkman Center for Internet & Society, Harvard University. Paper.



5.1.1.1 Sexting and Child Pornography

It may be argued that people (including children) have the right to privacy and to express themselves freely, and that they therefore have the right to take and send nude or semi-nude photos or videos and/or sexually suggestive messages to others via mobile phone texting or instant messaging. Furthermore, taking and keeping nude or semi-nude photos or videos of oneself for personal use is not illegal per se.

But the problem with sending these sexually suggestive images or messages is that the sender loses control over what happens to the photos or messages once the 'send' button has been pressed.

Chances are that these images or messages will end up online, and will exist forever in the cyber world. Once the image or message is sent, the sender is not able to retrieve or delete it.

Another concern is that compromising photos or videos of a child may fall into the hands of a paedophile and may be used for illegal purposes, such as images to groom other children.

Another unintended consequence of sexting between children is that some of these images or video messages of children may be regarded as ***child pornography***.



An Interpretation of the Law Protecting Abused Women and Children

Sending or sharing images or video messages may therefore constitute a contravention of legislation prohibiting the possession, distribution, creation or production of child pornography.

This may result in children being prosecuted on very serious charges, with serious consequences, for something they do not necessarily regard as wrong or illegal.

5.1.1.2 The Association between Cyber Bullying and Sexting

There is a definite association between Cyber Bullying and Sexting. In the cases where a relationship were ended, and the boyfriend (or the girlfriend) want to take revenge on the break-up by sending the private messages that may include nude images, to all of his contacts.

Friends share intimate detail, and these friends may have a quarrel or misunderstanding and become *frenemies* (a slang teenage term use to describe close friends that became enemies). The intimate detail shared, would now become a cyber-weapon to avenge their heartache.



5.1.2 The Effect of Cyber Bullying

The psychological effect of Cyber Bullying is more traumatising than physical bullying, due to the fact of the extreme public nature of the bullying. The victim is humiliated online and exposed to almost the whole world.

For the purpose of this thesis, the candidate had several interviews with children between the ages of eight and sixteen with their parent's consent to answer a simple questionnaire. Teachers were also involved and wanted to assist in this study to confirm the effect Cyber Bullying has on the victim's schoolwork.

There is limited research on Cyber Bullying and Sexting in South Africa. As such, it is not clear how many children are involved in these practices. The number of children subjected to Cyber Bullying is also unknown.

A survey of Cyber Bullying should have these questions on top of their list:

Have you been CB?

Do you know a CBully?

Was a friend of yours CB?

Was the CBully caught?

Was the CB's parents informed?



5.1.3 Cyber Bullying in South Africa

The Centre for Justice and Crime Prevention (CJCP)⁵⁰ conducted a preliminary study in 2009 among 1 726 adolescents between the ages of 12 and 24 years. The study found that 46.8% of the participants had experienced some form of cyber bullying.

Another study showed that there appears to be a relationship between young people who commit cyber bullying and those who are the victims of cyber bullying: 69.7% of the study respondents who had bullied others via text messaging had themselves been bullied.

A study conducted in Nelson Mandela Bay, Port Elizabeth, among 1 594 primary and secondary school learners indicated that 36% of the respondents had experienced some form of cyber bullying.⁵¹

A more recent study on online victimisation of children conducted by the Youth Research Unit of the Bureau of Market Research at the University of South Africa⁵² discovered that:

- 21.46% of high school children surveyed were approached with “unwanted talk about sex”
- 17.79% said they had received e-mails of “unwanted talk about sex”

⁵⁰ CJCP Research: <http://cjcp.skinthecat.co.za/?p=research&s=CJCPData>

⁵¹ Cyber Bulling Report: http://www.eoc.org.hk/EOC/Upload/ResearchReport/SH_eFullReport.pdf

⁵² Unisa Study: <http://www.unisa.ac.za/Default.asp?Cmd=ViewContent&ContentID=20253>



An Interpretation of the Law Protecting Abused Women and Children

- 69.7% said those who were a Cyber Bully was bullied by others
- 16.95% had opened advertisement messages or internet links with images of naked people or people having sex;
- 16.6% had been probed for sexual information about themselves
- 14.27% were concerned or felt threatened by online harassment
- 9.9% said they had been requested to 'do something sexual'.

5.2 Reported Cases Of Cyber Bullying And Sexting In South Africa

Local media has reported of Cyber Bullying and Sexting across South Africa.⁵³ Some are not familiar with these terms and are not sure what can be done if one fall victim for bullying online. The following cases have been reported:

August 2013: A Hyde Park High School teacher was suspended for allegedly sending a 16-year-old pupil a naked picture of himself, Eyewitness News reported.

According to the report, the teacher is out on bail after the mother laid criminal charges against him.⁵⁴ The Gauteng education department said an independent

⁵³ Cyber Bulling in Media: <http://www.news24.com/Technology/News/Parents-can-act-over-cyber-bullying-20130814>

⁵⁴ Eyewitness News: <http://www.news24.com/SouthAfrica/News/Teacher-sends-boy-naked-pic-of-himself-20131007>



An Interpretation of the Law Protecting Abused Women and Children

investigation has been launched into how the school and the district office handled the case.

September 2013. Sheriff Grady Judd said that Rebecca Ann Sedwick jumped to her death on Monday at an old cement facility in Lakeland, Florida. Investigators said she had been despondent after other girls had posted hateful messages about her online.

The Lakeland Ledger reported that detectives found multiple social media applications in which Sedwick was frequently bullied with messages including "Go kill yourself," and "Why are you still alive?"

Judd stated that the parents of all 15 girls, believed to have been involved in the bullying, have cooperated with detectives, and that several mobile phones and laptops have been confiscated. He said charges, including cyber-stalking, could be filed.⁵⁵

April 2013. The death of Rehtaeh Parsons, a 17-year-old from Halifax, Nova Scotia, Canada, had international attention on the issue of Cyber Bullying. Parsons was taken off life support following a suicide attempt that her parents said came after months of sustained harassment following an alleged November 2011 sexual assault, when she was 15.

Mobile phone images of the alleged assault circulated among her classmates and on social media sites. The Police closed a preliminary investigation without filing charges, citing insufficient evidence, only to reopen it following a national

⁵⁵ Cyber Bullying Cases: <http://america.aljazeera.com/articles/2013/9/12/bullied-12-year-oldusgirlcommits-suicide.html>



An Interpretation of the Law Protecting Abused Women and Children

outcry and an Internet campaign that claimed to have uncovered new evidence of the assault and the bullying that followed.

The arrests come the day after a new Cyber Bullying law came into effect in Nova Scotia, the first of its kind in Canada.⁵⁶

October 2010: The death of Kathleen Edwards, a 9 year old girl from Michigan with Huntington's disease.⁵⁷ Kathleen's story received national attention when, in October 2010, she was cruelly taunted by her grandmother's next door neighbour.

The neighbour, Jennifer Petkov, posted images on Facebook of Kathleen's face with her eyes closed and a pair crossed bones beneath them, and a picture of Kathleen's mother and the Grim Reaper. Petkov was reportedly in a feud with Kathleen's family.⁵⁸

April 2012: Grace McComas, committed suicide on Easter Sunday, a victim, according to her parents, of several months of cyber bullying. Grace's death received amplified attention after the McComas family released a heart-breaking video on her life that was viewed by thousands; friends organized a memorial where mourners wore blue, her favourite colour; county schools arranged forums and seminars on bullying.

⁵⁶ Cyber Bullying Cases: <http://www.reuters.com/article/2013/08/08/net-us-bullying-idUSBRE9770VZ20130808>

⁵⁷ **Huntington's disease** is a severe neurodegenerative disease. It's passed down through families as a genetic defect on chromosome 4. The defect causes a part of the DNA to repeat itself many more times than it is supposed to and results in the brain wasting away.

⁵⁸ Cyber Bullying Cases: <http://www.foxnews.com/health/2012/01/12/cyber-bullying-highlighted-in-death-year-old-girl/>



An Interpretation of the Law Protecting Abused Women and Children

In May, Ravens running back Ray Rice headed up a countywide anti-bullying event, where Grace's father, Dave McComas, fighting tears, read aloud some of the disturbing messages his daughter had received.

"i hatehatehatehatehatehate you. Next time my name rolls off your tongue, choke on it.. and DIE" (sic) was only one of the messages this child received.⁵⁹

5.3 Legislation Of Cyber Bullying In South Africa

Responses in South Africa to both cyber bullying and sexting are fragmented and depend on several pieces of legislation, common law descriptions of criminal offences and civil law remedies in cases. Generally, the undesirable acts disregard the relevant provisions of existing criminal law legislation, fit common law or statutory crime definitions, or meet the requirements for civil law preparations.⁶⁰

South Africa does not have specific legislation dealing with cyber bullying, at this stage, it would fall under the definition of *harassment*. The victims of cyber bullying have to depend on preparations offered by the criminal law and/or civil law. The legal consequences and preparations that will be discussed below are applicable to all cyber bullies. It is available to all victims of cyber bullying, irrespective of the ages of the cyber bully or the victim.

⁵⁹ Cyber Bullying Cases: <http://www.wtop.com/41/3236057/Parents-rally-around-bill-to-protect-children-from-cyberbullying>

⁶⁰ Cyber Bullying Legislation in SA: http://cyberbullying.ezipezi.com/assets/content-info.php?I_ID=4



An Interpretation of the Law Protecting Abused Women and Children

Depending on the nature of the acts of cyber bullying, the cyber bully may be criminally charged with the following criminal offences: *Crimen injuria*; *Assault*; *Criminal defamation*; and *Extortion*

5.3.1 *Crimen Injuria*

According to the SAPS⁶¹ *Crimen injuria* consist of unlawfully and intentionally impairing the dignity or privacy of another person.

In this instance, both a subjective and objective test is applied to determine whether or not a person's dignity has been violated. It must be clear that the victim is aware of the cyber bully's offending behaviour, and the victim must prove that he/she felt degraded or humiliated by it.

It is not required that the cyber bully's words or conduct should have come to the attention of people other than the victim: the victim's dignity may be infringed upon even if a third party was unaware of it.

Cyber Bullies of acts of cyber bullying which violate the dignity of another person and meet the other requirements of this criminal offence may therefore be charged with *crimen iniuria*. This crime can also be committed by communicating to somebody else a message containing, expressly or implicitly, an invitation to or a suggestion of sexual immorality or impropriety, or by sending indecent photos.⁶²

⁶¹ *Crimen Injuria*: http://www.saps.gov.za/crimestop/common_offence_definitions.htm

⁶² *Legal Interviews*



5.3.2 Assault

Assault consists of unlawfully and intentionally applying force to the person of another; inspiring a belief in another person that force is immediately to be applied to him or her; Assault with intent to cause grievous bodily harm. This is another form of assault, however, committed with the intention to cause serious bodily injury.⁶³

Indecent assault consists of unlawfully and intentionally assaulting, touching or holding another in circumstances in which either the act itself or the intention with which it is committed is indecent.⁶⁴

5.3.3 Criminal defamation

Defamation consists of the unlawful and intentional publication of matter that impairs another person's reputation.⁶⁵

Criminal defamation includes both verbal and written defamation. It is a requirement that the defamatory conduct or words must have come to the notice of someone other than the victim. If not, the cyber bully can only be charged with *crimen iniuria*. Defamatory statements in chat rooms, on social networking sites, e-mails, text messages or instant messages to third parties are several of the methods of committing cyber bullying that will fall within the domain of this offence.

⁶³ Assault: http://www.saps.gov.za/crimestop/common_offence_definitions.htm

⁶⁴ Indecent Assault: http://www.saps.gov.za/crimestop/common_offence_definitions.htm

⁶⁵ Defamation: http://www.saps.gov.za/crimestop/common_offence_definitions.htm



5.3.4 Extortion

It consists of taking from another some patrimonial or non-patrimonial advantage by intentionally and unlawfully subjecting that person to pressure which induces him or her to submit to the taking.⁶⁶

Extortion may be committed where a cyber bully intentionally and unlawfully threatens to electronically distribute information or compromising images of another person unless the victim hand the cyber bully some advantage.

5.3.5 An Interdict And A Defamation Claim

An application for an interdict may be brought in the High Court for an order restraining a person from committing or continuing a wrongful act. This remedy is also available where someone has been threatened with a wrongful act.

The applicant in this instance may also sue for defamation and claim for damages, where he or she has suffered an injury to his or her dignity, and/or an injury to his or her good name and reputation as a result of the wrongful act or threat.

⁶⁶ Extortion: http://www.saps.gov.za/crimestop/common_offence_definitions.htm



5.4 Legislation of Sexting in South Africa

Children have the constitutional right to privacy, which includes the privacy of their communication. They also have the right to freedom of expression, which includes freedom of the press and other media, and the freedom to receive or impart information and ideas. Any response to sexting among children must take these constitutional rights into consideration.

South Africa does not have any legislation at this time dealing specifically with the sending or sharing of exposed or semi-exposed images or videos and/or sexually suggestive messages of children via mobile phone messaging between children.

Any legal response to sexting will fall within the domain of child pornography, which is prohibited in terms of the Films and Publications Act, 1996 (Act 65 of 1996), the Films and Publications Amendment Act, 2009 (Act 3 of 2009)⁶⁷ and the Criminal Law (Sexual Offences and Related Matters) Amendment Act, 2007 (Act 32 of 2007).

The Criminal Law (Sexual Offences and Related Matters) Amendment Act, 2007 Child pornography is defined in the Criminal Law (Sexual Offences and Related Matters) Amendment Act, 2007⁶⁸ as *any image, however created, or any description or presentation of a person, real or simulated, who is, or who is depicted or described or presented as being, under the age of 18 years, of an explicit or sexual nature, whether such image or description or presentation is*

⁶⁷ Films and Publications Act of SA: <http://www.info.gov.za/view/DownloadFileAction?id=106329>

⁶⁸ Amendment: <http://www.pmg.org.za/docs/2007/071019amaendments.htm>



An Interpretation of the Law Protecting Abused Women and Children

intended to stimulate erotic or aesthetic feelings or not, including any such image or description of such person

- (a) engaged in an act that constitutes a sexual offence;
- (b) engaged in an act of sexual penetration;
- (c) engaged in an act of sexual violation;
- (d) engaged in an act of self-masturbation;
- (e) displaying the genital organs of such person in a state of arousal or stimulation;
- (f) unduly displaying the genital organs or anus of such person;
- (g) displaying any form of stimulation of a sexual nature of such person's breasts;
- (h) engaged in sexually suggestive or lewd acts;
- (i) engaged in or as the subject of sadistic or masochistic acts of a sexual nature;
- (j) engaged in any conduct or activity characteristically associated with sexual intercourse;
- (k) showing or describing such person
 - 1. participating in, or assisting or facilitating another person to participate in; or
 - 2. being in the presence of another person who commits or in any other manner being involved in, any act contemplated in paragraphs (a) to (j); or
- (l) showing or describing the body, or parts of the body, of such person in a manner or in circumstances which, within the context, violate or offend the sexual integrity or dignity of that person or any category of persons



An Interpretation of the Law Protecting Abused Women and Children

under 18 or is capable of being used for the purposes of violating or offending the sexual integrity or dignity of that person, any person or group or categories of persons.

Therefore, it can then be stated that if a child sends an image of genital organs, anus or female breasts to another child, he or she runs the risk of being charged and convicted of violating this law.

Also, if a child supports, assists, encourages, provokes, initiates, instructs, orders, advices or procures another child to take and send such an image of the latter to the first child or any other person, he or she will be liable in terms of section 55 of the Act.

In terms of section 54 of this Act, a person who has knowledge that a sexual offence has been committed against a child (exposure to or displaying of genital organs, anus or female breasts to a child, or exposure or display of child pornography to a child) must immediately be reported to police. Failure to report such evidence is also an offence, and if convicted the person can be sentenced to a fine or imprisonment for a period not exceeding five years, or to both a fine and such imprisonment.⁶⁹

⁶⁹ *Legal Interviews*



6. SHELTERS AND HOMES FOR BATTERED WOMEN AND THEIR CHILDREN IN SOUTH AFRICA

Sheltering and safe homes for South African women are available, but cannot and do not want to be named due to the fact that some abusers are too violent for the staff to handle, and the victims must be protected.

Shelter 1 had problems with an abuser; he intimidated and assaulted a police officer to locate his wife and nine month old baby. The police officer was taken to hospital and stated that it was a drunken man's doing. The Shelter was overwhelmed by this abuser and he caused havoc. They manage to restrain him and assured him that his wife and child were already taken to another shelter in the main city.

This Shelter is away from the main roads and hard to find. The rooms consists of single beds, some mothers push two single beds next to each other to have a big family bed, or only use one single bed if the child is a pre-schooler. They accommodate abused women with their children for up to two months or longer depending on the level of abuse she went through. Sometimes they assist the women through a divorce.

Shelter 2 and 6 had similar situations, but managed to redirect the abuser to a different city. This shelter is highly overprotective of the women and children arriving at their premises. It is neat and has a calm atmosphere. There is a twin stack beds in every room, with a cupboard and mirror for the larger family or two small families.



An Interpretation of the Law Protecting Abused Women and Children

Mothers with babies are supplied with a cot and basic baby needs. They can accommodate abused women and children for an approximate three week period. Thereafter a family member must take them in or they are transferred to another shelter or home.

Shelter 3 is a great resource to two police stations in a high class community. The "Shelter" itself protects the victim and her children's names due to the abuser's high social status. Divorces are treated highly confidential and mediators forms part of the negotiations and divorce settlement.

The victim however, has to pay a certain amount once she is free from her abuser at the time of the divorce. This shelter assists their victims in setting up in new homes. Court interdicts are usually in place if the abuser is a physical threat. The abuser almost always agrees to an informal interdict drawn up by the mediator to protect his identity and cause of divorce.

This shelter can be described as a high class hotel. It is luxurious and the abusers usually settle the account depending on the divorce settlement. Children are transferred to their school or colleges by the driver. The security is on a much higher level than of a standard shelter or home. Women get transferred to their attorney's offices through a chain of at least five vehicles. Women of a high class society are treated as royalty; with high security and convenience.

Shelter 4, 5 and 8 is located in rural areas in South Africa. With no incoming funds, a few women donate second hand clothing, toys, baby wear and gear, and basic foods to the shelter. There are no beds; the mattresses are worn out, and have a vulgar odour. Their main concern is to have a roof over their



An Interpretation of the Law Protecting Abused Women and Children

victim's head and a blanket for the children. And of course, free from a violent abuser.

The shelter serves as a crèche cum pre-school and the mothers are only allowed in past seven in the evening, to protect the shelter. The mothers are motivated to find any domestic work. There are many domestic workers that ask their employer for old clothing, blankets, toilet paper and soap.

The employers are usually so grateful; it gives them the opportunity to clean the house properly, unaware that these second hand items helps a shelter for abused women along with their children.

Shelter 7 is also in a rural area, but clouded with drug use. The mothers of young children that used "Tik"⁷⁰ had difficulty to control their need and are usually asked to leave the premises for the sake of other mothers and their children. The close relatives are informed most of the time to fetch the children before they are placed in foster care. The mother finds herself alone, with no children; and she heads back to her abuser.

Shelters in general differ from each other. It is not possible to compare a shelter in Sandton, Johannesburg to a shelter in any rural area in the country. There are women that became aware of the need of shelters in an area, and started with someone's home as a base. Shelters is not a priority in this country, women are left with no choice but to protect themselves.

⁷⁰ **Tik (Crystal Methamphetamine)** is an odourless, crystal-like substance. It is a stimulant that speeds-up the functioning of the vital organs e.g. heart. It is highly addictive and harms the functioning of the Central Nervous System. It is characterised by hallucinations (e.g. seeing and hearing things that are not true/real), extreme paranoia, delusions as well as violent outbursts due to panic and fear.
http://www.drugcentre.org.za/druginfo_tik.html



An Interpretation of the Law Protecting Abused Women and Children

7. CONCLUSION

This study of the few researches done in South Africa over the past 15 years or so has proved that abuse cases are not treated as a true crime. This however makes the journey of ending the abuse impossible.

Women are in fact indirectly forced to return to their abuser due to the lack of support by the SAPS and the legal system, it can therefore be assumed that these two parties fails the abused women of South Africa.

The legal system however is quite unique and other countries use South Africa's DVA as basis for their own acts. The legal system is not failing the South African women, the people in the system is problem. The battered woman has challenges in this system.

The question however arises of how can a battered woman know what her rights is and how the process the work if it was never explained to her. The abused woman does not know what she can do legally to stop the abuser from harming her again.

Cyber bullying and sexting has shown that it is a new subject of discussion in parliament, or in any other country. It is a new law that must be assembled for justice of those who commit cyber bullying and to protect victims of cyber bullying and sexting. The only lawful thing to do is to get a something similar to a protection order against the cyber bully as in the case of abused women.

Researches proved that women in general never heard of the steps to apply for a protection order. The protection order is breached by the perpetrator, and he



An Interpretation of the Law Protecting Abused Women and Children

is not arrested immediately. Some women confessed that the police only gave him a warning.

In some cases of domestic violence where alcohol played a role, the police confided in the perpetrator leaving the distraught woman and her children in awe. Abusers confessed that they simply offer the police officer a drink and everything's forgotten. Some women witnessed this and stated that they cannot trust a police officer.

Female officers are not common to see when dispatched. They are usually on duty in daytime. But women across the country stated that they would rather confide in a female police officer than a male for the simple reason that the female officer "cares." Male police officers of all races are not compassionate towards women that experienced abused. Women are ultimately forced to protect themselves against abusers.

It appeared from this study and research that black women of South Africa are treated less serious than white women. This thesis concluded that it is physical difficult to recognize physical abuse at black women. Black women get attention if they can show blood, bruises are hard to identify on their darker skin, which is very unfortunate for them but devastating for the candidate of this thesis.

oooOooo



An Interpretation of the Law Protecting Abused Women and Children

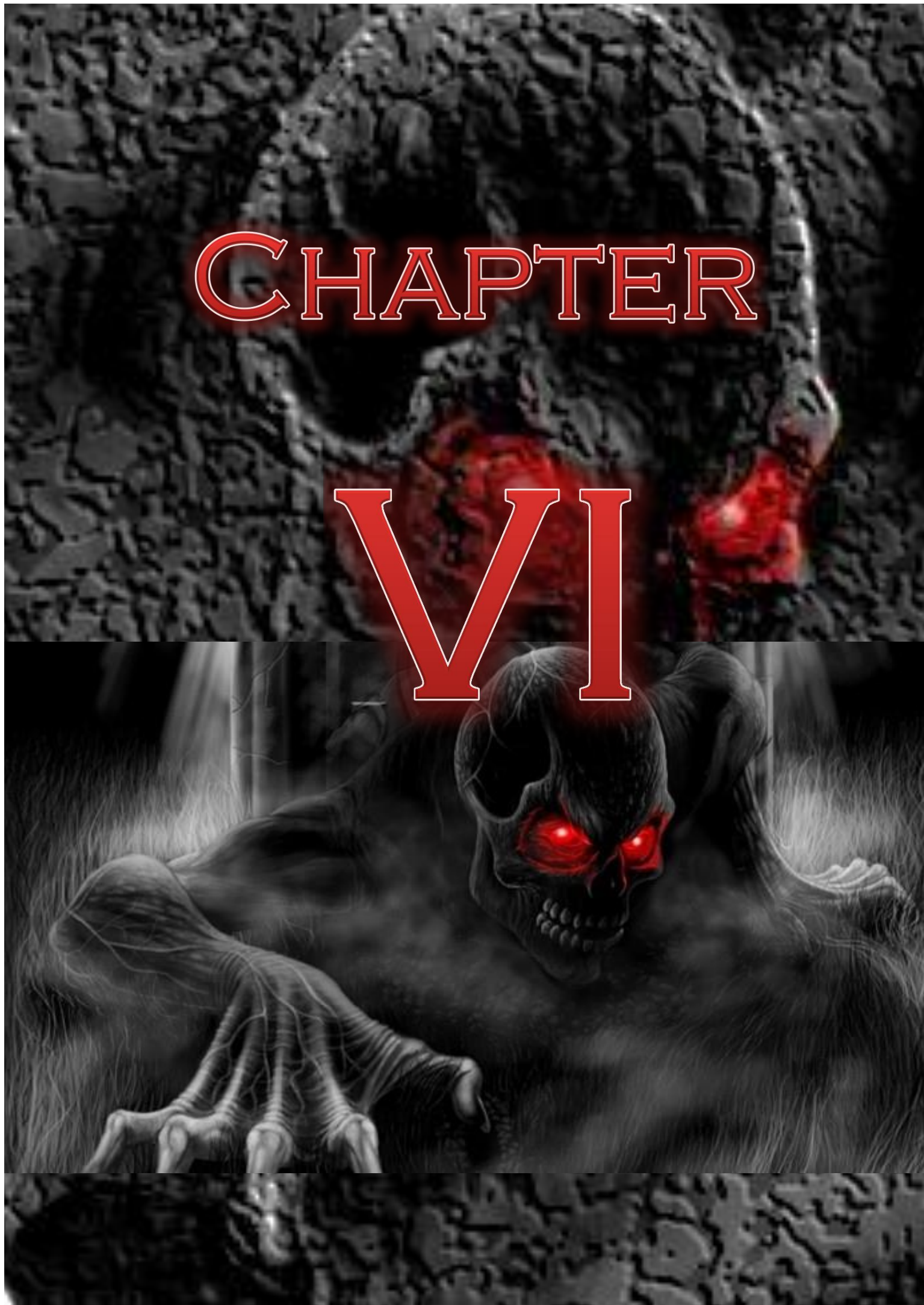
*Why should I fear when evil days come, when wicked deceivers surround
me – those who trust in their wealth and boast of their great riches?*

No one can redeem the life of another or give to God a ransom for them.

Psalms 49:5-7

CHAPTER

VI





AN INVESTIGATION OF THE EVIL SUPERNATURALISM OF THE ENEMY'S OBJECTIVE BEHIND ABUSE

*If you say, "The LORD is my refuge, and you make the Most High
your dwelling, no harm will overtake you, no disaster will come near
your tent.*

Psalm 91:9-10

1. INTRODUCTION

This Chapter will discuss the evil supernaturalism of the enemy's objective behind abuse in all its forms. It will pursue the works of the spiritual enemy and his motive behind abuse and how it involves God in his plan to bring destruction on a psychological level to humankind, but with spiritual consequences that is parting man with God.

Man was created in the image of God, and a woman from a man. Women are men's support system, and the spiritual enemy has a modus operandi to destroy this flawless family system. The spiritual enemy uses his evil spiritual



An Investigation of the Evil Supernaturalism of the Enemy's Objective Behind Abuse

realm to destroy mankind abuse as a whole. However, his evil spirits must be investigated and exposed for who they are and what their functions might be. These demonic spirits must be exposed to address them in deliverance. Mankind needs to be free from demonic activity that they are not aware of.

The demonology behind physical, verbal, emotional and sexual abuse is overwhelming. Some spiritual behaviour has been published, but not all could be named in one written book. The demonology is a phenomenal network of spirits working side by side, being associated with another spirit, paving the way for another stronger spirit, or even working against each other.

There is a tremendous spiritual cycle that keeps on repeating itself. There are many literature written on *Generational Cycles* in the family pertaining to abuse, unfortunately no form of literature captured the demonic activity as a whole from a spiritual point of view, specifically focussing on abuse spirits, stating what specific spirits needs to be addressed. This thesis will attempt to bring forth the demonology of abuse.

2. THE WORKS OF THE SPIRITUAL ENEMY IN ABUSE

There is the Spirit of Control that needs to be address here: Jezebel. Jezebel is known as the Queen of Satan, the Spirit of Seduction and Lust. This is a very strong spirit in operation and a powerful enemy to the body of Christ. This spirit's modus operandi is to kill, steal and destroy. Jezebel will cause havoc in the Church and come after its members.



An Investigation of the Evil Supernaturalism of the Enemy's Objective Behind Abuse

It was discussed earlier in this thesis how Church leaders were convicted of abuse and sentenced to prison. In Chapter II cults were discussed, the leaders claimed to be the new messiah or the son of God; only for the world to find nothing but sexual abuse in the cult – and the world questions God.

This Jezebel spirit controls everyone, even the leader of the church with the assistance of the Spirit of Religion. Religion keeps every person in the belief of patriarchy; the rituals every person did because his father did so; there are no new views accepted in the Church, because it is simply not done.

The Spirit of Self Righteousness will keep these people in their simple ritual beliefs. In many churches globally it was found that some members were offended, they began to distrust one another, then betrayal stepped in with hatred. The whole church is in a chaotic state and members stop returning to services.

Case Study: Fort Mills, South California

In the late 1970s to early 1980s a 2,200 acre estate arises in Fort Mills, South California (USA) to make evangelism reach people through television across the nations. Multiple outreach ministries were in operation there.

It had a ministry for the homeless, abused women and children, the elderly, and it reunited families. It was a place where there was healing for the sick, physically and spiritually, and a constant teaching of the Word of God.¹

¹ Benson, Vicky (2010) Recognizing the Spirits of Jezebel and Its Attributes. USA: Zulon Press.p.24



An Investigation of the Evil Supernaturalism of the Enemy's Objective Behind Abuse

The perfect target for the Jezebel Spirit was to infiltrate and cause chaos. Jezebel despise successful ministries like this, she must introduce her spirits to the ministry: Spirit of Perversion, Spirit of Adultery, and Spirit of Homosexuality have succeeded in their mission to destroy this once multimillion dollar ministry.

*Jim Bakker became known for his adultery scandal in 1980 with a church secretary, Jessica Hahn. In 2011 Hahn appeared on the "The View" show with Barbara Walters, Bakker use to say to Hahn that when she is helping the sheppard, she is helping the sheep... As God is my witness...*²

Bakker was clearly already overwhelmed by this spirit. The New York Times reported that 13 million households were reached through the *Praise The Lord* (PTL) show and the estate grew to a value of more than \$125 million. In 1987 the ministry tumbled when it was revealed that Bakker was sexually involved with Hahn and that he paid her \$265,000 for her silence.

Bakker's wife, Tammy Faye, was embraced by gay-men making her the subject of gender-bending look-alike contests. Tammy Faye divorced Bakker three years after his sentence.³

The first thing this Spirit plants is unforgiveness in the people's hearts. This is a great example of a leader abusing his authority in the name of the Lord to become a financial leader of paying off women not to expose a scandal.

² Jessica Hahn: <http://www.examiner.com/article/Jessica-hahn-remembers-jim-bakker-scandal-i-don't-call-it-rape-video>

³ Tammy Faye Bakker: http://www.nytimes.com/2007/07/22/us/22bakker.html?_r=0



An Investigation of the Evil Supernaturalism of the Enemy's Objective Behind Abuse

One way this spirit operates is by establishing doubt in the church body, specifically those who have authority. A strong instrument is gossip and slander. This spirit will operate in sincere believers whose desire is to have a heart for God, but instead desire a higher position in the church.

¹² See to it, brothers and sisters, that none of you has a sinful, unbelieving heart that turns away from the living God. ¹³ But encourage one another daily, as long as it is called "Today," so that none of you may be hardened by sin's deceitfulness.

Hebrews 3:12-13

The Jezebel Spirit is known for deception; many people do not know if this spirit is working or manifesting through them or not. Even the most devoted Christians can be deceived by adhering to gossip; this spirit befriends everyone at first.⁴

2.1 Jezebel And Unforgiveness

Unforgiveness plays the starring role in every unhealed relationship. From Jezebel's spirits of unforgiveness comes her spirits of judgments. The spirits would have a person believe that they are surrounded by people who do unforgivable things; due to the fact that it is their function and purpose. They make a person believe that unforgiveness is natural and normal.

⁴ Benson, Vicky (2010) Recognizing the Spirits of Jezebel and Its Attributes. USA: Zulon Press.p.29



An Investigation of the Evil Supernaturalism of the Enemy's Objective Behind Abuse

An unforgiving demonic infused mind has its own agenda. It includes distorting what is real until it is barely recognizable. The mind is filled with numerous mixed and conflicting goals.

The unforgiving spirit convince a person that everything is unpleasant or wrong and is the other person's fault, and that people do unforgivable things that they will not be punished for.

The Spirits of Judgement and Righteousness condemn the themes for the script of Unforgiveness, they control the mind to write the wrong script. No one else can write prejudices and judgements into relationships except for these spirits, making the person believe that no one else has the ability to choose forgiveness.

When the choice is made to keep a relationship unhealed, Unforgiveness has accomplished his mission. The way people experience a relationship is primarily through the projected demonic thoughts that produces feelings of unforgiveness. It is these spirits that condemns the mind to think of forgiveness and this will keep that person's mind in captivity of unforgiveness.

2.1.1 Jezebel And Bitterness

The Spirit of Rebellion has several apprentices, one of which is the Spirit of Bitterness. Bitterness opens a door by which the Jezebelic spirit slithers into a person's soul undetected.



An Investigation of the Evil Supernaturalism of the Enemy's Objective Behind Abuse

***See to it that no one falls short of the grace of God and that
no bitter root grows up to cause trouble and defile many.***

Hebrews 12:15

Bitterness resides in the soul, due to the fact that it is a mental stronghold linked to the Spirits of Selfishness and Pride. Since Bitterness is often a reaction to a perceived injustice or to unjust authority, it will provoke a person to react against all authority in rebellion, whether just or unjust.

Therefore Bitterness brings despair, but since it is tied to Pride, this despair will drive a person to design schemes that promote their powers.

Bitterness may birth immorality, or lifelong anger and resentment, or a pattern of broken relationships. Moreover, a Spirit of Bitterness is contagious. A bitter spirit will infect the spirit of many others.⁵ Bitterness is truly sinful.

It deeply damages an individual and leads to lawlessness. The Spirit of Rebellion is a destructive force and is born out of the Spirits of Envy and Pride.

⁵ Jackson, John P. (2001) Unmasking The Jezebel Spirit. UK: Kingsway Communications.pp.91-92



2.2 Jezebel's Right Wings

The Jezebel spirit is very religious. It dwells in the churches but disapproves the authority unless the individual is in the position of authority. People can be misled very easily and very often by the religious façade of a Jezebelic individual. A Jezebel tricks an individual into a deep revelation of Scripture, which is in fact abusing Scripture to twist the Truth of the Word of God.

2.2.1 *The Spirit of Religion*

The main spirit reporting back from the churches to her is the Spirit of Religion. Religion's primary strategy is to promote the idea that belonging to a Christian Church or by doing religious duties, is what is getting people saved.

Religion keeps unsaved people from being saved. It keeps people in its religious belief for example, the Japanese would remain committed to the Sun Goddess or the Thai people will remain committed to Buddha and so forth.

Religion exerts tremendous control over minds and souls. Its main priority is to keep every soul on this earth unsaved. The modus operandi of Religion can be summarized in the book of Daniel 7:25:

He will speak against the Most high and oppress his holy people and try to change the set times and the laws.



An Investigation of the Evil Supernaturalism of the Enemy's Objective Behind Abuse

***The holy people will be delivered into his hands for a time,
times and half a time.***

Daniel 7:25

- a) To slander God's character and intent
- b) To oppress God's people through fear and discouragement
- c) To delay the emergence of the new times and seasons that God has set for His Kingdom's advancement
- d) To promote the creeping rise of liberalism or disloyalty to God's laws and ways
- e) To persecute the saints out rightly

Religion keeps people from their chosen path or the partners one should have had on the chosen path. This spirit seduces a person into the wrong path, further away from God and His righteousness. Religion is pleased with cults that are abusing their authority to isolate a few followers off on the wrong path.

Religious leaders can actually be living holy lives and still be under the influence of Religion. It causes people to think the wrong thoughts.⁶

Religion has the capability of making the abuser believe that the father abused his wife, therefor he can abuse his wife. If the abusers have a second thought, Religion will remind him that the Bible says to *honour your father*.

⁶ Wagner, C. Peter (2005) Freedom from the Religious Spirit: Understanding How Deceptive Religious Forces Try To Destroy God's Plan And Purpose For His Church. USA: Regal Books.p.17



In any situation of abuse, taking advantage of someone to have a promotion, in other words abusing that person to have a promotion, comes down to the fact that this person are of the opinion that "my father did it, so can I." Religion establishes the patriarch belief of a family leader that is an example for the whole family, and his ways are acceptable.

2.2.2 The Spirit of Athaliah

A spirit that cannot be overlooked is the Spirit of Athaliah, also known as the daughter of Jezebel. Athaliah targets and attacks the generations of a family in order to ultimately destroy the family unit, and she is powerful enough to eventually destroy a nation.

This spirit was active with the case studies discussed in Chapter I of Nero, who persecuted Christians and made human torches of them to light up his courtyard at night. Hitler was able to seduce the minds of an entire nation to elect him as a leader of Germany with extreme consequences.

Mengele was discussed in Chapter I to show what Hitler allowed to be done to human beings. This historical event is living proof of Ataliah's attempt to destroy the Lord's people, the Jews. Hitler was a puppet of Ataliah to destroy the Jewish generations, while seeking world domination.⁷

⁷ Freed, Sandie (2008) Breaking the Threefold Demonic Cord. USA: Chosen Books.p.104



Ataliah will attempt to destroy the bride of Christ, the Church. New ideas like "man is a god" are circulation discussion rooms. The Bible is being abused to validate their "new" ideas and conclusions. These men are in an authoritative position that is making decisions on the method of spreading the Word of God, but in a twisted manner.

2.2.3 The Spirit of Manipulation

The Spirit of Manipulation has the ultimate desire to establish ungodly control. This spirit is almost an ancient spirit; the Jezebel Spirit was in fact a scholar of Manipulation. Manipulation taught her how to become a spirit with great controlling powers.

People who allow this spirit into their lives have perceived inner weakness and lack of faith in God. When one is not sure who he is in Christ and trust Him to guide his life, he will begin to resort from choosing any other plan except for God's plan. People that are easily manipulated can also make use of Manipulation to play the victim in abusive situations.

The Abuser manipulates others, especially those who discovered the abusive circumstances, to believe in his "mistakes" and "uncontrollable anger" or usually the pressures at work are the culprit for his abusive behaviour.



2.2.4 Spirit of Self Righteousness

This spirit entices people to focus on themselves and on carnal things, rather than spiritual things. The following are a few to name what this spirit is capable of:

- It will cause a Christian to worship and pray with carnal motives: it is not about the worship or prayer, it is simply to impress the other church-goers.
- This spirit will cause people to participate in dead works. It is ministries that are implemented for soulish reasons.
- It can also be responsible for Christians not being able to forgive others of their sins or mistakes and judge them of their failures. This results in Christians being loveless, merciless, and compassionless.
- This spirit may push its victim to have a desire to be in control.⁸

2.2.5 The Spirit of Rejection

Many abusers would return to their victim being very apologetic, and highly emotional. They convince the victim of their agape love for them, which is in fact, false love. This false love is controlled by the Spirit of Rejection.

⁸ Wagner, C. Peter (2005) Freedom from the Religious Spirit: Understanding How Deceptive Religious Forces Try To Destroy God's Plan And Purpose For His Church. USA: Regal Books.pp.143-145



An Investigation of the Evil Supernaturalism of the Enemy's Objective Behind Abuse

Any person may be approached by a Spirit of False Love that makes way for the Spirit of Rejection. The Spirit of False Love establishes behaviour that is in fact of abusive nature.

Someone who does not believe in true love or its possibility, approach someone else in a critical manner. The critical person lives as someone who can just as well be without a beloved in his life.

The scrupulous person is very careful to show too much devotion to a person. They will hold back believing that God might come in second. These people feel guilty for wanting and needing a beloved, due to the fact that they are convinced that God might need them more.

Some people are only concerned with outward experiences of love. They do not have the love within them to give, but to take. They are convinced of sharing love is about quantity and not quality, they have a fear that the love will fade for not being materialistic.

Presumptuous people are in a comfort zone with their unacceptable behaviour while presuming the beloved will naturally understand and accept them for who they are. This is usually the verbal abusers that arise from this comfort zone. They are in need of an unconditional love regardless of their actions. They accept their bad habits and see no reason to work on their wrongful behaviour.



3. THE SPIRITUAL MOTIVE BEHIND ABUSE

Satan's name itself gives us the key to his motives. Satan means "the adversary". John the apostle said

"the devil sinneth from the beginning".

1 John 3:8 (KJV)

From the beginning when he was cast out of heaven, Satan set himself up in opposition to God and to God's purposes. Satan is the archenemy of God. And so the primary object of Satan's enmity is not Christians, or even unbelievers, but rather God Himself. He has not repented of his aspirations to God's throne and he is relentless in his pursuit of them.

Terms throughout Scripture such as, "as a roaring lion, walketh about" (1 Pet 5:8) and "straightway cometh Satan" (Mark 4:15) give the idea of the never-ending activity of Satan in opposition to God. The question arises of why God allow it? Surely it is within God's power right now to banish Satan to the lake of fire, which has specifically been prepared for him (Matt. 25:41). Still, why is Satan allowed to have the power he has?

In the answer to this question there is a given preview of the amazing sovereign works of God. Psalm 76:10 states that God makes even the wrath of men to praise Him as He did in the case of Pharaoh (Exod. 9:16). Similarly God permits Satan a degree of power over the human creation for His own divine purpose.



An Investigation of the Evil Supernaturalism of the Enemy's Objective Behind Abuse

It can be seen in the traumatic experiences of Job, of Peter and of the Lord Jesus Himself. The words of Joseph, you "meant evil against me; but God meant it for good" (Gen. 50:20) illustrate this principle. Thus, Satan's objective is to destroy (1 Pet. 5:8); and to destroy anything for God which is why he is so active in the spiritual affairs of people on this earth, by causing traumatic abusive experiences; God's eternal purpose revolves around people.

Christ did not "take hold" of the seed of angels but of the seed of Abraham (Heb. 2:16). God chose us, not the angels, in Christ before the foundation of the world (Eph. 1:4). Thus, the children of God, His Bride, are so central to the purpose and pleasure of God, Satan focuses his attacks on the Bride of Christ. In the case of unbelievers who hear the gospel, Satan's purpose is clear.

in which you used to live when you followed the ways of this world and of the ruler of the kingdom of the air, the spirit who is now at work in those who are disobedient.

Ephesians 2:2 (emphasis added)

The god of this age has blinded the minds of unbelievers, so that they cannot see the light of the gospel that displays the glory of Christ, who is the image of God.

2 Corinthians 4:4

God is being hindered by the adversary, as His Word is sown, the devil, like the birds of the air with seed, steals it before it can grow and result in life.⁹

⁹ Mark 4:15



An Investigation of the Evil Supernaturalism of the Enemy's Objective Behind Abuse

The man who said he is "Legion" in Luke 8:30 were possessed with numerous demonic spirits, and it only took the authority of Christ to release him. The woman with the blood disease is being referred to as having been bound by Satan according to Luke 13:16. She only touched the Lord's garment and was set free of her captivity. Jesus Christ brings life and Satan's greatest power is the power of death:

Since the children have flesh and blood, he too shared in their humanity so that by his death he might break the power of him who holds the power of death - that is, the devil

Hebrews 2:14 (emphasis added)

Satan's objectives will always, and ever has been, the same: to destroy everything that is of value for God.

In the case of the Lord's disciples in the New Testament, Jesus said to them:

Simon, Simon, Satan has asked to sift all of you as wheat.

Luke 22:31(NIV)

Satan's desire was to destroy; the Lord's desire was to preserve and to enable Peter, by this experience, to be strengthened for his purpose and works. Satan meant it for evil; God meant it for good. God utilize the evil motives and hostility of Satan to His own divine ends.



3.1 The Methods Of Satan

Satan's method is to deceive. He seldom attacks overtly or obviously, due to the fact that he stiffens resistance. But he can appear as an "angel of light" according to 2 Corinthians 11:14. This is an exceptional example of his deception as he is a roaring lion.

Ephesians 6:11 is warning against the trickeries of the devil, 2 Corinthians 2:11 states:

in order that Satan might not outwit us. For we are not unaware of his schemes.

Satan's primary power is to lead the children of God into temptation through his deceptive ways. Judas is an excellent case study.

The evening meal was in progress, and the devil had already prompted Judas, the son of Simon Iscariot, to betray Jesus.

John 13:2

Judas can as a matter of fact be seen as Satan himself, he needed a body and unfortunately it was Judas'. Satan did not give up on tempting Jesus; Jesus knew of Satan's presence:

After he had said this, Jesus was troubled in spirit and testified, "Very truly I tell you, one of you is going to betray me.

John 13:21 (emphasis added)

Jesus immediately knew when Satan was present, and prophesized of someone amongst them that will betray Him; then the following happened:



An Investigation of the Evil Supernaturalism of the Enemy's Objective Behind Abuse

As soon as Judas took the bread, Satan entered into him. So Jesus told him, "What you are about to do, do quickly."

John 13:27

The question arises of who Jesus addressed, was it Judas or simultaneously Satan too. The other disciples assumed there was an important financial mission for Judas to take care of, and indeed it was. He sold Jesus. Satan's apprentices was already controlling Judas' mind, the spiritual door was open for Satan to enter Judas. This could be a double message: Judas, betray me quickly; Satan, bring death quickly.

Satan must have started his feast when Jesus was on that cross about to die, he has power over death and he destroyed what God love most, His Son. Jesus knew he was staring death in the eyes, but he overpowered Satan by rising from the death, and be alive due to the living fact that Jesus Christ is Life.

In the New Testament epistles specific instances are given as to how Satan tempts various classes of believers:

- (i) he tempts husbands and wives to become selfish in their relationship with each other:

Do not deprive each other except perhaps by mutual consent and for a time, so that you may devote yourselves to prayer. Then come together again so that Satan will not tempt you because of your lack of self-control.

1 Corinthians 7:5



An Investigation of the Evil Supernaturalism of the Enemy's Objective Behind Abuse

- (ii) he entices overseers to be impressed with their own importance:

He must not be a recent convert, or he may become conceited and fall under the same judgment as the devil.

1 Tim. 3:6

- (iii) and saints to hold a grudge

¹⁰Anyone you forgive, I also forgive. And what I have forgiven—if there was anything to forgive—I have forgiven in the sight of Christ for your sake, ¹¹in order that Satan might not outwit us. For we are not unaware of his schemes.

2 Cor. 2:10,11

Satan's motive is to destroy God's purpose. He comes to steal, to kill, and to destroy humankind. The following Scripture tells how Satan seeks to destroy the godly process that will result in the vision of God for the Bride to be manifested.

If God's plan for His bride¹⁰ is put up like a banner, it is prevailed that Satan is in fact twisting the Truth of the Lord.¹¹ He wants to deceive God's bride and put up his own banner opposing God to accomplish His main purpose or assignment. Satan wants to be more important than God and if he can lead the bride astray, he will gain more followers, which means, more followers more power, control and authority for Satan. The assignment of Satan is consequently experienced through the attack of his evil spirits.

¹⁰ Genesis 1:26-28

¹¹ Genesis 3:1-7



Satan's prime strategy focuses on the destruction of family relationships. As God is the Father who created man in His image to be an earthly father to take care of the earth and all living things. God saw he was alone and created woman from his rib, to be man's support system. Man and woman became co-creators and brought forth children. This is troubling Satan and he will disrupt the relationship between man and God, damage relationships between man and wife, destruct relationships between parent and child.

4. THE IMAGE OF GOD AND MAN'S SUPPORT SYSTEM

Elohim is the name of God, the Almighty Creator, in Hebrew. It appears in the first sentence of the Bible. Elohim is the One who began it all, He created the heavens and earth; He separated light from darkness; and water from dry land; and night from day.

The plural form of *Elohim* is *El* or *Eloah*, one of the oldest titles for divinity in the world. The Hebrews plagiarized the term *El* from the Canaanites. It can refer to God or to the pagan gods. *El* is used over 200 times in the Hebrew Bible, *Elohim* is used beyond 2,500 times. Its plural form is used not to specify a belief in many gods but to emphasize the magnificence of God, the only Almighty God. *Elohim* occurs 32 times in the Chapter 1 of the book of Genesis.¹²

¹² Spangler, Ann (2004) *Praying the Names of God: A Daily Guide*. USA: Zondervan. pp.16-17



An Investigation of the Evil Supernaturalism of the Enemy's Objective Behind Abuse

The Hebrew name for God, Elohim, contains the thought of God's creative power as well as His authority and sovereignty. In the very first verse of the Bible, Genesis 1:1 it says:

In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth.

The first thing God created was the Heavens and secondly the earth. Then he organized the chaos, and finally created man. Every single person on this earth has a desire to be creative, from school years to the world of business. This is evidence for man of being created in the image of God, meaning, the blue print of man is of Godly origin, the only design of life God created in His image, was man and woman.

4.1 The Image Of God

God the Almighty Creator

The third verse, 2 Corinthians 4:4, is specifically in reference to Christ. It says,

"in whose case the god of this world has blinded the minds of the unbelieving, that they might not see the light of the gospel of the glory of Christ, who is the image of God."



An Investigation of the Evil Supernaturalism of the Enemy's Objective Behind Abuse

It is known that Jesus was in the likeness of God¹³ and is the exact presentation of the nature of the Father.¹⁴ Therefore, it can be understood why Paul says that Christ is the image of God. But Jesus is a perfect image of God, where man is not. Jesus never sinned¹⁵ and always did the will of the Father.¹⁶ The phrase "image of God" only appears three times in the Bible:

So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them.

Genesis 1:27

Whoso sheddeth man's blood, by man shall his blood be shed: for in the image of God made the man.

Genesis 9:6

In whom the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them.

2 Corinthians 4:4

When God created man, He said to Adam to name all the things on the earth and so forth. Adam did, but God saw Adam dwelled alone and it was not good. God the Creator was pleased with everything up until this point where Adam was alone. God said it was not good and realised he needs a partner, someone that can help him and support him – God created Eve from Adam's rib – his support system.

¹³ Philippians 2:5-8

¹⁴ Hebrews 1:3

¹⁵ 1 Peter 2:22

¹⁶ John 6:37-40



4.2 Man's Support System

*The man said, "This is now bone of my bones and flesh of my flesh;
she shall be called 'woman,' for she was taken out of man."*

Genesis 2:23 (NIV)

This is the first marriage and the original plan of God. This relationship is top priority among any relationship on earth. Man and Woman were to be inseparable; they cannot be divided. They were to truly know intimacy in the fullest sense of the word, far beyond what it is often think of as the one flesh relationship, the sexual union.

Sexuality was give to be the seal and celebration of a great intimacy which was intended to commence – heart, soul, and spirit. This relationship would reflect not only union between man and woman, but also with God.¹⁷

Paul says that the relationship described here represents Christ with the Church; man and woman in unity with each other and their Creator together showing forth the image of God.

*So ought men to love their wives as their own bodies. He that loveth
his wife loveth himself. For no man ever yet hated his own flesh;
but nourisheth and cherisheth it, even as the Lord the church: For
we are members of his body, of his bones.*

Ephesians 5:28-30(KJV)

¹⁷ Hansen, Jane (1997) Fashioned for Intimacy. USA: Regal Books.p.44



An Investigation of the Evil Supernaturalism of the Enemy's Objective Behind Abuse

The Bible confirms that man is considered the image and glory of God, the Father and that the woman is the glory of man:

For a man indeed ought not to cover his head forasmuch as he is the image and glory of God: but the woman is the glory of the man.

1 Corinthians 11:7(KJV)

Thus, it can then be said that a woman is a reflection of her man. A woman's appearance is a manifestation of her husband's true emotions. In other words: a happy woman with self-confidence, has a man that is confident in himself; whereas a haggard woman's man is the misogynist who is insecure with himself and probably abusing her.

Just as much is God a reflection on every man; if man is filled up with sin – God is absent, there is no relationship or communication. Any relationship needs a healthy dose of good communication to be close, without communication, the relationship will ultimately succumb.

5. DEMONOLOGY OF PHYSICAL ABUSE

Physical abuse can occur between man and woman, parent and child, or husband and wife. The dark forces of Satan's main purpose are to destroy precious relationships.

Demonic activity in Physical Abuse can be painted as a vicious portrait. The demons that is firing the abuser's actions are heartless and have no remorse



An Investigation of the Evil Supernaturalism of the Enemy's Objective Behind Abuse

whatsoever for the victim. They enjoy the entertainment of the abuser physically assaulting the victim blow after blow.

Spirits that is active in an abusive situation, is the spirits of anger, hatred, hurt, murder, death, force, dislike, loathing, detest, abomination, abhorrence, execration, imprecation, offend, damage, wound, pain, punish, bullying.

5.1 The Cycle of Abuse

Evil Spirits are involved with the abuse. The abuser refers to the person that is physically harming the victim, whether it is a husband that is the abuser and his wife is the victim, or a mother that is the abuser and the child the victim.

5.1.1 The Explosion

The Spirits of Hurt, Murder and Death work together with the Spirit of Force. They inspire the abuser to hurt the victim physically, Murder wants to kill the victim's spirit and Death wait for the victim to give in and die spiritually. Force is the strength and power behind the blows; he has no remorse for the victim, it is his function to give the abuser overpowering strength for the victim not to fight back physically.

Many abused women¹⁸ stated that their abusers had phenomenal strength, and significantly, that *it was not his eyes*. Children that were interviewed specifically for the purpose of physical abuse they

¹⁸ Interview: Woman - Abused



An Investigation of the Evil Supernaturalism of the Enemy's Objective Behind Abuse

experienced from their mother said their mother's face changed *to a monster-like* face.

The Spirits of Pain, Punish and Bullying works with Force. The Spirit of Pain wants to see the victim in pain and cause pain to the victim's spirit. The Spirits of Punish and Bullying work together to cause continuity of the abuse. They are two spirits that gets their orders from the Spirit of Torture.

In any physical abuse situation verbal and emotional abuse plays a great role along with the Spirit of Hate and his adherents: the Spirits of Dislike, Loathing, Detest, Abomination and Abhorrence; the Spirit of Execration comes forth with the Spirits of the Hate clan as allies. Execration has two main wing demons, Imprecation and Offend.

These spirits are responsible for the swear words, the insults, and the false accusations – they are always acquainted with the Spirit of Lies. When these demons are in full function, the Spirits of Damage and Wound surrounds the victim to indicate where more damage can be done, and where the victim is not wounded.

These spirits are not working alone, there are spirits working with the victim as well. The Spirit of Melancholy causes the Spirits of Sadness, Heartbreak and Self-pity to mantle the victim. In a previous Chapter the question of why the abused woman does not fight back come in to discussion at this point.



An Investigation of the Evil Supernaturalism of the Enemy's Objective Behind Abuse

The reason for the victim not fighting her abuser is due to the Spirits of Stupor and Torpor. These two spirits causes the victim to be in a numb, trance, and daze state. Which means the victim is paralysed for the spirits on the abuser's side. From here the Spirit of Submission overpowers the victim to feel insignificant and comply with obedience.

As soon as the Spirit of Submission has been successful, the militant Spirit of Aggressiveness takes over to give the command to Execration to repeat the insults. This is an enormous demonic cycle of Spirits working together in a matter of minutes.

5.1.2 The Honeymoon Phase

After the abusive incident the Abuser are left with the Spirit of Shame and Execration. Execration will turn to the Abuser reminding him of how pathetic he is, in this process Shame enters and recapping the situation as if he were the abuser's conscience.

The Spirits of Sadness, Pity and Weakness arrives to lead Grief and Sorrow in, reminding the abuser of his actions. Pity will remind the abuser of the disappointment he is, while Weakness brings the abuser down to a pathetic state of failure. These spirits play psychologically with the abuser to bring him down spiritually, by reminding the abuser that this is not God's way, he should be ashamed.

The abuser's relationship with God will fail due to the great shame of disappointing God. These spirits create the doubt in any abuser's mind



An Investigation of the Evil Supernaturalism of the Enemy's Objective Behind Abuse

that God is now ashamed of him/her. They can bring forth a great guilt overpowering the abuser. The victim however, will have the feeling of guilt by questioning her/himself for making the abuser so furious.

The Abuser needs to make the abuse incident up to the Abused. The question is where the blandishment comes from to persuade the abused for false-forgiveness. The Spirits of Seduction come into play with their deceitful lies to pacify the victim with the abuser's false love.

5.1.3 The Build-Up Phase

The Spirit of Lies and the Spirit of Doubt are fuming the abuser's head with thoughts of uncertainty and distrust. These two feelings are established through the Spirit of Doubt. Doubt's purpose mainly is to launch feelings of suspicion or scepticism or reservation in the abuser's mind. These feelings are snowballing into inner anger emotions that lead to the invitation of the Spirit of Hate.

Hate reminds the abuser of memories where he was deprived in the past by his parents or a teacher, it is not about the victim, it is about the hate that the abuser has within himself and the spirits are fierce. This is almost always emotional and/or verbal abuse. The demonic activity will be discussed in detail later in this chapter, although, the spirits that is active in the Build-Up Phase needs to be address, as



An Investigation of the Evil Supernaturalism of the Enemy's Objective Behind Abuse

they are high-ranking demons following their orders from Leviathan, the serpent.

5.1.3.1 The Spirit Of Division

The Spirit of Division's role now is to bring darkness and disharmony upon the abuser. Division seeks to divide and tear apart by default, but, its main function is to devour and destroy.

This Spirit is focussing on unity; how he can destroy it; this spirit is furious if there is a marital ceremony between two loved ones.

Division would infiltrate and infect the thoughts and attitudes of those in unity that are weak in faith and lack wisdom and discernment.¹⁹

5.1.3.2 The Spirit of Separation

The Spirit of Separation is causing the abused to emotionally disintegrate for the abuser; this leads to be emotionally dead for the abuser. As most abusers are in an authoritative position and almost always in a situation of protecting the abused, the abused is separating from authority emotionally as well as spiritually.

¹⁹ Spirit of Division: <http://www.haemet.org/downloads/styled-13/index.html>



An Investigation of the Evil Supernaturalism of the Enemy's Objective Behind Abuse

Separation's main functions are intervening space between any relationships; this spirit is not only working in abusive situations but also in every aspect of life. Separation can terminate relationships or even eliminate it.

This spirit can disconnect or divides, detach or cancel relationships. The Spirit of Separation is mostly found in marriages between man and wife, mergers between great business companies, or a congregation and ministry.

Separation is in association with the Spirit of Division, but affiliated with the Spirit of Death. If Separation succeeded to separate, Death will see to it that emotions die as well as the spiritual truth.

5.1.3.3 The Spirit of Repetitious

The question from here on is what makes any abuser to continue his act of abuse. In any form of abuse the Spirit of Repetitious can be exposed here. Repetitious is known to keep on going on and on.

To name a few functions of this spirit is:

- To cause acceleration on all abuse related spirits
- To bring abuse at an earlier time and tries to undermine the abuser's self-control



An Investigation of the Evil Supernaturalism of the Enemy's Objective Behind Abuse

- To hasten the abuser's thoughts to become abusive
- To increase and enable force behind the spirits
- To speed up the verbal abuse to result in physical abuse

Repetitious' apprentice is the Spirit of Reiteration. Reiteration's main function is to state or to do over again or repeatedly and if necessary, with wearying effects. Reiteration mainly works alone, but might use the Spirit of Duplication as its helper in the case of abuse. If Reiteration is failing to push the abuser to being more abusive, Duplication can assist by cloning its forces.

Duplication is responsible to double the impact of abuse upon the abuser and the traumatic effects upon the abused; this spirit works twofold and is also responsible to repeatedly convince the abuser to keep on going.

The Spirit of Duplication is a copy-cat; it imitates the other spirits to follow their patterns and behaviours.

* * * * *

Coercive Control was discussed earlier and the power the abuser has over his victim, and many ask why the battered wife not left her abusive husband, how powerful can control be?



5.2 The Control Behind Physical Abuse

The immediate question here arises how the abuser becomes so overwhelmingly powerful. Control is not directly obvious in the beginning of a relationship. It occurs over time. It is a cancer that started and grew over time, the day the cancer was diagnosed, and it was too late to recognize the symptoms. Control is the same in an abusive environment; it cannot be *diagnosed* within the first weeks of relationship.

Abusers use excuses to justify their abusive behaviour. The abuser has the tendency to make others believe that he is fully aware of his weaknesses and contract the sympathy he wants from those who start to believe him.

6. DEMONOLOGY OF VERBAL AND EMOTIONAL ABUSE

Verbal abuse is Satan's method of breaking down the image of Man, his support system – now the abused woman; if a woman verbally abuse her man, she is an instrument of Satan breaking down the image of God, Man.

The only way to stab the heart is with words that cut too deep. In almost all the verbal abuse cases, those attacks were described by the victims of the abuse as if it was a total stranger looking at them. Many of the victims wished it was physical abuse; it is one physical blow and it hurts, and the blue marks disappear, whereas the words and lies coming from his, is hurting forever.

Verbal abuse is an evil method to introduce Fear; once the Spirit of Fear entered, he can invite all the Controlling Spirits in. As soon as the Spirit of



Pride entered the abuser, the Spirit of Lies will enter to spread falseness in the household.

6.1 The Spirit of Pride and its Adherents

The Spirit of Pride is also known as the Principality, Leviathan. Leviathan has manifested itself as a crocodile-like creature displaying to be the devourer. If it was angry with deliverers it would have extremely red eyes that are glowing.²⁰

The Bible describes Leviathan as a coiled or crooked serpent.²¹ Miscommunication works effectively as this Spirit and his entourage knows that man can misjudge the other party's intention. Another major derivative of the twisting and winding activity of this serpentine nature of Leviathan is in telling lies. The Spirit of Lies plays a great role for Leviathan in an argument.

Along with this powerful Spirit and most-used, is the Spirit of Contention. Contention is in control of the Spirits of Arguing, Disagreement, Dispute, and Conflict. The Spirit of Contention tries to hide the true meaning of what is spoken by bringing in Twisters and Turners to prepare the argument for the Spirit of Misunderstanding.

Contention feasts on confusion. Contention will remind the person of the past hurts or failures, for the simple reason of avoiding the present truth.

²⁰ Aja, Stephen U (Overcoming Obstacles to Fulfillment of Divine Destiny. USA: Xulon Press.p.119

²¹ Isaiah 27:1



Contention will keep on interrupting the conversation; its purpose is to bring division and to fulfil his only agenda.²²

6.2 The Spirit of Contention and its adherents

The Spirit of Contention is the main spirit behind the Spirit of Arguments, who is commencing the quarrel over senselessness working along with the Twisters and Turners. The whole conversation is spiralling out of control and it turns into an argument; the Spirit of Arguing has accomplished his mission.

The Spirit of Disagreement brings in the Spirits of Discrepancy and Deviation. The Spirit of Lies is also at work between these three. This group of spirits have a main function, to distort the true facts. If the past is brought up in an argument, especially in the case of the abuser who can twist or re-write history with confidence believing that it has happen like he sees it.

Leviathan and his entourage is powerful water spirits. They are also never seen by other spirits. This spirit will not make any supplications to anyone neither will he speak with defence to anyone, meaning it is not a Spirit of Prayer or a Spirit of Humility; Leviathan foster spiritual infancy and immaturity.²³ This Spirit will not allow itself to be taken in captivity.²⁴

In interviews with black traditional women they surprisingly confirmed that the Sangoma of the village can spend days under water; he then "becomes" a snake that visits them at night. Some say they take their

²² Bean, Ruth-Mary (2004) The Mind Does Matter. USA: Xulon Press.p.75

²³ Aja, Stephen U (Overcoming Obstacles to Fulfillment of Divine Destiny. USA: Xulon Press.p.124

²⁴ Job 41:6-7



An Investigation of the Evil Supernaturalism of the Enemy's Objective Behind Abuse

virgin daughters out of the village to protect them from the Snake-Sangoma.

They believe as soon as he visits them, he has sexual intercourse with the young girls and are then impregnated with a small black snake which she gives birth to in a matter of days. This snake cannot be found, or captured – they only knew its presence when they hear it move on the roof to seek a victim.²⁵

The victim of emotional and verbal abuse however, experience tremendous pity. As previously discussed, the Spirit of Melancholy's purpose with the victim is to invite the Spirits of Sadness and Depression into his/her life.

The victim will feel downhearted and miserable after the traumatic incident. The victim will question him/herself for the words that were uttered by the abuser. The Spirit of Lies will see to it that the victim starts to believe in the false accusations. The Spirit of Self-Pity will take over to keep the victim in the depressed state of regret, loneliness, and desolation.

The thesis is recalling the Misogynist and Misandrist's victim that was discussed in Chapter III.

6.2.1 The Misogynist and Misandrist's Demonic Influence

The Misogynist is known for using scare tactics to threat his victim to feel inadequate and helpless. These scare tactics and threats are

²⁵ Interview – Rachel and Village friends from Groblersdal, Mpumalanga



An Investigation of the Evil Supernaturalism of the Enemy's Objective Behind Abuse

demonic spirits that want to manifest. The Spirit of Criticism is active in verbal abuse, everything the victim tries to accomplish is either not good enough or should be done differently. This spirit is wearing the victim's self-confidence down to the point where he/she cannot function without having the abuser's blessing to proceed.

The misogynist can twist and turn history to prove the victim is *insane*. The Spirits of Twisters and Turners are hard at work in a conversation, especially where there is no basic mutual trust; these two spirits are paving the way for the Spirit of Weakness. Its purpose is to make the victim feel eventually useless, and unable to fight back and stand his/her ground.

A misogynist is extremely jealous and highly possessive. This is in fact the Spirit of Jealousy that is manifesting.

6.2.1.1 The Spirit of Jealousy

Jealousy is a high-ranking demon that has many spirits following his commands through. His two major spirits is the spirits of Perversion and Lying. The Forces working in his entourage is the Spirits of Suspicion, Wrath, Anger, Envy, Rage, Hate, Spite, Condemnation, and Revenge.²⁶

- The Spirit of Suspicion plants the thoughts and ideals of someone or something in the abuser's mind. These thoughts are usually not true and there

²⁶ Smith, Danny C (2010) Healing And Deliverance: Revealing the True Identity of God. pp.121-124



An Investigation of the Evil Supernaturalism of the Enemy's Objective Behind Abuse

are no facts, but Suspicion will deceive the person with insinuations and circumstantial evidence.

- The Spirit of Wrath is a driving spirit. His main function is to drive a person to intense anger or indignation. Wrath is working towards physical assault.

This is a dangerous spirit that is working with the Spirit of Murder. Wrath's end purpose is to take over a person and heightened all anger related spirits to such levels that he commits murder.

- The Spirit of Anger is very active here and interlinked with the spirits that is causing physical abuse. Anger can be controlled by a person, if not, Wrath and Rage enters.
- The Spirit of Envy's purpose is to make the person desire what someone else has. Envy is working with the Spirits of Coveting, Selfishness, and Competition.

The Spirit of Coveting is fuming the desire to have something that does not belong to the person; the Spirit of Selfishness is not willing to give or share anything including the person's time.

The Spirit of Competition is competitive in every aspect, to desire what others desire, to have what



An Investigation of the Evil Supernaturalism of the Enemy's Objective Behind Abuse

others have, only better and attempts to be in a winning position.

- The Spirit of Rage is a very intense spirit that must be controlled by the person and if not, Rage will invite the spirits of Revenge and Wrath to lead to destruction.
- The Spirit of Hate is a hostile spirit and working along with Anger and the Spirit of Fear. Hate manifests when the person is hurt physically or emotionally by Fear. This spirit is more active in the victim's life as it causes the person to keep the physical and emotional hurt in mind.
- The Spirit of Spite's purpose is to have animosity toward another person. This can lead to do harm or injury. This spirit does not work alone, Hate, Envy, and Revenge works beside Spite to increase the desire to cause damage. These three spirits causes the person to lose focus.
- The Spirit of Condemnation takes over if these three accomplished their mission. It causes confusion in the person's life.
- The Spirit of Revenge is to impose premeditated injury in return for an injury. This spirit can be



An Investigation of the Evil Supernaturalism of the Enemy's Objective Behind Abuse

deadly; he can call in the Spirit of Murder or even the Spirit of Death.

The Spirit of Seduction is also active here, as the misogynist plays a give and take game with his victim in the bedroom. Some misogynists are overpowered with the Spirit of Perversion, and the victim is introduced to extreme sexually related games in the bedroom. Perversion and Seduction are two spirits that can introduce other sexual spirits into a person's life to be in bondage with his victim.

6.2.1.2 The Spirit of Perversion

Perversion is a strongman spirit and a principality that has many spirits working on its behalf. These spirits have the purpose to cause turmoil and confusion. Perversion is working overtime in this world, to recall the incestuous families that were earlier discussed, this spirit defeated the family.

The question arises how did this spirit entered into this abuser's life. Perversion placed a Spirit of Wounded in this person's life when he experienced trauma in his childhood for example, a broken family relationship, broken marriages or friendships and so on.

Perversion use Wounded to open doors to other spirits that is working together to manifest themselves in a person's



An Investigation of the Evil Supernaturalism of the Enemy's Objective Behind Abuse

life. When the heart is wounded, it constructs a root of bitterness, hate, and inner anger.²⁷

These spirits prevents a person to let go of the past or simply, forgave the wrongdoers of the past. Perversion may order the Spirit of Promiscuity to enter a person's life at a very early age.

Promiscuity is a sex spirit that is knitting souls together through intercourse. This leads to uncontrollable emotions that are also spirits, of jealousy, bondage, slavery, and control through the person who have had sexual intercourse with him/her.

This spirit speaks to the mind; it controls a person's emotions; it damages the soul if the sexual intercourse was done in an ungodly manner. This is where soul-ties are established.

On the question of why women do not leave their abusive husband, the following might explain. God has created every woman in such a way that the first man that has sexual intercourse with her takes the form of having dominion over her. Her human spirit and soul is created to be responsive to the man that she has been with first, due to the fact that she will nurture him and supply him with affection.

²⁷ Smith, Danny C (2010) *Healing and Deliverance: Revealing the True Identity of God*. USA: Dorrance Publishing. pp.116-117



When soul-ties have taken dominion over a person in an abusive relationship, it often becomes so binding that some are in fact captured in that relationship.²⁸

7. DEMONOLOGY OF SEXUAL ABUSE

Unclean spirits is filthy, immoral, and ceremonially unclean. Many unclean spirits can also be of sexual nature. The major two types of sexual demons are called an incubus and succubus. A succubus is a female sex demon that rapes men. An incubus is a male sex demon that usually rapes women. This seems to be more common than a succubus in the traditional black communities of South Africa.

Many know of some woman that was attacked by this spirit. Some claim that it is the Sangoma (witchdoctor) who sent this aggressive spirit; in cases where the daughter turned down a marriage proposal from an eligible bachelor, the father got extremely upset and requested that the Sangoma deprive her virginity. This young woman would experience the aggressive sexual attack of something that cannot be seen.

The other case this thesis came across, which was not unknown to black women, was those who are having trouble conceiving. This spirit would visit them to hopefully arouse them sexually for the husband. These women's tears are deeper than losing a child; the trauma in their eyes is not of this world.²⁹

²⁸ Smith, Danny C (2010) *Healing And Deliverance: Revealing the True Identity of God*. p.65

²⁹ Interview: Limpopo Women and Sexual Abuse



An Investigation of the Evil Supernaturalism of the Enemy's Objective Behind Abuse

These women are not afraid of being raped by men; the fear is the unseen spirit which they cannot defend.

There are many adult romance novels written containing the word Succubus or Succubi. This is not an unknown term to the world as the bookshelves in many book stores are filled with titles proclaiming their name in the *paranormal erotica/romance* genre. These two powerful spirits has assistance from minor spirits. The question however is who their apprentices are.

7.1 Succubus And Incubus: Their Apprentices

Any person who commits sexual abuse is occupied with one of these two spirits or both. In the case of marital abuse, these two spirits may manifest themselves as the Husband Spirit or Wife Spirit.

7.1.1 The Spirit of Eroticism

The Spirit of Eroticism causes the sexual arousal; it overpowers the person and insists on sexual desire. Eroticism works closely with the Spirit Lascivious, Lascivious is usually called in from the Spirit of Indecency.

Indecency orders the Spirits of Impurity, Profanity and Obscenity to seduce the person's mind into sexual wickedness. If these spirits are successful, Profanity make way for the Spirit of Vulgar; Vulgar plants more evil thoughts into the person's mind.



7.1.2 The Spirit of Salacious

The Spirit of Salacious is the spirit behind the sensational scandals. Many newspapers reported of famous people or presidents that were caught in a sexual scandal. The rumours go on even if the guilty person admitted to his infidelity.

This spirit will uncover the sexual abuse when the above mentioned spirits are in fact bored, or cannot get the person to do more to harm his victim, and want to move on to another person; many are in such a shocking state when they found out that this sexual trauma were under their noses.

The case of Fritzl who had his daughter locked up in the basement for years, sexually abused her and fathered several children with her. Bystanders could not believe all of this was happening and they walked past their home and never got a hint that something was wrong. It was not Fritzl who planned everything so well; it was Salacious that covered the story so well that neighbours were blinded for years.³⁰

7.1.3 The Spirit of Wanton

In the case of child sexual abuse or as Fritzl, where incest were committed, a few more sexual spirits are exposed. The Spirit of Wanton focusses on Child Sexual Abuse. Wanton causes the sexual

³⁰ Joseph Fritzl: <http://www.bbc.co.uk/news/world-europe-22989884>



excitement for the young; this is a very mischievous spirit that is also very cruel and merciless that has no limitations.

7.1.4 The Spirit of Incest

The Spirit of Incest plants the arousal in a family member's mind; the Spirit of Seduction will join forces for the two parties to "notice" each other. Along with this spirit is the Spirit of Disunity.

Disunity works against the whole family and convince husbands or wives to be unfaithful to each other, and stop giving love or showing respect to one another. The children are also affected by Disunity, communication lines are broken down between parent and child, and this result in rebellion.³¹

7.1.5 The Spirit of Fear

Any child that experience sexually activity starts exhibiting behavioural problems; these problems are the spirits that were transmitted sexually that is now manifesting. The child is not an adult that knows how to oppress these feelings.³²

A child in this case is overwhelmed with fear. The Spirit of Fear has entered, and it mainly causes this child to fear life. This child will have phobias for example, being afraid of the dark – a light must be on

³¹ Aaberg, Dennis G (2007) *Seducing Spirits*. USA: Xulon Press.p.40

³² Ngwana, Timothy P (2009) *Unveiling Mysteries in Sexual Intercourse: Truths About Sex*. USA: Xlibris.p.53



during night time; a fear for marital sex – will it be as much painful etc.³³

7.1.6 Unclean Spirits

A legion of unclean spirits use hidden hatred of women to cause men to become promiscuous or to commit rape. No man who seeks love will rape and defile a woman. These spirits rule his mind.³⁴

The Spirit of Ardor's main function is to establish sexual excitement for a specific victim. This victim might have a Spirit of Seduction that is inviting Ardor to commit intercourse. Seduction can be controlled and as soon as this person or the victim-to-be retracts, Seduction will call in Rape to be satisfied.

7.1.7 The Spirit of Rape

The Spirit of Rape is the aggressive spirit who makes the person believes he must have sexual power. The Spirit of Force, which was found, being very active in physical abuse, is also present here, calling in the Spirit of Ravage.

Ravage destroys and causes havoc; it is known to plunder a victims' soul.

³³ Aaberg, Dennis G (2007) *Seducing Spirits*. USA: Xulon Press.p.33

³⁴ Sandford, John L; Sandford, Mark. (2008) *Deliverance and Inner Healing*. USA: Chosen Books.p.253



An Investigation of the Evil Supernaturalism of the Enemy's Objective Behind Abuse

Rape almost always works along with Incubus and Succubus. When the rape occurred, the Spirit of Bondage ties the bond between the abuser and victim to tie their souls to create a demonic soul tie.

7.1.8 The Spirit of Bondage

The Spirit of Bondage invites the Spirit of Fear into a person's life and harvests Spirits of Legalism, Depression, Servitude, Enslavement, and Control.

Victims of abuse that are infected by Bondage are unable to sense their adoption as a son or daughter of God, the Father. These victims feel isolated and uncared for, which strives to meet their own needs. They embrace other people mentally due to the fact of their belief that life "owes" them.

The Spirit of Bondage's main purpose is to tie those who have had sexual intercourse, or bond them for eternity.

Bondage is bringing in the "slave will serve its master" factor. The master can oppress his slave, as the slave becomes the obedient one to accept the abuse of its master. It is still the same concept of being in control and the other, being passive. The act of the sexual abuse bounds the sexual abuser and the victim not only psychologically, but spiritually.



7.2 The Water Spirits

There is a significance to “water” in this division. It is important for this thesis to explain the supernaturalism of *water* and the spirits that resides in this unknown underwater world. A few *water* facts show that 70% of the human body consists of water; 72% of the world is covered by water; every living creation requires water – it is a basic survival necessity. Water is everywhere and needed by every living organism.

In Genesis 1:1-10 the Bible states that the entire surface of the earth was covered with water, meaning before the heavens and earth were created, all of creation was filled with water. It can then be said that water existed before creation.

⁵ He set the earth on its foundations; it can never be moved.

*⁶ You covered it with the watery depths as with a garment;
the waters stood above the mountains.*

Psalm 104:5-6(NIV)

7.2.1 The Characteristics of Water Spirits

The water spirit arm of the kingdom of darkness exhibits certain attributes and characteristics which are common to people, places and cities where there is apparent manifestation or presence of these spirits.



An Investigation of the Evil Supernaturalism of the Enemy's Objective Behind Abuse

The following are characteristics of these spirits:

- Excessive pride and arrogance, manifesting in self-confidence, critical attitude towards others, total independence, desiring to be served, desire to be honoured, desire to control others, boasting over achievements and dishonouring constituted authority.

Because your heart is lifted up and you say I am a god and I seat in the of gods, in the midst of the sea... And your heart is lifted up because of your riches

Ezekiel 28:2-5(NIV)

“... My river is my own, I made it for myself”

Ezekiel 29:3(b)(NIV)

- Homes and marriages are affected and result in broken homes and marriages.
- It seems difficult for people to get married and stay married.
- Churches of error operate in areas where there is manifestation of water spirits. They attack God's work and God's servants and unless God's grace helps the servants, they fall into sexual sins or into heresy.



An Investigation of the Evil Supernaturalism of the Enemy's Objective Behind Abuse

In many coastal or riverine areas, we have seen many Holiness preachers trapped by sexual sins and falling into such sins. Promiscuity, juvenile delinquency, immorality and prostitution are common sins where they operate.

- Water spirits lock people's material wealth and fortunes up in the waters.

The river gates are thrown open and the palace collapses.

Nahum 2:6

- They cause sexual abuse in dreams to those who are under their influence and for example, they see themselves swimming in dreams or bathing by the rivers and so forth.
- Men and women that are experiencing water spirit problems find it difficult to be spiritually strong due to the fact that the water spirits attack their spiritual growth, for example, prayer time or Bible study.
- They can reveal secrets to their worshippers and this is the reason why their worshippers see "visions" and are involved in divination.³⁵

³⁵ Ezekiel 28:3



An Investigation of the Evil Supernaturalism of the Enemy's Objective Behind Abuse

- These spirits have the ability to cause a delay for conception or the couple might experience difficulties in conception.
- Water spirits can cause a loss of desire for the spouse due to the fact that they have sex in their dreams with their spirit spouses. Some would refer to fantasizing over someone that does not exist.
- They cause people to love pleasures excessively.
- These spirits promote sorceries, enchantments and divination³⁶ and they establish a powerful level of witchcraft that is being found in the Sangoma case study as previously discussed in this chapter.³⁷
- They manifest violence and abuse due to the fact that they are vicious spirits, for example: the spirits in the Gardarene were responsible for driving the swine violently down the steep into the sea and drowning them.³⁸ Another Biblical example is Nineveh that was situated by the sea and was reported to be a bloody war-like and violent city.³⁹

³⁶ Nahum 3:1-4

³⁷ Deuteronomy 18:10-11

³⁸ Mark 5:7-13

³⁹ Nahum 3:1-3



An Investigation of the Evil Supernaturalism of the Enemy's Objective Behind Abuse

- These spirits harvest the thought for people to have the tendency to go nude. They amend the personality of people they inhabit, for example, a normal clothed person will see nothing wrong in walking around nude, even at the beach.
- Water spirits bring evil characteristics into leaders and presidents and through them into cities and nations-pride, pollution, terror, wickedness and immorality. In other words, they rule and govern whole nations which are under their influence through manipulation of the presidents and other political leaders.
- Water Spirits manifesting as Leviathan also manifest these effects on people:⁴⁰
 - Insanity, paralysis, schizophrenia and other illnesses
 - Discord, strife and accusation
 - Chaos and suffering
 - Proud, haughty, condescending, and arrogant attitude.
 - Stubborn, cold-hearted
 - Lack of concentration, learning difficulties
 - Gloominess and depression
 - Unteachable, judgmental, possessive and legalistic
 - Seeks to control and associated with Jezebel spirit
 - Independent attitude, excessive self- confidence

⁴⁰ Buys, Amanda (2003) The Four Elements. RSA: Kanaan Ministries.pp.65-66



An Investigation of the Evil Supernaturalism of the Enemy's Objective Behind Abuse

- Deafness and blindness to the Holy spirit, counterfeit ministries and worship
- Miscommunication, deception, twisting the truth, lying, gossip and slander.
- Dishonoring of authority.
- Since their objective is to prevent mankind from worshipping the true God, the creator of the universe, they deceive people through worldly philosophies⁴¹ and through false religion and different forms of cults.⁴²
- The water spirits strengthen themselves through human blood and make use of many devises like air, road and water accidents, sickness, ritual killing, wars and other means by which they shed blood.
- They use material and financial resources to manipulate their devotees. They overpower their devotees with a “bow to me and I will make you rich” and too many have already bowed to them to serve them. They have by their wisdom monopolized and cornered a lot of the world’s materials resources, and they flaunt these to enslave undiscerning people.

⁴¹ Colossians 2:8

⁴² Colossians 2:18



7.3 Spirits Attacking the Victim of Sexual Abuse

The victim of rape, incest or sexual abuse is not free from any demons or spirits. The Spirit of Heaviness is assigned to target the emotions of the victim. His main purpose is to bind the emotions with other spirits: Depression; Sadness; Despair; Discouragement; Gloom; Hopelessness; and Suicide. These spirits prepare the emotional state of the victim for the Spirits of Fear, Perversion, Haughtiness, Jealousy, and the Spider (Monkey) Spirit.⁴³ These spirits will manifest through the victim in ways he/she never thought to be.

In an article by Faith Allen⁴⁴ who wrote the following under the title: "*Reabusing Yourself To Achieve Orgasm After Sexual Abuse*," she brings forth the a case study of a woman suffering the consequences of a sexual abuse who is trying to have an orgasm during consensual sexual intercourse with her husband.

Case Study: Palucci

I am 39 years old and married for 10 years and I have never had an orgasm while having normal, traditional sex. The first time I had an orgasm during consensual sex it was oral. And that night I had the nightmare about being raped when I was a kid. Last night I was depressed, because recently it has also come to my attention that I use sex like I use cutting and burning.

⁴³ Scott, Ethel A (2008) Unveiling Spiritual Warfare. USA: Xulon Press.p.49

⁴⁴ Achieving Orgasms after Abuse: <http://faithallen.wordpress.com/2008/12/18/reabusing-yourself-to-achieve-orgasm-after-sexual-abuse/>



An Investigation of the Evil Supernaturalism of the Enemy's Objective Behind Abuse

At the time it meets a need, but then I feel worse, remorseful. My husband has recently quit drinking and he will not participate in rough or degrading type sexual acts. Last night he would not follow me in that direction and kept it traditional so no orgasm and I still felt remorseful and ashamed of my behaviour.

* * * * *

In this case study the writer states that "*there is nothing wrong with two consenting adults engaging in a bondage sexual scenario*, this thesis differ from a spiritual point of view of the supernatural realm. By engaging in a bondage sexual game is nothing less than to summons demonic spirits into their lives. Even if the sexual abuse survivor is suffering the consequences of not being able to have an orgasm, the writer suggests that the survivor *reabuse themselves to achieve an orgasm is by fantasizing about an abusive scenario during sex.*

For this survivor of abuse to get involved in adult games of bondage is not the answer, it cannot be justified in any way. These survivors are struggling spiritually with spirits that established the Spirit of Haughtiness, therefore, the following spirits are still active in the victim's life.

7.3.1 The Spirit of Perversion

The Spirit of Perversion is not the sexually orientated spirit that receives orders from the Spirit of Seduction; in fact, it is almost a new spirit to be introduced. Perversion means "to turn away from."⁴⁵

⁴⁵ Buckner-Kameni, Tiffany (2012) The Spirit of Heaviness and All Its Cousins. Privately Printed by T. Buckner-Kameni. p.11



An Investigation of the Evil Supernaturalism of the Enemy's Objective Behind Abuse

Perversion may produce feelings of not being good enough, attractive enough, or desirable enough for the partner. Self-doubt has become a familiar place to be visited in the person's mind. Perversion is a spirit that haunts the person, it see to that the person questions himself in every factor of life.

Even if the person "knows" why these "feelings" exists, Perversion allows the Spirits of Depression, Inferiority, Insecurity, Anxiety, and Uncertainty to enter the person's mind to establish a lack of confidence or even further, sexual confidence later in life with a marital partner.

This Perversion's main function is to create vulnerability in the person who experienced sexual abuse. This vulnerability invites other spirits in, for example, the Spirits of Suicide, Adultery, Jealousy, or Rejection.⁴⁶

Some sexually abused victims shows self-destructive addictions for example, using alcohol excessively, turning to street-drugs, or perhaps, becoming a sexual addict.

7.3.2 The Spirit of Haughtiness

The Spirit of Haughtiness has two main spirits at work: the Spirit of Arrogance and Pride. Pride has been discussed earlier under the water spirits in the Sangomas section. Arrogance and Pride work together to

⁴⁶ Peart, Anastasia S (2008) Battling The Spirit of Perversion. USA: Xulon Press. pp.31-32



establish egoism, the over-confident self that is very important. These two establish the demonic cycle that ends up with the spirits of physical abuse.

The sexually abused victim will now be in almost full circle, as the spirits of physical abuse are about to enter. The Spirit of Satisfaction invites the Spirit of Pleasure in, Pleasure invites Joy in, then Desire enters, which demands the Seducing spirits to enter.

7.3.3 The Spirit of Jealousy

The Spirit of Jealousy is a relationship destroyer. Jealousy invites the Spirits of Anger, Rage, Cruelty, Suspicion, Competition, Insecurity, Divorce, and Division into a person's life. Jealousy's purpose is to establish bitterness in the long run.

This Spirit is causing the victim of sexual abuse to be negative with other people close to him/her that really care. The adult victim would also become a parent for example; the children however, will suffer the inner anger and rage of the parent.

Case Study: Tanya

Tanya had a horrible start in life. Her father wanted her aborted; he rejected this beautiful blond girl and made no secret of it. He molested her from an early age. His fingers



An Investigation of the Evil Supernaturalism of the Enemy's Objective Behind Abuse

were all over her. He then told her that she is his wife when her mother is at work.

She has regret for the day she has been born. But her mother protected her with everything she could and divorced the father. Tanya was always suspicious of her mother's new male and female friends. She was a great swimmer and always had to win.

Her mother told how she would go into a rage believing that she did won, even if her competitor won by almost a metre. It would take Tanya almost a week to get over her rage. Her insecurities were overwhelming and everyone knows she wanted revenge what she believed to be unfair.

Tanya got married to wonderful young man, her mother adored him and he was very loving towards Tanya. He protected her, even if he did not know her past. They had three daughters who Tanya reared very conservatively. The word "sex" was not allowed in the house and radio's was the devil's voice.

The children's social life consisted of Sunday church and school hours. Friends were not allowed over and the daughters were accused of having sex at school, suspected of dealing with drugs, or physically abused until Tanya was out of breath. The daughters stated that she can go on for a whole afternoon, at some point they did not feel the fists anymore, and her words were unforgiving. The three daughters feel that their own



An Investigation of the Evil Supernaturalism of the Enemy's Objective Behind Abuse

mother is jealous of them; they did not have her support as she was always breaking them down.

* * * * *

This case study is not only complicated for the daughters, but problematic for the mother. The mother is trying to be a good Christian and raise her children well in the way of the Lord, but her soul is tied to her past.

These spirits are not being dealt with, and a punitive issue can make a person, like Tanya, blow up and become a verbal and physical abuser as a result of being sexually abused as a child.

In the cases where the sexually abused victim keeps on returning to indecent sexual behaviours, come into question, why do they return to sexual abusive behaviours. For example, females who experienced sexual abuse, as in the case of Advocate Barbie's victims that were discussed in Chapter I, who turned to prostitution – the question is why they return to sexual abuse, why would a sexually abused girl become a prostitute. And interesting spirit was exposed: the Spider Spirit.

7.3.4 The Spider Spirit

The Spider Spirit is a trickster. It sets up traps for the person to be taken into captivity. This could be the sexually abused victim's potential victims. Whereas, the Spider-Monkey Spirit craves the



spotlight where she is noticed, or in other words: where the spirit can seduce; this spirit is said to be extremely social, and a valuable and attentive host.⁴⁷ Thus, it can be assumed that this spirit is clearly making herself known; it is a seductive spirit giving the humble feeling to whom she really wants to trap.

All of these spirits are working against each other trying to manifest their will through the sexual abuse survivor. Survivors are all in the situation of not being able to deal with their past, due to the fact that these Spirits are causing so much confusion for the victim. These victims shows a tremendous shame, which can be traced to the Spirit of Shame, not the Spirit of Shame that is working with the abuser to make him feel guilty as being discussed earlier. This spirit is focussing on the victim's shame.

7.3.5 The Spirit of Shame

The Spirit of Shame's main function is to harvest lies in the victim's thoughts. Shame reminds the victim of the disgrace and embarrassment she is for being the pathetic person she is. At the same moment Shame recaps the humiliation she went through and keeps on building up to the actual fact of not forgiving the abuser and mostly herself.

Shame is making use of the Spirit of Anger to harvest a need for power that results in the wrong power play. This is where the victim becomes a prostitute for example, but in most cases, the adult

⁴⁷ Hinton, K; Price, J (2013) Influential Spirits: Constructive and Destructive Spirits That Influence the Christian Woman. iUniverse. pp.57-59



woman has a craving for sexual intercourse to show a power over her sexual partners.

The victim is in fact killing her own self-respect by being bonded to so many sexual partners. The Spirit of Lust overpowers the victim in this phase of being disrespectful to her own body – the question from hereon is, is it actually possible that a victim of sexual abuse, abuse her own body.

This need for sexual intercourse can confirm this question. The Spirit of Shame causes the victim to hate herself and she would realise she is destroying herself when there is a point in her life when she recognize her scandalous behaviour. The Spirits of Murder and Death are in association with Shame. Their functions are to murder the self-respect that can lead to spiritual death.

7.4 Sexual Demons From A Global Point of View

The world as a whole does not have the knowledge of sexual demonic activity that ruins morality in the human race. Across the globe there are many different beliefs of demons that attack its victims mostly during night time when the victim is in bed.

Many deeply religious people worldwide believe in a demonic entity of some sort. The following is not necessarily the belief of this thesis, but only to emphasize the unknown.



An Investigation of the Evil Supernaturalism of the Enemy's Objective Behind Abuse

See to it that no one takes you captive through hollow and deceptive philosophy, which depends on human tradition and the basic principle of this world rather than on Christ.

Colossians 2:8

7.4.1 Aliens – America

Some reports suggest the use of an invasive anal probe, and others talk of a sexual union with the aliens themselves. 52 year old Jazz singer Pamela Stonebrook⁴⁸ claims to have regular sex with a six-foot tall reptilian alien.

"My first sexual encounter with an alien was unlike any love-making I've experienced before," Stonebrook claims. "It was so intense and enjoyable and, without wanting to get too graphic, he was so much larger than most men. I remember exactly how I felt when I saw him for the first time. I awoke from my sleep to find myself making love to what appeared to be a Greek god.

At first I assumed it was an exceptionally lucid dream. But the sex was very intense and as I closed my eyes I was overwhelmed by how comfortable I felt with this unknown being.

The next time I opened my eyes he had transformed into a reptilian entity with scaly, snake-like skin. It was then I realized I was making love to a shape-shifting alien. Sensing I was scared, the reptile whispered, 'We've always been together, we love each other.'

⁴⁸ Pamela Stonebrook: <http://www.thefrisky.com/photos/ghostly-groping-reptilian-romp-sasquatch-assault-6-sexual-encounters-of-the-third-kind/sex-alien-orgasm/>



An Investigation of the Evil Supernaturalism of the Enemy's Objective Behind Abuse

The orgasms were intense. When I tell men about my reptilian experience, they find it difficult."

There are countless stories involving alien/ human lovemaking. Antonio Villas Boas of Brazil claims that, in 1957, he *was abducted by aliens and put in a room with a beautiful, fair-haired woman and forced to mate with her.*

Howard Menger claimed to *have regular sexual liaisons with Marla, a beautiful blond woman from space who claimed to be 500 years old.* In the 1970's, a 19-year-old girl in California claimed to *have been gang-raped by six blue-skinned, web-footed humanoids who attacked her after she watched their spaceship land.*

Due to the peculiar nature of the claims and the general lack of evidence, most people dismiss such reports. Sadly though, it is likely that many of the people, who make such claims, do so as a result of a deep, psychological need.

7.4.2 Angels – The Nephilim, Hebrew Bible

According to the Hebrew Bible, the Nephilim were a race of giants who came about as a result of fallen angels having intercourse with human women. Translated from the Hebrew text, "Nephilim" means "fallen ones".

"Now giants were upon the earth in those days. For after the sons of God went in to the daughters of men, and they brought



An Investigation of the Evil Supernaturalism of the Enemy's Objective Behind Abuse

forth children, these are the mighty men of old, men of renown.”

Genesis 6:4

The story of Nephilim originates with a story of Shemhazau, a high ranking angel who led a group of angels to earth to teach humans to be righteous. Over the centuries many of the angels pined for human women, and eventually mated with them, creating the Nephilim. This unholy union is said to have instilled an inherit wickedness in the Nephilim, making them capable of terrible sin. God was so disgusted by their existence that he ordered the angel Gabriel to ignite a civil war among the Nephilim, which eventually led to their extinction.

The following is an excerpt of the opinion of Louis Ginzberg:⁴⁹

*Giants begotten by flesh **and** spirits will be called **evil spirits** on earth, and on the earth will be their dwelling-place. Evil spirits proceed from their bodies, because they are created from above, and from the **holy watchers** is their beginning and primal origin; they will be evil spirits on earth, and evil spirits they will be named.*

*And the spirits of heaven have their dwelling in heaven, but the spirits of the earth, which were born upon the earth, have their dwelling on the earth. And the **spirits of the giants** will devour, oppress, destroy, attack, do battle, and cause destruction on the earth, and work affliction. They will take no kind of food, nor will they thirst, and they will be invisible.*

⁴⁹ Louis Ginzberg: <http://www.piney.com/LegFallAng.html>



7.4.3 Alp – German Folklore

An Alp is a demonic shape-shifting creature that comes in the night and causes nightmares by sitting on their victim. The attacks are called Alpdrücke, "elf pressure". An Alp is usually male while their female counterpart is called a Mara. In Teutonic folklore, Alps were thought of as friendly elf creatures that lived in the woods but their image soon turned into the creatures they are known as today.

They sit on a sleeping person, Alps tend to prefer females, and causes vivid horrible dreams. Alps apply pressure to the victim as they lay sleeping, gradually becoming heavier and heavier until the person wakes up and is unable to move. Many believe that this was an early explanation of sleep paralysis.⁵⁰

7.4.4 Orang Minyak – Malaysia

In the 1960's a large number of young women were raped in several Malaysian towns. The attacker was described as a naked man, covered with oil. It is said that Orang Minyak could appear invisible to non-virgins. Mass panic ensued, and many young women of the region began wearing sweaty, stinky clothes so the Orang Minyak would mistake them for male and leave them be.

⁵⁰ Alp: <http://fuckyeahstrangemythology.tumblr.com/post/30410692270/alp-aka-trud-mar-mart-mahr-schrat-and>



An Investigation of the Evil Supernaturalism of the Enemy's Objective Behind Abuse

Some speculate that the Orang Minyak was, in fact, a regular human criminal, who covered himself with oil to camouflage himself against the night, and to make him especially slippery to catch. Sightings of the "Oily Man" have continued through the decades, with the last sighting in 2005.⁵¹

7.4.5 Liderc – Hungary

In the Northern regions of Hungary there was said to live a creature called the Liderc (or ludvérc, lucfir, or ördög depending on the region). It hatches from the first egg of a black hen, and is often said to hide in people's pockets. It enters its victims homes through the keyhole. Once inside, the Liderc shapeshifts into a human, often taking the form of a dead relative of the intended victim. It rapes its victim, and then makes the house very dirty before departing.

Some reports say that Liderc becomes attached to its victims and never leaves. The Liderc can be exorcized by either sealing it inside a tree hollow, or persuading it to perform a near impossible task, such as carrying water with a bucket full of holes. It is common even today for children in Hungary to stomp on eggs taken from a black hen, or leave the eggs on doorsteps to cause mischief.

7.4.6 Lilu – Jewish Folklore

⁵¹ Orang Minyak: <http://www.livescience.com/17781-orang-minyak-malaysia.html>



Jewish folklore tells of Lilu, a demon who visits women while they sleep. His feminine counterpart is Lilin. These demons were a particular source of anxiety for mothers because they were known to kidnap children. Ardat Lili was another succubus who would visit men at night to ensure the continuation of her demonic race. The incubus was Irdu Lili, who would visit human women to ensure they would produce his offspring.

According to the Jewish Library⁵² Lilith is a female demon who is assigned in a central position in Jewish demonology. She appears briefly in the Sumerian Gilgamesh epic and is found in Babylonian demonology, which identifies similar male and female spirits called Lilu and Lilitu, but these two spirits are etymologically unrelated to the Hebrew word *laylah* ("night").

These *mazikim* ("harmful spirits") have various roles: one of them – the Ardat-Lilith – preys on males, while others imperil women in childbirth and their children.

7.4.7 Encantado – Amazon, Brazil⁵³

In Brazil, and the rainforests of the Amazon Basin, the Boto river dolphin was believed to have shapeshifting powers. It could turn into a very charming and beautiful man called Encantado, or "the

⁵² Lilu: http://www.jewishvirtuallibrary.org/jsource/judaica/ejud_0002_0013_0_12540.html

⁵³ Encantado: <http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Encantado>



enchanted one." Encantado would take women back to the river, retake dolphin form, and impregnate them.

Young women of the region were wary of any man wearing a hat due to the fact according to legend, Encantado always wore a hat to cover up his blowhole. In many parts of Brazil it is considered bad luck to kill Boto river dolphins. If you kill one, or in some cases just look them in the eye, it is said you will suffer nightmares for the rest of your life.

7.4.8 Incubus and Succubus – World belief

This thesis have discussed these sexual spirits earlier, the following are not necessarily the view of the thesis. The Succubus is a female demon who takes the form of an attractive seductress in order to seduce men.⁵⁴ It is generally believed that the Succubus legend came about as a result of the medieval preoccupation with sin, especially sexual sins of women.

The male version of the Succubus is the Incubus. Like his female counterpart, the Incubus will drain the strength and life energy from his victims. Unlike the Succubus, the Incubus will impregnate his victims with another incubus.⁵⁵ The victim will then carry the baby to term, but when she gives birth the baby appears to be stillborn. It will have no pulse and it won't appear to breath.

⁵⁴ Succubus: <http://www.princeton.edu/~achaney/tmve/wiki100k/docs/Succubus.html>

⁵⁵ Incubus: http://rationalwiki.org/wiki/Incubus_and_succubus_myths



An Investigation of the Evil Supernaturalism of the Enemy's Objective Behind Abuse

Then, around the age of seven the child will appear to behave normally, but will usually be very attractive and intelligent. Some legends suggest that the wizard Merlin is the product of an Incubus father and a human mother.⁵⁶ It is also believed by some that the Virgin Mary was de-flowered by an Incubus.

Many believe the Incubi most likely came about as a scapegoat for rape and sexual assault.⁵⁷ Both victim and rapist would have most likely found it easier to explain the attack supernaturally rather than confronting the truth.

7.4.9 Trauco and La Fiura – Chiloé, Chile⁵⁸

Chiloé, an island off the south of Chile, is said to be home to the Trauco, a sexually potent Dwarf with the power to paralyze women with a look, before having sex with them. The Trauco is described as being ugly and goblin-like, often wearing a hat and suit. His feet are stumps and he communicates through a series of grunts. Some reports suggest the Trauco doesn't even need to have intercourse with his victims, that he can, in fact, impregnate them with his gaze. Often, when a single woman on Chiloé falls pregnant people assume the Trauco is the father. In these cases the women are considered blameless.

⁵⁶ Merlin's Father: <http://www.timelessmyths.com/arthurian/merlin.html>

⁵⁷ Incubi: http://kingkong82.wix.com/toms-universe-place#!__love-marriage-and-sex

⁵⁸ Trauco and Fiura: <http://traditionscustoms.com/strange-traditions/trauco-and-fiura>



An Investigation of the Evil Supernaturalism of the Enemy's Objective Behind Abuse

El Trauco's wife, La Fiura, is said to be a grotesquely ugly dwarf with the ability to cast a "sickness spell" against anyone who rejects her sexual advances. Her breath is so foul it can physically scar a human and turn animals lame. Despite her appearance, she is generally irresistible to men and, after having intercourse with them, she drives them insane.

7.4.10 Popobawa – Zanzibar, Africa⁵⁹

Popobawa (meaning "bat-wing" in Swahili) is said to be a large, bat-like creature with one eye and a very large penis. It is said to stalk the men and women of Zanzibar, Africa, and surrounding islands. It is a shapeshifter, often taking the form of a human or animal.

It usually visits households at night, and it doesn't discriminate against men, women or children, often sodomising an entire household before moving on. Victims are warned by Popobawa to tell others about the attack, or risk it returning.

Popobawa first appeared on the island of Pemba in 1965, and sightings have been reported as recently as 2007. There are several different theories about Popobawa's origin. Some say it is an angry spirit created by a Sheikh to take vengeance on his neighbours.

In 2007, Researcher Benjamin Radford investigated Popobawa and found that its roots are in Islam, the dominant religion of the area.

⁵⁹ Popobawa: <http://demonhunterscompendium.blogspot.com/2011/04/popobawa.html>



An Investigation of the Evil Supernaturalism of the Enemy's Objective Behind Abuse

According to Radford, "holding or reciting the Koran is said to keep the Popobawa at bay, much as the Bible is said to dispel Christian demons."

Others argue (perhaps more realistically) that Popobawa is an articulated social memory of the horrors of slavery. The way in which Popobawa is said to sodomise its victims may also have something to do with the fact that homosexuality is still illegal in Zanzibar.



8. CONCLUSION

This thesis has concluded that the spiritual enemy, Satan, is behind abuse. God created man(kind) to be good and Satan wants to destroy everything that God loves.

The abuser is overpowered with thoughts by different spirits to cause havoc. He is deceived into lies that are non-existent; the evil spirits harvest negative thoughts in his mind and as soon as the abuser believes it, they have conquered their mission to open the spiritual doors for other great evil spirits to enter the mind.

By putting the spiritual activity into perspective is to look at an image of total chaos. In the physical world the abuser is hammering blows onto his victim; the sexual abuser is overpowering his victim. There is in fact a hurricane of evil spirits swirling around the abuser and the victim. The abuser's mind is attacked with evil thoughts and powerful entities enter him, not being able to have self-control. The abused's mind is attacked with numbness and thoughts of despair; the evil spirits is preventing the victim to defend him/herself against the abuse that is taking place.

Every evil spirit is reporting back to a strongman while assisting another strongman. Their main function is to hurt people, establish stronghold's in a



An Investigation of the Evil Supernaturalism of the Enemy's Objective Behind Abuse

person's heart to bring coldness and not being able to feel the warmth of the Holy Spirit and the love of God. Evil spirits are opening doors for other spirits with another function to draw the person away into the depths of the darkness.

Many asked why victims are unable to leave their abusers; the fact of the matter is, there is a spiritual bond between the victim and the abuser; these spirits creates bondage between the two people, believing that they are in this twisted spiral of entrapment. Both of these people are in spiritual bondage.

It is not the abuser who wants to abuse – it is his evil spirits manifesting, due to the fact that he has open doors, whether it was established in early childhood or in another traumatic event. Just as much is the abused in the spiritual situation of being captive in a pathetic sense of not being able to break loose and defend herself. The abused does not want to be abused, the abused wants to experience love that was in great probability non-existent prior of meeting the abuser.

No person on this earth gets romantically involved with someone else by saying "I want to abuse you" or "Will you abuse me." The abuser and abused are victims of this evil spiritual warfare. They want to break down the image of God, by controlling man's mind by establishing evil thoughts of being in control; they want to break down the image of man by establishing evil pathetic thoughts.

This cycle can revolves from the one generation to the next, and the longer this cycle turns, it picks up speed in the next generation; the children becomes abusive early in age, due to the fact that all the spirits already



An Investigation of the Evil Supernaturalism of the Enemy's Objective Behind Abuse

established their strongholds in the bloodline. Every abusive spirit can enter with ease and earlier in the person's life.

Every negative emotion is in fact an evil spirit manifesting. Man did not have any evil emotion when he was created by God. God's spirit is good and the fruit of the spirit has no evil in it. If a person is filled with the Holy Spirit, he will not have evil abusive thoughts. The question however arises of how can an abuser or abused be filled with the Holy Spirit.

oooOooo



An Investigation of the Evil Supernaturalism of the Enemy's Objective Behind Abuse



An Investigation of the Evil Supernaturalism of the Enemy's Objective Behind Abuse



An Investigation of the Evil Supernaturalism of the Enemy's Objective Behind Abuse

In the future, when your son asks you, "What is the meaning of the stipulations, decrees and laws the LORD our God has commanded you?" tell him: "We were slaves of Pharaoh in Egypt, but the LORD brought us out of Egypt with a mighty hand.

Deuteronomy 6:20-21



PHILOSOPHIAE DOCTOR

CONCLUSION

This thesis has concluded that abuse was only recognized since the 1960's and not since the beginning of time. In Biblical history there are only three recordings of sexual abuse of women, none of children, however, child sacrifices were made to pagan gods to benefit from the pagan powers.

Awareness of abuse peaks when an unusual horrifying story hit the front pages of newspapers. The public are focussed on the outcome of the case, but forgotten by the time of conviction.

These suspects almost always have the similar background story for being abused as a child, and as a result of that trauma, gave him the right to do to others that was once done to him. Some abusers stated strongly that the devil made them do it, especially in the case of child sexual abuse victims. The perpetrator claims that he had a visit from the devil and he told him how to execute the act.

In many cases of crying devil, sect and cult leaders live their life of sexual pleasure and abuse of women and children, until they are caught. They claim to be the son of God, or the Messiah, and have followers growing by numbers. However, most of the



Christian cults as discussed in Chapter II, are no more different than a pagan cult. These cults that were investigated have one form of abuse in common, sexual abuse. The statistics on sex offenders are those who were caught and convicted. The question however of how many is there that has not been caught yet.

This question can also remain its stance by in fact state how many abusers has not been caught yet. Many abusers have excuses for their behaviour, and they are under the impression that they can get away with their abuse by blaming some situation as a cause for his/her behaviour. In the case of a husband and wife that promised God to love and cherish each other in front of their family and friends, how is it possible that the husband can look at his wife with so much love, and the next breath is words of humiliation or hugs of assaults?

Psychologists gave such a person a classification name, a misogynist (men who hates women) or a Misandrist (a woman who hates men). Sociology reckons they can undergo therapy to control their anger. Whereas, this thesis states that it is the act of demonic influences from previous generations and the sins of the fathers. The other fields are having trouble explaining the origin of abuse.

Abuse is leaving emotional scars in a person's life. Healing after physical abuse can be a journey depending on the victim's ability to find freedom; the victim must have the want to break free from the captivity the abuse created. The abuse creates the prison, the more physical abuse there is, the darker the cell becomes filled with loneliness.

The task of living after physical abuse in the current time is more important to keep reminding oneself of what could have been done. This is the obvious syndrome of not forgiving oneself. The victim must realize to overcome the memories of abuse is



not that hard and difficult, it is a matter of releasing the negative thoughts. This is an important principle to create in oneself by focussing on feeling good.

Abusive reminiscences are the flashbacks of the abusive environment. The constant reminders, of certain triggers, that created a specific form of violent behaviour. Every abused person rethinks a certain abusive incident in its finest detail; reliving the trauma over and over again. Many survivors of physical abuse stated that their best therapy was to talk it out, to get the flashbacks out of their system, as if it was a cancer that took over their positive thoughts.

For some women the suggestion of forgiveness feels upsetting and overwhelming. They felt betrayed due to the fact that they should have been protected by their men, as they were supposed to be their protector. Any woman expect protection from their man, whether they are married or in a relationship. Battered women have lost touch with what is right and wrong, and with what is acceptable and intolerable.

The Isolation the women experienced must be broken down. The isolation period could have been for years in the abusive relationship. But now is the time to break free from this. Finding the family and friends to reunite the positive relationships it once were, is a great step in the healing process. Family and friends are the best to listen, and they can overwhelm a battered woman with compassion.

Certain experiences some women do not want to recall in a conversation can be problematic for the healing process; it is suggested to write it down. It is only the abused who can see the embarrassment on paper. Within a certain time period, the abused should take that paper and read it again. For the reason being that the



emotions is very high when the feelings is penned down. A few days later the emotional levels will be more normal, and the abused can sympathize with her self.¹

Women felt that God let this happen, but the question why seems to arise many times. In interviews with battered women the suggestion of God's dark side came to light. Does God have a dark side? No, He is love. He cannot abuse mankind or bring horrible traumatic experiences over anyone, as He created each and every one with everything on this earth. Picasso did not destroy his works of art, and there are many more artists who created masterpieces that are of high value in museums behind high security. God protects his masterpieces too, and He is the one that is dusting them off. He does not leave it stored somewhere. He admires His masterpieces every day.

There is a history of abuse that is in every person walking on this earth's blood. It is in his blueprint and can only be undone by the Blood of Christ washing the abusive bloodline clean of its memories. An abuser is a spiritual victim just as much as an abused is a victim. Only the Lord, Jesus Christ can set these victims free from their abusive captivity.

The victims should focus on FORGIVENESS. Bitterness will grow and become a stronghold within a person's heart! The Spirit of Bitterness invites other negative spirits in and this is where the victim's anger is triggered with restlessness of the mind. It is not the victim that is triggering the inner feelings of despair; it is due to the abuser's lack of his/her self-image that was hurt. And the result being the whole household's self-image is scarred.

¹ Richard, 21CP (2004) Tears And Healing: The Journey to the Light After an Abusive Relationship. USA:Dalkerth Press.p.30



The abuser is in fact trapped in the past, certain traumatic events have not been dealt with and no healing was brought to heal the mind of the trauma of the abusive situation.

Satan is focussed on the mind of man. Paul spoke of this in the New Testament:

*¹⁰ Finally, be strong in the Lord and in his mighty power. ¹¹ Put on the full armor of God, so that you can take **your stand against the devil's schemes**. ¹² For our struggle is **not against flesh and blood, but against the rulers, against the authorities, against the powers of this dark world and against the spiritual forces of evil in the heavenly realms**. ¹³ Therefore put on the full armor of God, so that **when the day of evil comes**, you may be able to **stand your ground**, and after you have done everything, **to stand**.*

Ephasians 6:10-13(emphasis added)

The traumatic memories of the different form of abuse are not against the perpetrator or the abuser, but against the evil spirits of Satan that wants to overpower the thoughts of the victim to remember every moment. The scripture states that the only way to stand is to stand "your ground" spiritually against Satan's spirits that triggers the mind to think of the wrong that has been done.

Many people live in the past and they build their past with what ifs. They have the tendency to fantasize of making that situation right in their mind, only to stir up more anger and bitterness. No man or woman can build the past, yes wrong was done, but God dealt with the perpetrator who caused the traumatic experience.



The mind of man is a target for evil. The mind that is filled with the thought of the Holy Spirit cannot perform any form of abuse against another being that God created.

This thesis concluded the fact that both abuser and abused's minds are filled with anger and hatred and many more to name. Psychologically speaking the abuser and abused is at war – abuse is in fact a psychological war between the abuser and the abused.

The abuser needs to be in control, yet the abused often controls the situation through manipulation to make the abuser think he is in control. It is a strategic game of control.

Spiritually speaking the abuser and the abused are as a matter of fact just puppets in the hands of evil spirits. Even if people question where God was in this abusive situation, the angels were there trying to fight the demons off, but in the case where God is not a feature in the household... one can only assume that there is almost no godly protection.

The abused is not forgotten, the Lord will give them opportunities in their lifetime to find salvation in Christ. Only Jesus has the key to unlock this gate of captivity with His salvation; every abuser and every abused can be redeemed by his love and renew their minds to become Christ-like.

Jesus is the only intercessor and the Holy Spirit protects the Lord's people from evil spirits. **The freedom of Abuse is at the cross.** This freedom cannot be done on behalf of an abuser. There cannot be repentance on behalf of the abuser.



If the mind is filled with Christ, no memory or behaviour needs to be controlled. If Christ is in control of our lives, traumatic events are practically non-existent.

¹¹ For who knows a person's thoughts except their own spirit within them? In the same way no one knows the thoughts of God except the Spirit of God.

¹² What we have received is not the spirit of the world, but the Spirit who is from God, so that we may understand what God has freely given us.

¹³ This is what we speak, not in words taught us by human wisdom but in words taught by the Spirit, explaining spiritual realities with Spirit-taught words.

1 Corinthians 2:11-13

When a person submits to the control of another for a period of time, this submission slowly erodes the person's unique identity and the ability to think and reason for oneself.

The submissive victim begins to think through the eyes of the controlling person rather than with his or her own mind.

The abused believe the lies of the abuser, behind these lies there are fear, and the abuser listens to the lies of the evil spirits...

Abuse is a spiritual war; the act is not understandable as there is no reason for the violence. A person in Christ **cannot** abuse or be involved in such acts.

God is not behind the evil of abuse – it is in contrast for what Jesus Christ stands for.



A Prayer Against Sexual Abusive Demonic Influence

Father, in the name of Jesus Christ, I bind the spirit incubus or succubus that attacks my body and my soulful realm. This demon that is holding my body, my soulful nature and my identification to this unnatural pleasure, I now destroy in Jesus name the origin of this sexual sin created by generational curses of lust, sexual sin, witchcraft and all inherited curses extending back four generations. I cancel the assignment of adultery, fornication, molestation, fantasy lust, incest, perversion, homosexuality, pornography, rape, and masturbation caused by the demon incubus or succubus.

I now release in Jesus name, the Spirit of holiness and righteousness to my body, soulful realm and my identity. I reject every demon of unnatural pleasure. I activate the word of God in my life according to 1 Corinthians 3:16:

Know ye not that my body is the temple of the holy spirit. I have been bought with a price: therefore I glorify God in my body and my spirit, which are God's.

In Your precious Name, Amen!



PHILOSOPHIAE DOCTOR

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Aaberg, Dennis G. (2007) *Seducing Spirits*. USA: Xulon Press
- Abbott, Jacob (1860) *History of Genghis Kahn*. USA: Harper & Brothers Publishers.
- Ackerman, Robert J. (1995) *Before It's Too Late: Help For Woman In Controlling Or Abusive Relationships*. USA: Health Communications, Inc.
- Adams, Kenneth M. (1991) *Silently Seduced: When Parents Make Their Children Partners: Understanding Covert Incest*. USA: Health Communications Inc.
- Aja, Stephen U (--) *Overcoming Obstacles to Fulfillment of Divine Destiny*. USA: Xulon Press.
- Alexander, Linda L; LaRosa, Judith; Bader, Helaine; Garfield, Susan (2010) *New Dimensions on Women's Health*, 5th Edition. USA: Jones & Bartlett's Books.
- Allison, Julie A (1993) *Rape: The Misunderstood Crime*. USA: Sage Publications, Inc.
- Allocca, John A (2007) *Balancing Serotonin and Norepinephine Levels*. USA: Allocca Biotechnology, LLC.
- American Psychiatric Association (2000) *Diagnostic and Statistical Manual of Mental Disorders: DSM-IV-TR: Text Revision*. USA: American Psychiatric Publishing, Inc.
- Anderson, Neil T. (2000) *The Bondage Breaker*. USA: Harvest House Publishing
- Angelica, Jade C. (1993) *A Moral Emergency: Breaking The Cycle Of Child Sexual Abuse*. USA: Sheed And Ward
-

- Arnold, Johann C. (1998) *The Lost Art Of Forgiving: Stories Of Healing From The Cancer Of Bitterness*. UK: The Plough Publishing House
- Bagley, Christopher; King, Kathleen (1990) *Child Sexual Abuse: The Search For Healing*. USA: Routledge
- Bancroft, Lundy (2005) *When Dad Hurts Mom: Helping Your Children Heal The Wounds of Witnessing Abuse*. USA: Penguin Group
- Barlow, David H. (2008) *Clinical Handbook Of Psychological Disorders: A Step-by-step Treatment Manual*. USA: The Guilford Press
- Barlow, Jane; Schrader Mcmillan, Anita (2010) *Safeguarding Children From Emotional Maltreatment: What Works*. UK: Jessica Kingsley Publishers
- Baxter, Mary K. (2009) *A Divine Revelation of Healing*. USA: Whitaker House
- Baxter, Mary K. (2006) *A Divine Revelation of Spiritual Warfare*. USA: Whitaker House
- Bean, Ruth-Mary (2004) *The Mind Does Matter*. USA: Xulon Press.
- Benson, Vicky (2010) *Recognizing the Spirits of Jezebel and Its Attributes*. USA: Zulon Press.
- Berry, Down B. (1998) *Domestic Violence Source Book*. USA: Lowell House
- Beste, Jennifer E. (2007) *God And The Victim: Traumatic Intrusions On Grace And Freedom*. USA: Oxford University Press.
- Bevere, John (2004) *How To Respond When You Feel Mistreated*. USA: Thomas Nelson Inc.
- Bevere, John (2005) *Breaking Intimidation*. USA: Charisma House
- Bevere, John (2006) *Enemy Access Denied: Slam The Devil's Door With One Simple Decision*. USA: Charisma House
- Blake, Scott (2010) *Ptsd: The Ageless Disorder*. UK: Chipmunka Publishing.
- Blamires, Cyprian P. (2006) *World Fascism: A Historical Encyclopedia, Volume 1*. USA: ABC-CLIO Publishing
- Block, Carolyn; Block, Richard (1995) *Trends, Risks, And Intervention in Lethal Violence: Proceedings of the Third Annual Spring Symposium of the Homicide Research Working Group*. USA: Diane Publishing.
- Bloomer, George (2002) *Authority Abusers: Breaking Free From Spiritual Abuse*. USA: Anchor Distributors
- Blue, Ken (1987) *Authority To Heal: Answers For Everyone Who Has Prayed For A Sick Friend*. USA: Intervarsity Press
- Bradshaw, John (2005) *Healing The Shame That Binds You*. USA: Health Communications Inc.

- Bremner, Douglas, J.; Marmar, Charles R. (1998) *Trauma, Memory, And Dissociation*. American Psychiatric Press, Inc.
- Briere, John (1992) *Child Abuse: Theory And Treatment Of The Lasting Effects*. USA: Sage Publications
- Briere, John (1996) *Therapy For Adults Molested As Children: Beyond Survival*. USA: Sage Publications
- Briggs, Philip (2009) *Tanzania: With Zanzibar, Pemba and Mafia, 6th Edition*. USA: The Globe Pequot Press Inc.
- Brodd, Jeffrey (2009) *World Religions: A Voyage of Discovery, 3rd Edition*. USA: Saint Mary's Press.
- Bromley, Nicole B. (2007) *Hush: Moving From Silence To Healing After Childhood Sexual Abuse*. Moody Publications
- Bromiley, Geoffrey W. (1988) *The International Standard Bible Encyclopedia: Q-Z Volume 4*. USA: Eerdmans Publishing.
- Brown, Jennifer M.; Campbell, Elizabeth A. (2010) *The Cambridge Handbook of Forensic Psychology*. USA: Cambridge University Press.
- Bubeck, Mark I. (1998) *Raising Lambs Among Wolves*. UK: Paternoster Publishing
- Buckner-Kameni, Tiffany (2012) *The Spirit of Heaviness and All Its Cousins*. Privately Printed by T. Buckner-Kameni.
- Buchanan, Christy M.; Maccoby, Eleanor E.; Dornbusch, Sanford M. (1996) *Adolescents After Divorce*. USA: President and Fellows of Harvard College.
- Buys, Amanda (2003) *The Four Elements*. RSA: Kanaan Ministries.
- Caeser, Lynn P. (1989) *Treating men Who Batter: Theory, Practice & Programs*. USA: Springer Publishing
- Caldwell, Sarah (2001) *Nova Religio: The Heart of a Secret: A personal and Scholarly Encounter with Shakta Tantrism in Siddha Yoga*. USA: University of California Press.
- Campbell, Robert J. (2009) *Campbell's Psychiatric Dictionary, 8th Edition*. USA: Oxford University Press
- Campbell, Robert J. (2004) *Campbell's Psychiatric Dictionary*. USA: Oxford University Press.
- Caro, Jane; Fox, Catherine (2008) *The F Word: How We Learned To Swear By Feminism*. Australia: University of New South Wales
- Cashman, Hillary (1993) *Christianity And Child Sexual Abuse*

- Cicchetti, Dante; Carlson, Vicki (1989) Child Maltreatment: Theory And Research On The Causes
- Chidester, David (1997) African Traditional Religion in South Africa: An Annotated Bibliography. USA: Greenwood Publishing Group
- Christenson, Evelyn (1997) Women As Risk-Takers For God. UK: Paternoster Publishing
- Christopherson, Barbara J.; Burton, Jan E.; Ellen, Jan; Rasmussen, Luc (1998) Treating Children With Sexually Abusive Behavior Problems: Guidelines For Child And Parent Intervention 1st Edition. USA: Routledge
- Clark, Jonas (1995) Exposing Spiritual Witchcraft: Breaking Controlling Powers. USA: Spirit of Life Publishing
- Clark, Jonas (1998) Jezebel: Seducing Goddess of War. USA: Spirit of Life Publishing
- Clark, Robin E.; Clark, Judith F.; Adamec, Christine (2007) The Encyclopedia Of Child Abuse, 3rd Edition. USA: Facts on File, Inc.
- Clark Kroeger, Catherine; Beck, James R. (1996) Women, Abuse and the Bible: How Scripture can be Used to Hurt or Heal. UK: Paternoster Press.
- Cook, Philip W. (2009) Abused Men: The Hidden Side of Domestic Violence. USA: ABC-CLIO Books.
- Cottrell, Barbara (2003) Parent Abuse: The Abuse of Parents by Their Teenage Children. Canada: National Clearinghouse on Family Violence.
- Copeland, Mary E.; Harris, Maxine (2000) Healing The Trauma of Abuse: A Woman's Guide. USA: New Harbinger Publications
- Corby, Brian (1998) Managing Child Sexual Abuse Cases. UK: Jessica Kingsley Publishers
- Cori, Jasmin L. (2007) Healing From Trauma: A Survival Guide To Understanding Your Symptoms And Reclaiming Your Life. USA: Da Capo Press
- Coughlin, Sean (2009) GP ST: Stage 2 2009 Edition: Practice Questions. UK: Pastest, Ltd.
- Crompton, Louis (2006) Homosexuality & Civilization. USA: Harvard University Press,
- Crum, Milton (2008) Evil, Anger and God: A Biblical Pastoral Study. USA: Wingspan Press
- Davis, Michele (1995) Childhood Sexual Abuse And The Construction Of Identity: Healing Sylvia. UK: Taylor And Francis Ltd.
- Deb, Sibnath; Mukherjee, Aparna (2009) Impact of Sexual Abuse on mental Health of Children. India: Ashok Kumar Mittal.
- De Hartog, Leo (2006) Genghis Kahn: Conqueror of the World. USA: Tauris Parke Paperbacks.

- Delgado, Iris (2011) *Satan, You Can't Have My Children: The Spiritual Warfare Guide for Every Parent*. USA: Charisma House
- Delgado, Iris (2011) *Satan, You Can't Have My Marriage: The Spiritual Warfare Guide for Dating, Engaged, and Married Couples*. USA: Charisma House
- DeMoss, Nancy L. (2001) *Lies Women Believe: And The Truth That Sets Them Free*. USA: Moody Publishers
- Denise, Cordyn (2004) *A Mother's Tongue: Overcoming Verbal Abuse*. USA: Jawbone Publishing Corporation
- Dicanio, Margaret (1993) *Encyclopedia of Violence Origins, Attitudes, Consequences*. USA: Facts on File, Inc.
- DiCataldo, Frank C (2009) *The Perversion of Youth: Controversies in the Assessment and Treatment of Juvenile Sex Offenders*. USA: New York University Press.
- Dorais, Michel (2002) *Don't Tell: The Sexual Abuse Of Boys*. Canada: McGill-Queen's University Press
- Doskow, Emily (2006) *Nolo's Essential Guide To Divorce*. USA: Consolidated Printers, Inc.
- Douglas-Samuel, Ivett (2005) *Revenge: When A Woman Is Scorned*. USA: Dog Ear Publishing
- Duffy, Ann; Momirov, Julianne (1997) *Family Violence: A Canadian Introduction*. Canada: James Lorimer & Company.
- Duggan, Christopher; Watkins, John B; Walker, Allan W (2008) *Nutrition in Pediatrics 4: Science Clinical Application*. India: Print-O-Pact, Inc.
- Duncan, Karen A. (2010) *Female Sexual Abuse: Understanding Them To Protect Our Children And Youths*. USA: ABC-CLIO, LLC
- Duncan, Karen A. (2004) *Healing From The Trauma Of Childhood Sexual Abuse: The Journey For Women*. USA: Greenwood Publishing Group
- Dutton, Donald G. (1997) *The Batterer: A Psychological Profile*. USA: Basic Books.
- Edukugho, John D. (2004) *Familiar Spirits: A The Unseen Enemies*. USA: Xulon Press
- Ehiri, John (2009) *Maternal And Child Health: Global Challenges, Programs, And Policies*. USA: Springer
- Ellis, Albert; Pavers, Marcia G. (2000) *The Secret Of Overcoming Verbal Abuse: Getting Off The Emotional Roller Coaster And Regaining Control Of Your Life*. USA: Wilshire Book Company

- Elzouki, Abdelaziz Y; Harfi, Harb A; Nazer, Hisham M; Stapleton, Bruder F; Oh, William; Whitely, Richard J (2012) Textbook of Clinical Pediatrics. Berlin: Springer-Verlag.
- Engel, Beverly (2004) Breaking The Cycle Of Abuse: How To Move Beyond Your Past To Create And Abuse-Free Future. USA: John Wiley And Sons Inc.
- Engel, Beverly (2007) The Jekyll And Hyde Syndrome: What To Do If Someone In Your Life Has A Dual Personality – Or If You Do. USA: Wiley
- Engel, Beverly (2011) AARP Healing Your Emotional Self: A Powerful Program To Help You Raise Your Self-Esteem Quiet Your Inner Critic And Overcome Your Shame. USA: Wiley.
- Epstein, Orit B.; Schwartz, Joseph; Schwartz, Rachel W. (2011) Ritual Abuse And Mind Control: The Manipulation Of Attachment Needs. UK: Karnac Books
- Evans, Patricia (1993) Verbal Abuse Survivors Speak Out: On Relationship And Recovery. USA: Adams Media Corporation
- Evans, Tony (2011) Victory In Spiritual Warfare: Outfitting Yourself For The Battle. USA: Harvest House Publishers
- Faller, Kathleen C. (1993) Child Sexual Abuse: Intervention And Treatment Issues. US Department of Health And Human Services
- Farley, Melissa; Barkan, Howard (1998) Prostitution, Violence, and Post Traumatic Stress Disorder: Research Paper. USA: University of Oklahoma.
- Fantes, Lisa A. (2005) Child Abuse And Culture: Working With Diverse Families. USA: The Guilford Press
- Fantes, Lisa A. (1995) Sexual Abuse In Nine North American Cultures: Treatment And Prevention. USA: Sage Publications
- Farmer, Steven (1990) Adult Children Of Abusive Parents: A Healing Program For Those Who Have Been Physically, Sexually, Or Emotionally Abused. USA: Ballantine Books
- Farrell, Warren (1994) The Myth Of Male Power: Why Men Are The Disposable Sex. USA: Simon & Schuster, Inc.
- Farrell, Warren (1999) Women Can't Hear What Men Don't Say: Destroying Myths, Creating Love. USA: Penguin Group
- Fisher, Bonnie S.; Lab, Steven P. (2010) Encyclopedia of Victimology and Crime Prevention, Volume 1. USA: Sage Publications, Inc.
- Florin, Marylee; Broyles, Matthew (2012) Sexual Abuse. USA: The Rosen Publishing Group, Inc.

- Forward, Susan (1986) *Men Who Hate Women & The Women Who Love Them*. USA: Bantam Books.
- Forward, Susan (1997) *Emotional Blackmail*. USA: Harper Collings.
- Frangipane, Francis (1995) *The Jezebel Spirit*. USA: Arrow Publications
- Fraser, George A. (1997) *The Dilemma Of Ritual Abuse: Cautions And Guides*. American Psychiatric Press, Inc.
- Frater, Jamie (2010) *The Ultimate Book of Top Ten Lists*. USA: Ulysses Press.
- Freed, Sandie (2008) *Breaking the Threefold Demonic Cord*. USA: Chosen Books.
- French, Marilyn (1993) *The War Against Women*. USA: Random House Publishing
- Freyd, Jennifer (1996) *Betrayal Trauma: The Logic Of Forgetting Childhood Abuse*. USA: Harvard University Press
- Friedman, Matthew J.; Keane, Terrence M.; Resick, Patricia A. (2007) *Handbook of PTSD: Science and Practice*. USA: The Guilford Press
- Fuller, Cheri (1999) *When Families Pray: The Power Of Praying Together*. RSA: Lux Verbi
- George, Denise (2005) *Cultivating A Forgiving Heart: Forgiveness Frees Us To Flourish (Secrets Of Soul Gardening)*. USA: Zondervan
- Goldsmith, R.E.; Jandorf, L. Valdimarsdottir, H.; Arment, K.L.; Stoudt, B.G.; Rini, C. (2010) *Traumatic Stress Symptoms and Breast Cancer: The Role of Childhood Abuse*.
- Gomes, Alan W (1995) *Unmasking the Cults*. USA: Zondervan Publishing Group.
- Gondolf, Edward W. (2002) *Batterer Intervention Systems: Issues, Outcomes, And Recommendations*. USA: Sage Publications.
- Hall, Marny (1996) *Sexualities: Volume 19*. USA: Haworth Press.
- Hansen, Jane (1997) *Fashioned for Intimacy*. USA: Regal Books.
- Hanson, Marsali; Harway, Michele (1993) *Battering And Family Therapy: A Feminist Perspective*. USA: Sage Publications
- Hanson, Marsali; Harway, Michele (2004) *Spouse Abuse: Assessing and Treating Battered Women, Batterers, and Their Children*. Professional Resource Exchange Inc.
- Hargrave, Terry D. (1994) *Families And Forgiveness: Healing Wounds In The Intergener: Healing Wounds In The Intergenerational Family*. USA: Routledge
- Harper, Kim; Stalker, Carol A; Palmer, Sally; Gadbois, Sue (2007) *Adults Traumatized by Child Abuse*. UK: Journal of Mental Health.
- Hammond, Frank & Ida M. (1973) *Pigs In The Parlor*. USA: Impact Books Inc.

- Heitritter, Lynn; Voight, Jeanette (2006) *Helping Victims Of Sexual Abuse: A Sensitive Biblical*. USA: Baker Publishing Group
- Hegstrom, Paul (1999) *Angry Men And The Women Who Love Them: Breaking The Cycle Of Physical And Emotional Abuse*. USA: Beacon Hill Press
- Herman, Judith L. (1981) *Father – Daughter Incest*. USA: Harvard University Press
- Hester, Marianne; Pearson, Chris; Harwin, Nicola; Abrahams, Hilary. (2007) UK: Athenaeum Press.
- Hickey, Marilyn (1991) *Spiritual Warfare: Protect Your Home from Spiritual Darkness*. USA: Whitaker House
- Higgins, Martina; Swain, John (2010) *Disability And Child Sexual Abuse: Lessons From Survivors; Narratives For Effective Protection, Prevention, And Treatment*. UK: Jessica Kingsley Publishers
- Hilton, Zoe N. (1993) *Legal Responses To Wife Assault: Current Trends And Evaluation*. USA: Sage Publications
- Hinton, K; Price, J (2013) *Influential Spirits: Constructive and Destructive Spirits That Influence the Christian Woman*. iUniverse.
- Hochschild, Adam (1998) *King Leopold's Ghost: A Story of Greed, Terror, and Heroism in Colonial Africa*. USA: Houghton Mifflin Company.
- Holden, George W.; Geffner, Robert A.; Jouriles, Ernest N. (1998) *Children Exposed To Marital Violence: Theory, Research, And Applied Issues*. American Psychology Association
- Hooper, Carol A. (1992) *Mothers Surviving Child Sexual Abuse*. USA: Routledge
- Horton, Anne L.; Williamson, Judith A. (1998) *Abuse and Religion: When Praying Isn't Enough*. USA: Lexington Books
- Horvath, Miranda AH; Woodhams, Jessica (2013) *Handbook of the Study of Multiple Perpetrator Rape: A Multidisciplinary Response to an International Problem*. USA: Routledge.
- Howard, Karen (1989) *Intuitive Explorations Magazine*. Volume 2, Number 10, USA.
- Howitt, Dennis; Sheldon, Kerry (2007) *Sex Offenders and the Internet*. UK: John Wiley & Sons, Ltd.
- Huch, Larry (2006) *10 Curses That Block The Blessing*. USA: Whitaker House
- Hunt, June (2010) *How To Rise Above Abuse: Victory of Five Types Of Abuse*. USA: Harvest House Publishers

- Iwaniec, Dorota (2006) *The Emotionally Abused And Neglected Child: Identification, Assessment An Intervention: A Practice Handbook*, Second Edition. England: John Wiley & Sons
- Ing, Richard (1996) *Spiritual Warfare*. USA: Whitaker House
- Ingram, Chip (2006) *Die Onsigbare Oorlog*. RSA: Christelike Uitgewersmaatskappy
- Issues in Children and Society: 2011 Edition (2012) USA: Scholarly EditionsTM.
- Jackson, John P. (2001) *Unmasking The Jezebel Spirit*. USA: Kingsway Communications
- Janus, Eric S. (2006) *Failure To Protect: America's Predator Laws And The Rise Of The Prevention State*. USA: Cornell University Press
- Johnson, Janis T. (1992) *Mothers Of Incest Survivors: Another Side Of The Story*. USA: Indiana University Press
- Jones, Adele D (2013) *Understanding Child Sexual Abuse: Perspectives From The Carribean*. USA: Palgrave McMillan.
- Jones, Benedict C.; de Bruine, Lisa M.; Perret, David I.; Little, Anthony C.; Feinberg, David R.; Law, Mirriam J. (2008) *Effects of Menstrual Cycle Phase on Face Preferences*. Paper: Springer Science and Business Media, LLC (online)
- Jones, David P.H.; Ramchandani, Paul (1999) UK: Radcliffe Medical Press
- Junod, Henri A. (1926) *Life of a South African Tribe, Mental Life. Part 2*. RSA: Kessinger Publishing
- Korbin, Jill E. (1981) *Child Abuse And Neglect: Cross Cultural Perspectives*. USA: University of California Press
- Langberg, Diane M. (2003) *Counseling Survivors Of Sexual Abuse*. USA: Xulon Press
- Larson, Bob (1999) *Larson's Book of Spiritual Warfare*. USA: Thomas Nelson.
- Linn, Matthew; Linn, Sheila F.; Linn, Dennis (1994) *Healing Spiritual Abuse And Religious Addiction*. USA: Paulist Press
- Kearney, T.R (2001) *Caring For Sexually Abused Children: A Handbook For Families And Churches*. USA: Intervarsity Press
- Kelly, Liz (1998) *Confronting An Atrocity: The Dutroux Case*. UK: Child & Woman Abuse Studies.
- Kinnear, Karen L. (2007) *Childhood Sexual Abuse: A Reference Handbook*. Second Edition. USA: ABC CLIO, Inc.
- Kraft, Charles H. (1997) *Deep Wounds, Deep Healing: Discover the Vital Link Between Spiritual Warfare and Inner Healing*. USA: Baker Books

- Kreger, Randi (2008) *Family Guide to Borderline Personality Disorder: New Tools and Techniques to Stop Walking on Eggshells*. USA: Hazelden.
- Kroeber, Alfred L; Sparkman, Philip S; Waterman, Thomas T; DuBois, Constance G (1910) *A Mission Record of the California Indians: From a Manuscript in the Bancroft Library*. Berkeley: The University Press.
- Krug, Ettiene, G. (2002) *World Report On Violence And Health Volume 1*. Geneva: World Health Organization
- Kroeger, Catherine C; Beck, James R. (1996) *Women, Abuse and the Bible*. UK: Patenoster Press
- Kroeger, Catherine C; Nason-Clark, Nancy (2010) *No Place for Abuse: Biblical & Practical Resources to Counteract Domestic Violence*. USA: IVP Books
- Kubany, Edward S.; McCaig, Mari A.; Laconsay, Janet R. (2004) *Healing The Trauma Of Domestic Violence: A Workbook For Women*. USA: New Harbinger Publications
- Kutz, Ilan (2005) *Revisiting the lot of the first incestuous family: The biblical origins of shifting the blame on to female family members*. UK: British Medical Journal.
- Langberg, Diane (2003) *Counseling Survivors of Sexual Abuse*. USA: XulonPress.
- Larson, Bob (1999) *Larson's Book Of Spiritual Warfare*. USA: Thomas Nelson, Inc.
- Lee, Joo Y; Cho, Kong S. (2013) *Chemical Castration for Sex Offenders: Physicians' Views*. Published Online: Journal of Korean Science
- Leehan, James (1993) *Defiant Hope: Spirituality For Survivors Of Family Abuse*. USA: Westminster/John Knox Press
- Leman, Kevin (2006) *Smart Woman Know When To Say No*. USA: Fleming H. Revell
- Leman, Kevin (2007) *When Your Best Isn't Good Enough: The Secret Of Measuring Up*. USA: Fleming H. Revell.
- Leston, Stephen (2011) *The Bible in World History*. USA: Barbour Publishing.
- Levesque, Roger J. (1999) *Sexual Abuse Of Children: A Human Rights Perspective*. USA: Indiana University Press
- Lieberman, Alicia F.; Van Horn, Patricia (2005) *Don't Hit My Mommy: A Manual For Child-Parent Psychotherapy With Young Witnesses Of Family Violence*. USA: Zero To Three Press
- Lowe, Chuck (1998) *Territorial Spirits and World Evangelisation: A Biblical, Historical and Missiological Critique of Strategic Level Spiritual Warfare*. UK: Mentor/OMF

- Ludsin, Hallie; Vetten, Lisa (2005) *Spiral of Entrapment: Abused Women in Conflict With the Law*. RSA: Pinetown Printers
- Lutzer, Erwin W. (2002) *Seven Snares Of The Enemy: Breaking Free From The Devil's Grip*. RSA: Christian Art Publishers
- Lyman, Robert D; Hembree-Kigin, Toni L (1994) *Mental Health Interventions with Preschool Children*. USA: Plenum Press.
- Mahan, Terry; Trybulski, JoAnn; Bailey, Patricia P.; Sanberg-Cook, Joanne (2012) *Primary Care: A Collaborative Practice*. USA: Saunders Elsevier Inc.
- Mahari, Ace-Jensen (2006) *The Legacy of Abandonment in Borderline Personality Disorder: The Core Wound of Abandonment in BPD Examined and Explained*. eBook: Phoenix Rising Publishers.
- Maley, April (2010) *I Will Not Be Silent*. USA: Dog Ear Publishing
- Malley-Morrison, Kathleen; Hines, Denise A. (2004) *Family Violence In A Cultural Perspective: Defining, Understanding, And Combating Abuse*. USA: Sage Publications
- Marieb, Elaine N.; Hoehn, Katja (2011) *Human Anatomy And Physiology, 8th Edition*. USA: Benjamin Cummings Publishers.
- Martin, Walter (2003) *The Kingdom of the Cults: The Definitive Word on The Subject*. USA: Bethany House Publishers.
- Martin, Del (1981) *Battered Wives*. USA: Volcano Press
- Marvasti, Jamshid A. (2004) *Psychiatric Treatment of Sexual Offenders: Treating the Past Trauma in Traumatizers, A Bio-Psycho-Social Perspective*. USA: Charles C Thomas Publisher, Ltd.
- Matthews, Shanaaz; Abrahams, Noemah; Martin, Lorna J.; Vetten, Lisa; Van der Merwe, Lize; Jewkes, Rachel (2004) *Every Six Hours a Woman is Killed By Her Intimate Partner*. RSA: MRC Policy Brief No 5. p.2
- Matsakis, Aphrodite (1998) *Trust After Trauma: A Guide To Relationships For Survivors And Those Who Love Them*. USA: New Harbinger Publications
- Matsakis, Aphrodite (1996) *I Can't Get Over It: A Handbook For Trauma Survivors*. USA: New Harbinger Publications
- Matsakis, Aphrodite (1994) *Post-Traumatic Stress Disorder: A Complete Treatment Guide*. USA: New Harbinger Publications
- McBride, Evelyn (2009) *Physical, Spiritual and Spousal Abuse*. USA: Outskirts Press, Inc.

- McGee, Caroline (2000) *Childhood Experiences of Domestic Violence*. UK: Jessica Kingsley Publishers.
- McNally, Richard J. (2005) *Remembering Trauma*. USA: Harvard University Press
- Mendez-Ferrel, Anna (2008) *Shaking The Heavens*. USA: Voice Of The Light Ministries
- Mendez-Ferrell, Ana (2010) *Regions of Captivity*. USA: Destiny Publishers, Inc.
- Meyer, Rick (2005) *Through The Fire: Spiritual Restoration For Adult Victims Of Childhood Sexual Abuse*. USA: Augsburg Books
- Mcfadyen, Alistair (2002) *Forgiveness Of Truth: Explorations In Contemporary Theology*. Scotland: T&T Clark Ltd
- McKinnon, Marjorie (2008) *Repair Your Life: A Program For Recovery From Incest And Childhood Sexual Abuse*. USA: Loving Healing Press
- Michaelson, Johanna (1989) *Like Lambs To The Slaughter House: Your Child and the Occult*. USA: Harvest House Publishers
- Miller, Alison (2012) *Healing The Unimaginable: Treating Ritual Abuse And Mind Control*. UK: Karnac Books
- Mills, Linda G. (2009) *Violent Partners: A Breakthrough Plan For Ending The Cycle Of Abuse*. USA: Basic Books
- Mondimore, Francis; Kelly, Patrick (2011) *Borderline Personality Disorder: New Reasons for Hope*.
- Moore, Carol (2011) *The Davidian Massacre*. Chapter 2. Published online: <http://www.carolmoore.net/waco/TDM-02.html>
- Murphy, Cecil (2010) *When A Man You Love Was Abused: A Woman's Guide To Helping Him Overcome Childhood Sexual Molestation*. USA: Kregel Publications
- Murphy, Ed (2003) *The Handbook of Spiritual Warfare*. USA: Thomas Nelson Publishers
- Nason-Clark, Nancy (1997) *The Battered Wife: How Christians Confront Violence*. USA: John Knox Press.
- Nathan, Debbie (2001) *Satan's Silence: Ritual Abuse And The Making Of A Modern American Witch-hunt*. USA: iUniverse
- Newman, Willis C; Newman, Esmeralda (2008) *Domestic Violence: Causes and Cures and Anger Management*. USA: Newman International, LLC.
- Ngwana, Timothy P (2009) *Unveiling Mysteries in Sexual Intercourse: Truths About Sex*. USA: Xlibris.

- Nicholls, Tonia L.; Hamel, John (2007) Family Interventions In Domestic Violence: A Handbook Of Gender Inclusive Theory And Treatment. USA: Springer Publishing
- Nori, Don (2010) Breaking Demonic Strongholds: Defeating The Lies Of Satan. USA: Destiny Image Pulishers Inc.
- Okun, Lewis (1986) Woman Abuse, Facts Replacing Myths. USA: State University of NY Press
- Orr, Leonard (2007) Rebirthing in the New Age. USA: Trafford Publishing.
- Parenzee, Penny; Artz, Lillian; Moul, Kelly (2001) Monitoring the Implementation of the Domestic Violence Act 1995. RSA: Institute of Criminology University of Cape Town
- Parkinson, Patrick (2003) Child Sexual Abuse And The Churches: Understanding The Issue. Australia: Aquila Press
- Parsons, Stephen (1991) Territorial Spirits. USA: Sovereign World, Ltd.
- Pearson, Chris; Hester, Marianne; Harwin, Nicola (2007) Making An Impact – Children and Domestic Violence: A Reader. UK: Jessica Kingsley.
- Peled, Einat; Davis, Diane (1995) Groupwork With Children Of Battered Women: A Practitioner's Guide. USA: Sage Publications
- Peled, Einat; Joffe, Peter G.; Edleson, Jeffrey L. (1995) Ending The Cycle Of Violence: Community Responses To Children Of Battered Women. USA: Sage Publications
- Penn-Lewis, Jessie (1996) War on the Saints. USA: Whitaker House
- Perkins, Bill (2004) Six Battles Every Man Must Win: ...and the Ancient Secrets You'll Need to Succeed. RSA: Christian Art Publishers
- Phillips, Ron M. (2010) Everone's Guide To Demons And Spiritual Warfare: Simple, Powerful Tools For Outmaneuvering Satan In Your Daily Life. USA: Charisma House
- Pierce, Chuck D. (2011) Time To Defeat The Devil: Strategies To Win The Spiritual War. USA: Charisma House
- Pierson, Ruth R.; Cohen, Marjorie G.; Bourne, Paula; Masters, Philinda (1993) Canadian Woman's Issues: Strong Voices, Volume 1. Canada: James Lorimer & Company Ltd Publishers
- Porter, Ruth; Ciba Foundation (1984) Child Sexual Abuse Within The Family. UK: Tavistock Publications
- Porr, Valerie (2010) Overcoming Borderline Personality Disorder: A Family Guide For Healing and Change. USA: Oxford University

- Poston, Carol; Lison, Karen (2001) *Reclaiming Our Lives: Hope For Adult Survivors Of Incest*. USA: iUniverse.com, Inc.
- Prince, Derek (2006) *Lucifer Exposed*. UK: Derek Prince Ministries
- Prince, Derek (1987) *Spiritual Warfare*. USA: Whitaker House
- Prince, Derek (1987) *God's Word Heals*. USA: Whitaker House
- Reevy, Gretchen (2010) *Encyclopedia of Emotion, Volume 1*. USA: ABC-CLIO.
- Renzetti, Claire M.; Edleson, Jeffrey L.; Bergen, Raquel K. (2001) *Sourcebook On Violence Against Women*. USA: Sage Publications.
- Ricci, Susan S.; Kyle, Terry (2009) *Maternity And Pediatric Nursing*. USA: Walters Kluwer Health.
- Richter, Don (2005) *Overcoming The Attack Of The Jezebel Spirit*. USA: Xulon Press
- Ricker, Muriel M. (2011) *When the Walls Come Tumbling Down: A Survival Guide For Divorcing Families*. USA: Xlibris Corporation.
- Rizzo, Betty (2008) *Companions Without Vouws: Relationships Among Eighteenth Century British Women*. Athens: University of Georgia Press
- Robinson, Jonathan (2003) *Spiritual Combat Revisited*. USA: Ignatius Press
- Roleff, Tamara L. (2000) *Domestic Violence: Opposing Viewpoints*. USA: Greenhaven Press
- Rothschild, Babette (2000) *The Body Remembers: The Psychophysiology And Trauma Treatment*. USA: WW Norton & Company Inc.
- Rowan, Edward L. (2006) *Child Sexual Abuse*. USA: University Press Of Mississippi
- Roy, Maria (1988) *Children In The Crossfire: Violence In The Home – How Does It Affect Your Children*. USA: Health Communications, Inc.
- Ryder, Daniel (1992) *Breaking The Circle Of Satanic Ritual Abuse: Recognizing And Recovering From The Hidden Trauma*. USA: Compcare Publisher.
- Ryrie, Charles C. (1999) *Basic Theology: A Popular Systematic Guide to Understanding Biblical Truth*. USA: Moody Publishers.
- Sacco DT, Argudin R, Maguire J & Tallon K (2010) *Sexting: Youth Practices and Legal Implications*. Youth and Media Policy Working Group Initiative. USA: Berkman Center for Internet & Society, Harvard University. Paper.
- Salter, Anna C. (1988) *Treating Child Sex Offenders And Victims: A Practical Guide*. USA: Sage Publications.
- Sampson, Steve (2010) *Discerning and Defeating The Ahab Spirit: The Key To Breaking Free From Jezebel*. USA: Chosen Books

- Sampson, Steve (2012) *Confronting Jezebel: Discerning and Defeating The Spirit of Control*. USA: Chosen Books
- Sanders, Randolph K. (1997) *Christian Counselling Ethics: A Handbook For Therapists, Pastors & Counselors*. USA: Intervarsity Press
- Sanderson, Christiane (2006) *Counselling Adult Survivors Of Child Sexual Abuse*, Third Edition. UK: Kingsley Publishers
- Sandford, John L; Sandford, Mark. (2008) *Deliverance and Inner Healing*. USA: Chosen Books.
- Sanford, Paula (2009) *Healing Victims Of Sexual Abuse: How To Counsel And Minister To Hearts Wounded By Abuse*. USA: Charisma House
- Sankin, Daniel J. (1997) *Learning To Live Without Violence: A Handbook For Men*. USA: Volcano Press
- Schetky, Diane H.; Green, Arthur H. (1988) *Child Sexual Abuse: A Handbook For Health Care And Legal Professionals*. USA: Brunner/Mazel Inc.
- Schmidt, Teresa (1993) *Anger Management and Violence Prevention: A Group Activities Manual for Middle and High School Students*. USA: Hazelden Foundation
- Schultz, Pamela D. (2005) *Not Monsters: Analyzing The Stories Of Child Molesters*. USA: Rowman And Littlefield Publishers Inc.
- Schwartz-Kenny, Beth M.; Mccauley, Michelle; Epstein, Michelle A. (2001) *Child Abuse: A Global View*. USA: Greenwood Publishing Group
- Scott, Ethel A (2008) *Unveiling Spiritual Warfare*. USA: Xulon Press.
- Seltzer, Leslie J.; Ziegler, Toni E.; Pollak, Seth D. (2010) *Social Vocalisations Can Release Oxytocin In Humans*. UK: Proceedings of the Royal Society B. Biological Sciences.
- Sharma, Arvind; Young Katherine K. (1999) *Feminism And World Religions*. USA: State University Of New York Press
- Shaw, Jon A. (1999) *Sexual Aggression*. USA: American Psychiatric Press Inc.
- Sherman, Dean (1990) *Spiritual Warfare For Every Christian: How To Live In Victory And Retak The Land*. YWAM Publishing
- Sidoli, Mara; Bovensiepen, Gustav (1995) *Incest Fantasies and Self Destructive Acts: Jungian and Non-Jungian Psychotherapy in Adolescence*. USA: Transaction Publishers.
- Smit, Johan (2003) *'n Pa Uit Een Stuk: Lewenslesse Van Bybelse Pa's: Hulle Vertwyfeling En Vertroue; Hulle Mislukkings En Oorwinnings*. RSA: Christelike Uitgewersmaatskappy
- Smith, Danny C (2010) *Healing And Deliverance: Revealing the True Identity of God*.

- Smith, Megan J. (2008) *Child Sexual Abuse: Issues And Challenges*. USA: Nora Science Publishers
- Snow, Robert L (2003) *Deadly Cults: The Crimes of True Believers*. USA: Greenwood Publishing Group.
- Sommerfeld, Leila R. (2009) *Beyond Our Control: Restructuring Your Life After Sexual Assault*. USA: Kregel Publications
- Sotelo, Nicole (2006) *Women Healing From Abuse: Meditations For Finding Peace*. USA: Paulist Press
- South African Law Reform Commission (2004) p.19 (Stalking/1.53)
- Spangler, Ann (2004) *Praying the Names of God: A Daily Guide*. USA: Zondervan.
- Spear, Lucie G. (2011) *A New Legacy For Incest Survivors*. Xlibris Corporation.
- Spitzberg, B H; Cupach W R (2011) *Adolescent-to-parent Abuse: Exploring the Communicative Patterns Leading to Verbal, Physical, and Emotional Abuse. The Dark Side of Interpersonal Communication*. USA: Routledge.
- Stark, Evan (2007) *Coercive Control: How Men Entrap Woman in Personal Life*. USA: Oxford University Press
- Stark, Evan; Buzawa, Eve (2009) *Violence Against Woman in Families and Relationships: Victimization and the Community Response*. USA: ABC-CLIO Publishers.
- Sternberg, Robert J (2001) *Psychology: In Search of the Human Mind*. USA: Harcourt College Publishers.
- Stevens, Dennis J (2001) *Inside the Mind of Sexual Offenders: Predatory Rapists, Pedophiles, and Criminal Profiles*. USA: iUniverse.com, Inc.
- Stevens, Dennis J (2001) *Inside the Mind of Sexual Offenders: Predatory Rapists, Pedophiles, and Criminal Profiles*. USA: iUniverse.com.
- Stokes, Jerry (2007) *Changing World Religions, Cults & Occult*. USA: Jerry Stokes.
- Stone, Perry (2011) *Purging Your House Pruning Your Family Tree*. USA: Charisma House.
- Stoop, David (2004) *Making Peace With Your Father: Understanding The Role Your Father Has Played In Your Life – Past To Present*. USA: Regal Books
- Stoop, David; Mastellar, James (1996) *Forgiving Our Parents: Forgiving Ourselves*. USA: Regal Books
- Stratford, Lauren (1998) *Satan's Underground: The Extraordinary Story Of One Woman's Escape*. USA: Harvest House Publishers

- Summers, Randal W.; Hoffman, Allan M. (2002) *Domestic Violence: A Global View*. USA: Greenwood Publishing Group.
- Szasz, Thomas S. (1972) *The Myth of Mental Illness*. UK: Granada Publishing Limited
- Talley, Kevin D. (2010) *Spiritual Rape: Exposing The Hidden*. USA: Xulon Press
- The American Heritage Dictionary
- Thom, Liezl; Pieters, Laurie (2012) *Shattered Lives: The Story of Advocate Barbie*. RSA: TCB Publishing
- Thrasher, William L. (1998) *Basics for Believers: Foundational Truths to Guide Your Life*. USA: Moody Publishers
- Trimm, Cindy (2010) *The Art Of War For Spiritual Battle: Essential Tactics And Strategies For Spiritual Warfare*. USA: Charisma House
- Tuana, Nancy (1989) *Feminism And Science*. USA: Indiana University Press
- Tyson, Donald (2004) *Familiar Spirits: A Practical Guide For Witches And Magicians*. USA: Llewellyn Publications
- Urquhart, Colin (1987) *Listen and Live*. UK: Hodder & Stoughton
- Vernick, Leslie (2007) *The Emotionally Destructive Relationship: Seeing If, Stopping It, Surviving If*. USA: Harvest House Publishers
- Vetten, Lisa; Budlender, Debbie; Schneider, Vera (2005) *The Price of Protection: Costing the Implementation of the Domestic Violence Act (no 116 of 1998)*. RSA: DSVR Gender Programme, Policy Brief No. 2.
- Wagner, Peter C. (2005) *Freedom From the Religious Spirit: Understanding How Deceptive Religious Forces Try To Destroy God's Plan And Purpose For His Church*. USA: Regal Books.
- Walker, Lenore E. (2000) *The Battered Woman Syndrome*, 2nd Edition. USA: Springer Publishing Company, Inc.
- Walker, Lenore E. (2000) *The Battered Woman Syndrome*, 3rd Edition. USA: Springer Publishing Company, Inc.
- Ward, Tony; Polaschek, Devon; Beech, Anthony R. (2006) *Theories of Sexual Offending*. UK: John Wiley & Sons, Ltd.
- Weiner, Irving B.; Freedheim, Donald K.; Goldstein, Alan M. (2013) *Handbook of Psychology, Forensic Psychology* 2nd Edition, Volume 11. Canada: John Wiley & Sons Inc.
- Weiss, Elaine (2003) *Family & Friend's Guide To Domestic Violence: How To Listen, Talk, and Take Action When Someone You Care About Is Being Abused*. USA: Volcano Press

- Weiss, Elaine (2004) *Surviving Domestic Violence: Voices Of Women Who Broke Free*. USA: Volcano Press
- Weismann, M.M.; Leaf, P.J.; Bruce, L.; Florio, L. (1988) *The Epidemiology of Dysthymia in Five Communities: Rates, Risks, Comorbidity, And Treatment*. USA: American Journal of Psychiatry.
- White, Thomas B. (1990) *The Believer's Guide to Spiritual Warfare*. USA: Regal Books
- White, Thomas B. (2011) *The Believer's Guide to Spiritual Warfare: Wising Up To Satan's Influence In Your World*. USA: Regal Books
- Wiehe, Vernon R. (1998) *Understanding Family Violence: Treating and Preventing Partner, Child, Sibling, and Elder Abuse*. UK: Sage Publications, Inc.
- Wilkenson, Bruce H. (1998) *Victory Over Temptation*. USA: Harvest House Publishers
- Williams, Dave (2002) *The Jezebel Spirit: Freeing Yourself From The Spirit Of Control*. USA: Decapolis Publishing
- Williams, Mary B.; Poijula, Soili (2002) *The PTSD Workbook: Simple, Effective Techniques For Overcoming Traumatic Stress Symptoms*. USA: New Harbinger Publications
- Williams, Pat and Ruth (2009) *Happy Spouse... Happy House: The Best Game Plan For a Winning Marriage*. USA: Tyndale House Publishers
- Woodard, Cheryl A.; Sherman, Charles E. (1995) *Domestic Violence And Abuse: How To Stop It*. Nolo Press Occidental

INTERNET RESOURCES PER CHAPTER

CHAPTER I

- Gallup - Child Abuse: <http://www.gallup.com/poll/139376/Child-Abuse-Underreported-Latin-America.aspx> Retrieved 13/12/12
- Aileen Wournos: <http://www.clarkprosecutor.org/html/death/US/wuornos805.htm> Retrieved 20/1/13
- Amin kills wife: <http://www.imdb.com/name/nm0024907/bio> Retrieved 14/1/13
- Archie Matson: http://www.goodreads.com/author/show/1522296.Archie_Matson Retrieved 28/1/13
- Child Marriage – India: <http://www.cbn.com/cbnnews/world/2012/June/Innocence-Lost-Indias->

- Children-Marrying-at-Age-8/ 30/1/13
- Child Witnesses Testifies again: <http://mg.co.za/article/2009-02-18-child-witnesses-testify-again-in-advocate-barbie-case> Retrieved 19/1/13
- Childwatch: http://www.bbc.co.uk/blogs/pm/2009/03/call_on_the_listener_log_about.shtml
- Crucifixion of Jesus from a medical perspective:
http://www.cbn.com/SpiritualLife/OnlineDiscipleship/easter/A_Physician's_View_of_the_Crucifixion_of_Jesus_Christ.aspx Retrieved 29/1/12
- Dirk Prinsloo: http://www.news24.com/Tags/People/dirk_prinsloo 19/1/13
- Ina Bonette Testify: <http://www.sowetanlive.co.za/news/2012/11/20/ex-wife-of-modimolle-monster-tells-of-torture> Retrieved 15/1/13
- Incest Japan: <http://www.fanfiction.net/s/1852666/3/Motherhood-A-spring-fertility-festival-spinoff/japan> Retrieved 15/12/12
- Indian Proverb: <http://www.vice.com/read/the-a-to-z-of-sexual-history-incest> Retrieved 15/12/12
- Infancy Masturbation: <http://couragec.net/Masturbation.html> Retrieved 15/12/12
- Institut für Kindheit: <http://www.f01.fh-koeln.de/forschung/> Retrieved 15/12/12
- Janine Du Plessis: <http://www.iol.co.za/news/south-africa/one-of-barbie-s-child-victims-kills-herself-1.475539> Retrieved --/12/12
- Jehovah's Witnesses – YHWH: <http://www.apologeticsindex.org/b03.html> Retrieved --/1/13
- Jehovah's Witnesses – YHWH: <http://www.bible.ca/jw-YHWH.htm> Retrieved --/1/13
- Jesus' Last Words: <http://gloryofhiscross.org/whois3.htm> Retrieved --/1/13
- Kleitarchos: <http://www.hope-of-israel.org/p288.htm> Retrieved --/1/13
- Leopold human rights:
https://docs.google.com/document/d/1LZojODZEqBxXldqs3qdLml_TWyeJRJcbH4FYPBI2CE8/edit?hl=en&pli=1 Retrieved 14/12/12
- Louis XIII: <http://blogs.ssrc.org/tif/2012/07/13/placing-childhood-sexual-abuse-in-historical-perspective/> Retrieved 29/1/13
- Mail & Guardian Newspaper: Jacob Zuma Rape Trial. <http://mg.co.za/article/2006-03-21-timeline-of-the-jacob-zuma-rape-trial> Retrieved 14/1/13
- Martha McClintock: <http://imb.uchicago.edu/people/members/mcclintock.shtml>
- Milo: [http://www.en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Milo_\(drink\)](http://www.en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Milo_(drink)) Retrieved 20/1/13
- Moses Dlamini: <http://www.issafrica.org/events/understanding-police-brutality-in-south-africa-challenges-and-solutions> Retrieved --/1/13
- National Geographic Genghis Khan:
http://news.nationalgeographic.com/news/2003/02/0214_030214_genghis_2.html Retrieved 18/1/13
- Police Brutality SA: <http://www.sanews.gov.za/south-africa/modise-condemns-police-brutality> Retrieved 19/1/13
- SAPS Claims Reported in 2011/12 Financial Year:
<http://www.politicsweb.co.za/politicsweb/view/politicsweb/en/page71656?oid=363940&sn=Detail&pid=71656> Retrieved 18/1/13
- SAPS Police Brutality Cases: <http://mg.co.za/article/2013-06-13-one-thousand-cops-arrested-since-1> Retrieved 18/1/13
- Vlad Dracula: http://dracula.cc/vlad_iii_dracula/ Retrieved 10/1/13
- Vlad Dracula: http://www.vladtheimpaler.com/vlad_the_impaler_bio_002.htm Retrieved 10/1/13
- World Health Organization's stats on abortions per annum:

<http://www.worldometers.info/abortions/> Retrieved 19/1/13

Zoroastrians: <http://tenets.parsizoroastrianism.com/zor33.html> Retrieved 1-/1/13

CHAPTER II

Abuse in the Catholic Church: http://usatoday30.usatoday.com/news/religion/2010-06-24-fraud23_ST_N.htm Retrieved --/6/13

Amish ABC News: <http://abcnews.go.com/2020/story?id=316371&page=1> Retrieved --/6/13

Beelzebub's Daughter: http://www.vice.com/en_zs/read/beelzebubs-daughter-0000175-v19n4

Benjamin Crème: <http://beforeitsnews.com/paranormal/2013/05/benjamin-creme-on-how-lord-maitreya-the-world-teacher-will-show-us-the-way-2451318.html> Retrieved --/6/13

Breslav: <http://www.jpost.com/National-News/Nine-Breslav-members-of-alleged-cult-being-held> Retrieved --/7/13

Children for Muti: <http://www.sowetanlive.co.za/news/2012/09/27/snatched-boy-safe> Retrieved --/7/13

Children of God: <http://worldcultwatch.org/children/> Retrieved --/6/13

Congregation of God Sevent Day: <http://www.ajc.com/news/news/cobb-pastor-76-accused-of-child-molestation/nZfrZ/> Retrieved --/6/13

Da Free John: <http://www.culteducation.com/reference/adida/adida1.html> Retrieved --/7/13

David Clohessy: https://www.jesus-is-savior.com/False%20Religions/Roman%20Catholicism/pope-warren_jeffs.htm Retrieved --/6/13

David Koresh: [http://murderpedia.org/male.K/k/koresh-david.htm](http://murderpedia.org/male/K/k/koresh-david.htm) Retrieved --/7/13

Devadasi: <http://www.everychild.org.uk/resources/devadasi/more-about-devadasis> Retrieved --/6/13

Forum Cult: <http://www.win.tue.nl/~aeb/secul/landmark/forum.html> Retrieved --/7/13

Girouex's Wife: <http://www.kcci.com/Wife-Condems-Youth-Pastor-In-Sex-Crimes-Case-/9357770/10378560/-/item/1/-/qj979b/-/index.html> Retrieved --/6/13

<http://amishdarkside.blogspot.com/> Retrieved --/6/13

<http://ewn.co.za/2013/02/05/Sangoma-will-be-prosecuted-for-marriage> Retrieved --/7/13

<http://www.near-death.com/experiences/paranormal01.html> Retrieved --/7/13

http://www.nytimes.com/2010/09/03/us/03amish.html?pagewanted=all&_r=0 Retrieved --/7/13

<http://www.who.int/mediacentre/factsheets/fs241/en/index.html> Retrieved --/7/13

Jehova's Sexual Abuse: <http://www.abqjournal.com/254868/abqnewsseeker/woman-sues-los-lunas-jehovahs-witnesses-claims-sex-abuse.html> Retrieved --/6/13

Jehova's Witness Accused of Sexual Abuse: <http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2400938/Jehovahs-Witness-wife-died-refusing-blood-transfusion-jailed-13-years-child-sex-abuse-covered-religions-elders.html> Retrieved --/6/13

Jerusalem Cult: <http://www.ynetnews.com/articles/0,7340,L-4103442,00.html> Retrieved --/6/13

Little Rascals Day Care Centre Child1:

<http://www.pbs.org/wgbh/pages/frontline/shows/innocence/kelly/andy.html> Retrieved --/6/13

Little Rascals Day Care Centre: <http://www.pbs.org/wgbh/pages/frontline/shows/innocence/>

- kelly/jamie.html Retrieved --/6/13
- Little Rascals Day Care Centre:
<http://www.pbs.org/wgbh/pages/frontline/shows/innocence/kelly/bridget.html> Retrieved --/6/13
- Lord Maitreya : <http://goldenageofgaia.com/2013/05/interview-with-lord-maitreya-concluded-airs-monday/> Retrieved --/6/13
- Ma Jaya: http://www.kashiashram.com/miaminewtimes/2013-05-14_Miami%20New%20Times_Ma%20Jaya%20and%20the%20Cult%20of%20Kashi.pdf Retrieved --/6/13
- Macumbe and Candomblè Abuse Allegations:
<http://www.propheciesofrevelation.org/prayer14.php> Retrieved --/7/13
- Macumbe and Candomblè:
<http://uk.answers.yahoo.com/question/index?qid=20061005195204AAasXT4> Retrieved --/7/13
- Martensville Scandal: <http://www.cbc.ca/fifth/martin/scandal.html> Retrieved --/6/13
- Martial Arts Abuse: <http://apittman.com/blog/teaching/martial-arts-abuse-by-teachers> Retrieved --/6/13
- Mormon Schools Abuse: <http://ldssexchildabuse.blogspot.com/> Retrieved --/6/13
- Mormons Abuse Case: <http://www.nytimes.com/2001/09/05/us/mormons-paying-3-million-to-settle-sex-abuse-case.html> Retrieved --/6/13
- Muti Help Conceive: <http://www.health24.com/Experts/Question/traditional-muti-to-help-to-conceive-20080801> Retrieved --/6/13
- Pastor Child Pornography: <http://www.kmov.com/news/editors-pick/Local-pastor-sentenced-to-federal-prison-for-child-pornography-possession-221813771.html> Retrieved --/6/13
- Pastor claims sex gave sexual purity: <http://www.krmg.com/news/news/local/pastor-claims-sex-boys-gave-them-sexual-purity-eye/nZq6W/> Retrieved --/6/13
- Pope covering up sexual abuse: https://www.jesus-is-savior.com/False%20Religions/Roman%20Catholicism/catholic_criminals.pdf Retrieved --/6/13
- Reverend Ike: <http://dubois.fas.harvard.edu/reverend-ike-1-june-1935-religious-leader-was-born-frederick> Retrieved --/6/13
- Rignano, Italy Satanic abuse: <http://stju.blogspot.com/2007/04/another-satanic-child-abuse-accusation.html> Retrieved --/6/13
- Robert Pardon: <http://absolutewrite.com/forums/archive/index.php/t-122082.html> Retrieved --/6/13
- Sangoma Child Abuse: <http://bulawayo24.com/index-id-news-sc-regional-byo-17851-article-Sangoma+accused+of+sexually+abusing+eight+children+.html> Retrieved --/6/13
- Sangoma Child Sexual Abuse: <http://www.sowetanlive.co.za/news/2013/07/11/sangoma-rapist-sentenced-to-life> Retrieved --/6/13
- Sangoma Escape from jail:
http://www.slate.com/articles/life/dispatches/2012/01/making_sense_of_muti_and_traditional_healing_culture_in_south_africa_.html Retrieved --/6/13
- Sangoma Protection: <http://lestimes.com/?p=359> Retrieved --/6/13
- Satanic Ritual 2011: <http://www.news24.com/SouthAfrica/News/Ritual-victim-paid-for-petrol-20130520> Retrieved --/6/13
- Scientology and Psychology: <http://twentyfirstfloormirror.wordpress.com/2013/02/26/skeptic-news-church-of-scientology-denies-holding-woman-in-isolation/> Retrieved --/6/13
- Sexual Abuse in Catholica Church:

- http://blogs.news.com.au/news/crime/index.php/news/comments/extraordinary_claims_true_catholic_church/#ixzz2eZqj2cAc Retrieved --/6/13
- Spriggs: http://www.cephasministry.com/the_twelve_tribes_sect.html Retrieved --/6/13
- Survey for the US Conference of Catholic Bishops:
<http://www.cnn.com/2004/US/02/16/church.abuse/> Retrieved --/6/13
- Time – Muktananda: <http://content.time.com/time/magazine/article/0,9171,914413,00.html> Retrieved --/6/13
- Twelve Tribes Child Abuse: http://worldnews.nbcnews.com/_news/2013/09/06/20357783-spanking-sect-german-police-seize-40-children-over-suspicion-of-abuse?lite Retrieved --/6/13
- UK Convictions of Satanic Abuse Cases: <http://ukpaedos-exposed.com/childhood-abuses/ritualistic-abuse-in-the-uk/> Retrieved --/6/13
- Youth Pastor Sex Abuse: <http://www.wavy.com/news/local/va-beach/youth-pastor-sentenced-in-sex-abuse-case> Retrieved --/6/13
- Zeena pregnant at 13: http://www.vice.com/en_zs/read/beelzebubs-daughter-0000175-v19n4?Contentpage=2 Retrieved --/6/13

CHAPTER III

- Adapted from and Interview of Dr K Sohail:
http://www.drsohail.com/essays.aspx/essays/abused_husbands Retrieved --/2/13
- Australia Hotline: <http://www.1800respect.org.au/workers/> Retrieved --/2/13
- Australian News – 12 Year Old Prostitute: <http://www.abc.net.au/news/2010-05-10/12yo-prostitutes-mother-segregated-in-jail/429834> Retrieved --/2/13
- Bipolar/Manic Depression:
http://medicalcenter.osu.edu/patientcare/healthcare_services/mental_health/mental_health_about/mood/bipolar_disorder/Pages/index.aspx Retrieved --/3/13
- China Hotline: <http://www.dw.de/domestic-abuse-is-a-private-matter-in-china/a-16657738> Retrieved --/2/13
- India Hotline:
http://article.wn.com/view/2013/06/21/Indian_hotline_for_women_is_flooded_with_reports_of_abuse/#/related_news Retrieved --/2/13

CHAPTER IV

- Istanbul: Chemical Castration:
<http://www.hurriyetdailynews.com/Default.aspx?pageID=238&nid=51953> Retrieved --/8/13
- Kissing it better: <http://www.howstuffworks.com/kissing1.htm> Retrieved --/8/13
- Linda Naidoo on Statistics KZN: <http://www.hst.org.za/news/sex-offence-stats-indict-children> Retrieved --/8/13
- Misandrist: <http://www.thefreedictionary.com/misandrist> Retrieved --/8/13
- Misandrist: <http://www.thefreedictionary.com/misandrist> Retrieved --/8/13

- NSW, Australia Chemical Castration: <http://www.abc.net.au/news/2013-08-11/chemicalcastration-being-considered-for-child-sex-offenders/4878824?section=nsw> Retrieved --/8/13
- Pakistan Hotline: <http://m.aljazeera.com/story/201214172013285591> Retrieved --/8/13
- Poland: Chemical Castration:
<http://www.bmj.com/content/340/bmj.c74?ijkey=rcCG6E9p6AKqY&keytype=ref&siteid=bmjournals> Retrieved --/8/13
- Self-Mutilation Motive: <http://www.articlesbase.com/psychology-articles/self-mutilation-what-it-really-is-1251729.html>
- Self-Mutilation Stats: <http://bpd.about.com/od/understandingbpd/a/selfharm.htm> Retrieved --/8/13
- Sexual Crimes per year in SA: <http://crimestatssa.com/national.php> Retrieved --/8/13
- Sexual Crimes Stats: <http://crimestatssa.com/topten.php> Retrieved --/8/13
- Stats on Prostitutes: <http://iwantrest.com/2013/06/04/the-thing-95-of-women-involved-in-prostitution-report-infographic/> Retrieved --/8/13
- UK Hotline: <http://www.nationaldomesticviolencehelpline.org.uk/> Retrieved --/8/13
- USA Hotline: <http://www.thehotline.org/> Retrieved --/8/13
- WHO Stats on Suicide: <http://beyondhallyu.com/culture/south-korea-the-suicide-capital-of-the-world/> Retrieved --/8/13

CHAPTER V

- Battered Women definition: <http://www.phac-aspc.gc.ca/ncfv-cnivf/publications/femviof-eng.php> Retrieved --/8/13
- Blocking: <http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/blocking> Retrieved --/8/13
- Bullying: <http://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/bullying> Retrieved --/8/13
- Childhood Trauma and Health Risks: <http://www.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/books/NBK64178/> Retrieved --/8/13
- Childhood Trauma and Youth Homelessness:
<http://www.asca.org.au/displaycommon.cfm?an=1&subarticlenbr=201> Retrieved --/8/13
- Christopher Porco: <http://www.dailymail.co.uk/news/article-2296764/Chris-Porco-murdered-parents-ax-successfully-blocks-new-Lifetime-movie.html> Retrieved --/8/13
- Dipendra of Nepal: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Dipendra_of_Nepal#Motive_for_murder Retrieved --/8/13
- Forgiving Sexual Abuser: <http://johnshore.com/2013/03/18/six-things-to-know-about-sexual-abuse-and-forgiveness/> Retrieved --/8/13
- Head Trauma Injuries: <http://www.mayoclinic.com/health/traumatic-brain-injury/DS00552/DSECTION=causes> Retrieved --/8/13
- Kip Kinkel: <http://murderpedia.org/male.K/k/kinkel-kipland.htm> Retrieved --/8/13
- Lee, Joo Y; Cho, Kong S. (2013) Chemical Castration for Sex Offenders: Physicians' Views. Published Online: Journal of Korean Science:
<http://www.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/pmc/articles/PMC3565125/> Retrieved --/8/13
- Lotter Children: <http://www.news24.com/SouthAfrica/News/Nicolette-Lotter-was-programmed-to-kill-20120319> Retrieved --/8/13

- NSW, Australia Chemical Castration: <http://www.abc.net.au/news/2013-08-/chemical-castration-being-considered-for-child-sex-offenders/4878824?section=nsw> Retrieved --/8/13
- Poland: Chemical Castration:
<http://www.bmj.com/content/340/bmj.c74?ijkey=rcCG6E9p6AKqY&keytype=ref&siteid=bmjjournals> Retrieved --/8/13
- Rape Sexual Satisfaction: <http://www.thefinancialexpress-bd.com/index.php?ref=MjBfMDNfMTZfMTNfMV8yN18xNjMzMzMDU=> Retrieved --/8/13
- Sarah Marie Johnson: <http://murderpedia.org/female/J/j/johnson-sarah.htm> Retrieved --/8/13
- Self-Mutilation Motive: <http://www.articlesbase.com/psychology-articles/self-mutilation-what-it-really-is-1251729.html> Retrieved --/8/13
- Self-Mutilation Stats: <http://bpd.about.com/od/understandingbpd/a/selfharm.htm> Retrieved --/8/13
- Stats on Prostitutes: <http://iwantrest.com/2013/06/04/the-thing-95-of-women-involved-in-prostitution-report-infographic/> Retrieved --/8/13
- Stats: <http://www.mayoclinic.com/health/traumatic-brain-injury/DS00552/DSECTION=causes> Retrieved --/8/13
- Survivors of childhood abuse: their reported experiences with professional help:
<http://www.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/pubmed/11329643> Retrieved --/8/13
- The Menendez Brothers:
http://www.trutv.com/library/crime/notorious_murders/famous/menendez/trial_17.html Retrieved --/8/13
- Toru Sakai: http://www.lapdonline.org/all_most_wanted/most_wanted_view/12742 Retrieved --/8/13
- Types of Emotional Abuse of Children: <http://www.teach-through-love.com/types-of-emotional-abuse.html> Retrieved --/8/13
- UK: Chemical Castration: <http://www.theguardian.com/society/2013/jan/18/chemical-castration-soft-option-sex-offenders> Retrieved --/8/13
- What is STD?: <http://whatisstd.net/> Retrieved --/8/13
- WHO Stats on Suicide: <http://beyondhallyu.com/culture/south-korea-the-suicide-capital-of-the-world/> Retrieved --/8/13
- WHO-Depression: <http://www.euro.who.int/en/what-we-do/health-topics/noncommunicable-diseases/mental-health/news/news/2012/10/depression-in-europe/depression-definition> Retrieved --/8/13

CHAPTER V

- Amendment: <http://www.pmg.org.za/docs/2007/071019amaendments.htm> Retrieved --/9/13
- Assault: http://www.saps.gov.za/crimestop/common_offence_definitions.htm Retrieved --/9/13
- Child Definition according to Act of SA:
<http://www.info.gov.za/documents/constitution/1996/a108-96.pdf> Retrieved --/9/13
- CJCP Research: <http://cjcp.skinthecat.co.za/?p=research&s=CJCPData> Retrieved --/9/13
- Crimen Injuria: http://www.saps.gov.za/crimestop/common_offence_definitions.htm Retrieved --/9/13
- Cyber Bullying in Media: <http://www.news24.com/Technology/News/Parents-can-act-over-cyber-bullying-20130814> Retrieved --/9/13

- Cyber Bulling Report: http://www.eoc.org.hk/EOC/Upload/ResearchReport/SH_eFullReport.pdf
Retrieved --/9/13
- Cyber Bullying Cases: <http://america.aljazeera.com/articles/2013/9/12/bullied-12-year-oldusgirlcommits suicide.html> Retrieved --/9/13
- Cyber Bullying Cases: <http://www.foxnews.com/health/2012/01/12/cyber-bullying-highlighted-in-death-year-old-girl/> Retrieved --/9/13
- Cyber Bullying Cases: <http://www.reuters.com/article/2013/08/08/net-us-bullying-idUSBRE9770VZ2013 0808> Retrieved --/9/13
- Cyber Bullying Cases: <http://www.wtop.com/41/3236057/Parents-rally-around-bill-to-protect-children-from-cyberbullying> Retrieved --/9/13
- Cyber Bullying Legislation in SA: http://cyberbullying.ezipezi.com/assets/content-info.php?l_ID=4
Retrieved --/9/13
- Defamation: http://www.saps.gov.za/crimestop/common_offence_definitions.htm Retrieved --/9/13
- Extortion: http://www.saps.gov.za/crimestop/common_offence_definitions.htm Retrieved --/9/13
- Eyewitness News: <http://www.news24.com/SouthAfrica/News/Teacher-sends-boy-naked-pic-of-himself-20131007> Retrieved --/9/13
- Films and Publications Act of SA: <http://www.info.gov.za/view/DownloadFileAction?id=106329>
Retrieved --/9/13
- Indecent Assault: http://www.saps.gov.za/crimestop/common_offence_definitions.htm
Retrieved --/9/13
- Learned Helplessness Theory: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Learned_helplessness Retrieved --/9/13
- Legal Definition Domestic Violence: <http://legal-dictionary.thefreedictionary.com/Domestic+Violence> Retrieved --/9/13
- Lisa Vetten: <http://www.whoswho.co.za/lisa-vetten-5905> Retrieved --/9/13
- Martin Seligman's Experiment Dogs:
<http://psych.hanover.edu/classes/learning/papers/seligman%20maier%201967.pdf>
Retrieved --/9/13
- PTSD Medical Symptoms: <http://www.nimh.nih.gov/health/publications/post-traumatic-stress-disorder-easy-to-read/complete-index.shtml> Retrieved --/9/13
- Statistics Domestic Abuse South Africa: <http://www.womeninaction.co.za/social-affairs/statistics-on-domestic-violence-in-south-africa> Retrieved --/9/13
- Tik: http://www.drugcentre.org.za/druginfo_tik.html Retrieved --/9/13
- Unisa Study: <http://www.unisa.ac.za/Default.asp?Cmd=ViewContent&ContentID=20253>
Retrieved --/9/13

CHAPTER VI

- Achieving Orgasms after Abuse: <http://faithallen.wordpress.com/2008/12/18/reabusing-yourself-to-achieve-orgasm-after-sexual-abuse/> Retrieved --/9/13
- Alp: <http://fuckyeahstrangemythology.tumblr.com/post/30410692270/alp-aka-trud-mar-mart-mahr-schrat-and> Retrieved --/9/13
- Encantado: <http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Encantado> Retrieved --/9/13

- Incubi: http://kingkong82.wix.com/toms-universe-place#!__love-marriage-and-sex
Incubus: http://rationalwiki.org/wiki/Incubus_and_succubus_myths Retrieved --/9/13
Jessica Hahn: <http://www.examiner.com/article/Jessica-hahn-remembers-jim-bakker-scandal-i-don't-call-it-rape-video> Retrieved --/9/13
Joseph Fritzl: <http://www.bbc.co.uk/news/world-europe-22989884> Retrieved --/9/13
Lilu: http://www.jewishvirtuallibrary.org/jsource/judaica/ejud_0002_0013_0_12540.html
Louis Ginzberg: <http://www.piney.com/LegFallAng.html> Retrieved --/9/13
Merlin's Father: <http://www.timelessmyths.com/arthurian/merlin.html> Retrieved --/9/13
Orang Minyak: <http://www.livescience.com/17781-orang-minyak-malaysia.html> Retrieved --/9/13
Pamela Stonebrook: <http://www.thefrisky.com/photos/ghostly-groping-reptilian-romp-sasquatch-assault-6-sexual-encounters-of-the-third-kind/sex-alien-orgasm/> Retrieved --/9/13
Popobawa: <http://demonhunterscompendium.blogspot.com/2011/04/popobawa.html>
Spirit of Division: <http://www.haemet.org/downloads/styled-13/index.html> Retrieved --/9/13
Succubus: <http://www.princeton.edu/~achaney/tmve/wiki100k/docs/Succubus.html> Retrieved --/9/13
Tammy Faye Bakker: http://www.nytimes.com/2007/07/22/us/22bakker.html?_r=0 Retrieved --/9/13
Trauco and Fiura: <http://traditionscustoms.com/strange-traditions/trauco-and-fiura> Retrieved --/9/13

oooOooo



PHILOSOPHIAE DOCTOR

ABBREVIATIONS

Psychological Abbreviations:

AMA – American Medical Association

AMS – Altered Mental State

ANT – Automatic Negative Thoughts

APA – American Psychiatric Association

APA – American Psychological Association

AVB – Analysis of Verbal Behaviour

BH – Behavioural Health

BMP – Behavioural Modification Program

BBC – British Broadcasting Channel

CAMF – Certified Anger Management Facilitator

CAPPS – Council for the Advancement of Psychological Professions and Sciences

CAPS – Clinical Administered PTSD Scale

CBT – Cognitive Behavioural Therapy

CCC – Counselling Code of Conduct

CDI Immediate Recall

CISM Crisis Intervention and Stress Management

COPDAC Conference Of Psychologist Directors In State, Federal, And Territorial
Mental Health Programs

COPPIA Ad Hoc Committee On Promoting Public Interest Activity

CP Community Psychology

CPNA Community Psychiatric Nurses Association

CPO College of Psychologists of Ontario

CPOP Committee On Psychology In Other Professional Schools

CPRS Comprehensive Psychopathological Rating Scale

CPS Child-Pugh Score

CPS Community Psychiatric Service

CPSP Certified Peer Support Provider

CSB Compulsive Sexual Behaviour

CSDD Cornell Scale for Depression in Dementia

CSP Casual Sex partner

CWP Committee On Women In Psychology

DANA Defence Automated Neurobehavioral Assessment

DARP Depression Awareness Research Project

DBA Destroyed By Anger

DD Dual Diagnosis

DDD Deep Dark Depression

EDRA Environmental Design Research Association

EI Emotional Intelligence

EIA	Excessive Inappropriate Aggression
EIBI	Early Intensive Behavioral Intervention
EIBT	Early Intensive Behavioral Treatment
ENTP	Extraversion, Intuition, Thinking, Perception
EOS	Exposure Of Self
FCFT	Family-Centered Functional Therapy
FEAR	False Expectations About Reality
FEAS	Functional Emotional Assessment Scale
HD	Hypersexual Disorder
JASP	Journal Of Abnormal And Social Psychology
JCPP	Journal Of Comparative And Physiological Psychology
JEP	Journal Of Experimental Psychology
JPSP	Journal Of Personality And Social Psychology
JSAS	Journal Supplement Abstract Services
NAMH	National Association For Mental Health
NASP	National Association of School Psychologists
NRC	National Research Council
OCD	Obsessive Compulsive Disorder
PADDs	Paediatric Attention Deficit Disorders Screener
PTSD	Post-Traumatic Stress Disorder
PTSS	Post Traumatic Stress Syndrome

Other Abbreviations:

FGM	Female Genital Mutilation
Dr	Doctor (PhD)
KJV	King James Version
MD	Medical Doctor
NIV	New International Version
NT	New Testament
OT	Old Testament
Prof	Professor
RSA	Republic of South Africa
SB	Sexual Brutality
SBS	Shaken Baby Syndrome
UK	United Kingdom
UN	United Nations
US/USA	United States of America
USD	United States Department of ...
WHO	World Health Organization

i.e. – id est

i.o.w. – in other words

etc. – et cetera (and so on)

% - per cent (percentage)

1st – first

2nd – second

3rd – third



PHILOSOPHIAE DOCTOR

TERMS & DEFINITIONS

Abnormal psychology The area of psychological investigation concerned with understanding the nature of individual pathologies of mind, mood, and behavior.

Acute stress A transient state of arousal with typically clear onset and offset patterns.

Addiction A condition in which the body requires a drug in order to function without physical and psychological reactions to its absence; often the outcome of tolerance and dependence.

Aggression Behaviors that cause psychological or physical harm to another individual.

AIDS Acronym for acquired immune deficiency syndrome, a syndrome caused by a virus that damages the immune system and weakens the body's ability to fight infection.

Ambiguity A perceptual object that may have more than "one interpretation.

Amnesia A failure of memory caused by physical injury, disease, drug use, or psychological trauma.

Anorexia nervosa An eating disorder in which an individual weighs less than 85 % of her or his expected weight but still controls eating because of a self-perception of obesity.

Anxiety An intense emotional response caused by the preconscious recognition that a repressed conflict is about to emerge into consciousness.

Anxiety disorders Mental disorders marked by physiological arousal, feelings of tension, and intense apprehension without apparent reason.

Attachment Emotional relationship between a child and the "regular caregiver.

Behavior The actions by which an organism adjusts to its environment.

Behavior analysis The area of psychology that focuses on the environmental determinants of learning and behavior.

Behavior modification (also behaviour therapy) The systematic use of principles of learning to increase the frequency of desired behaviors and/or decrease the frequency of problem behaviors.

Behavioral data Observational reports about the behavior of organisms and the conditions under which the behavior occurs or changes.

Behavioral rehearsal Procedures used to establish and strengthen basic skills; as used in social-skills training programs, requires the client to rehearse a desirable behavior sequence mentally.

Bipolar disorder A mood disorder characterized by alternating periods of depression and mania.

Body image The subjective experience of the appearance of one's body.

Case study Intensive observation of a particular individual or small group of individuals.

Chronic stress A continuous state of arousal in which an individual perceives demands as greater than the inner and outer resources available for dealing with them.

Client The term used by clinicians who think of psychological disorders as problems in living, and not as mental illnesses, to describe those being treated.

Cognition Processes of knowing, including attending, remembering, and reasoning; also the content of the processes, such as concepts and memories.

Cognitive behavior modification A therapeutic approach that combines the cognitive emphasis on the role of thoughts and attitudes influencing motivations and response with the behavioral emphasis on changing performance through modification of reinforcement contingencies.

Cognitive map A mental representation of physical space.

Cognitive psychology The study of higher mental processes such as attention, language use, memory, perception, problem solving, and thinking.

Consciousness A state of awareness of internal events and of the external environment.

Consensual validation The mutual affirmation of conscious views of reality.

Control procedures Consistent procedures for giving instructions, scoring responses, and holding all other variables constant except those being systematically varied.

Creativity The ability to generate ideas or products that are both novel and appropriate to the circumstances.

Cultural perspective The psychological perspective that focuses on cross-cultural differences in the causes and consequences of behavior.

Date rape Unwanted sexual violation by a social acquaintance in the context of a consensual dating situation.

Declarative memory Memory for information such as facts and events.

Developmental psychology The branch of psychology concerned with interaction between physical and psychological processes and with stages of growth from conception throughout the entire life span.

Discriminative stimuli Stimuli that act as predictors of reinforcement, signaling when particular behaviors will result in positive reinforcement.

Dissociative identity disorder (DID) A dissociative mental disorder in which two or more distinct personalities exist within the same individual; formerly known as multiple personality disorder.

DNA (deoxyribonucleic acid) The physical basis for the transmission of genetic information.

DSM-IV-TR The current diagnostic and statistical manual of the American Psychiatric Association that classifies, defines, and describes mental disorders.

Ego defense mechanisms Mental strategies (conscious or unconscious) used by the ego to defend itself against conflicts experienced in the normal course of life.

Egocentrism In cognitive development, the inability of a young child at the preoperational stage to take the perspective of another person.

EQ The emotional intelligence counterpart of IQ.

Evolutionary perspective The approach to psychology that stresses the importance of behavioral and mental adaptiveness, based on the assumption that mental capabilities evolved over millions of years to serve particular adaptive purposes.

Expectancy effects Results that occur when a researcher or observer subtly communicates to participants the kind of behavior he or she expects to find, thereby creating that expected reaction.

Expectancy theory A cognitive theory of work motivation that proposes that workers are motivated when they expect their efforts and job performance to result in desired outcomes.

Experimental methods Research methodologies that involve the manipulation of independent variables in order to determine their effects on the dependent variables.

Fear A rational reaction to an objectively identified external danger that may induce a person to flee or attack in self-defense.

Fight-or-flight response A sequence of internal activities triggered when an organism is faced with a threat; prepares the body for combat and struggle or for running away to safety; recent evidence suggests that the response is characteristic only of males.

Fixation A state in which a person remains attached to objects or activities more appropriate for an earlier stage of psychosexual development.

Frame A particular description of a choice; the perspective from which a choice is described or framed affects how a decision is made and which option is ultimately exercised.

Gender identity One's sense of maleness or femaleness; usually includes awareness and acceptance of one's biological sex.

Generalized anxiety disorder An anxiety disorder in which an individual feels anxious and worried most of the time for at least six months when not threatened by any specific danger or object.

Genes The biological units of heredity; discrete sections of chromosomes responsible for transmission of traits.

Groupthink The tendency of a decision-making group to filter out undesirable input so that a consensus may be reached, especially if it is in line with the leader's viewpoint.

Hallucinations False perceptions that occur in the absence of objective stimulation.

Health psychology The field of psychology devoted to understanding the ways people stay healthy, the reasons they become ill, and the ways they respond when they become ill.

HIV Human immunodeficiency virus, a virus that attacks white blood cells (T lymphocytes) in human blood, thereby weakening the functioning of the immune system; HIV causes AIDS.

Human behavior genetics The area of study that evaluates the genetic component of individual differences in behaviors and traits.

Humanistic perspective A psychological model that emphasizes an individual's phenomenal world and inherent capacity for making rational choices and developing to maximum potential.

Hypothesis A tentative and testable explanation of the relationship between two (or more) events or variables; often stated as a prediction that a certain outcome will result from specific conditions.

Identification and recognition Two ways of attaching meaning to percepts.

Impulsive aggression Emotion-driven aggression produced in reaction to situations in the "heat of the moment."

Independent construals of self Conceptualization of the self as an individual whose behavior is organized primarily by reference to one's own thoughts, feelings, and actions, rather than by reference to the thoughts, feelings, and actions of others.

Inductive reasoning A form of reasoning in which a conclusion is made about the probability of some state of affairs, based on the available evidence and past experience.

Inferential statistics Statistical procedures that allow researchers to determine whether the results they obtain support their hypotheses or can be attributed just to chance variation.

Judgment The process by which people form opinions, reach conclusions, and make critical evaluations of events and people based on available material; also, the product of that mental activity.

Law of common fate A law of grouping that states that elements moving in the same direction at the same rate are grouped together.

Law of effect A basic law of learning that states that the power of a stimulus to evoke a response is strengthened when the response is followed by a reward and weakened when it is not followed by a reward.

Law of proximity A law of grouping that states that the nearest, or most proximal, elements are grouped together.

Major depressive disorder A mood disorder characterized by intense feelings of depression over an extended time, without the manic high phase of bipolar depression.

Manic episode A component of bipolar disorder characterized by periods of extreme elation, unbounded euphoria without sufficient reason, and grandiose thoughts or feelings about personal abilities.

Memory The mental capacity to encode, store, and retrieve information.

Motivation The process of starting, directing, and maintaining physical and psychological activities; includes mechanisms involved in preferences for one activity over another and the vigor and persistence of responses.

Negative punishment A behavior is followed by the removal of an appetitive stimulus, decreasing the probability of that behavior.

Obsessive-compulsive disorder (OCD) A mental disorder characterized by obsessions-recurrent thoughts, images, or impulses that recur or persist despite efforts to suppress them-and compulsions-repetitive, purposeful acts performed according to certain rules or in a ritualized manner.

Pain The body's response to noxious stimuli that are intense enough to cause, or threaten to cause, tissue damage.

Perceived control The belief that one has the ability to make a difference in the course or the consequences of some event or experience; often helpful in dealing with stressors.

Personality disorder A chronic, inflexible, maladaptive pattern of perceiving, thinking, and behaving that seriously impairs an individual's ability to function in social or other settings.

Physiological dependence The process by which the body becomes adjusted to and dependent on a drug.

Posttraumatic stress disorder (PTSD) An anxiety disorder characterized by the persistent reexperience of traumatic events through distressing recollections, dreams, hallucinations, or dissociative flashbacks; develops in response to rapes, life-threatening events, severe injuries, and natural disasters.

Prejudice A learned attitude toward a target object, involving negative affect (dislike or fear), negative beliefs (stereotypes) that justify the attitude, and a behavioral intention to avoid, control, dominate, or eliminate the target object.

Psychology The scientific study of the behavior of individuals and their mental processes.

Psychotherapy Any of a group of therapies, used to treat psychological disorders, that focus on changing faulty behaviors, thoughts, perceptions, and emotions that may be associated with specific disorders.

Psychotic disorders Severe mental disorders in which a person experiences impairments in reality testing manifested through thought, emotional, or perceptual difficulties; no longer used as a diagnostic category after DSM-III.

Reconstructive memory The process of putting information together based on general types of stored knowledge in the absence of a specific memory representation.

Repression The basic defense mechanism by which painful or guilt-producing thoughts, feelings, or memories are excluded from conscious awareness.

Reversal theory Theory that explains human motivation in terms of reversals from one to the other opposing metamotivational states.

Ritual healing Ceremonies that infuse special emotional intensity and meaning into the healing process

Scientific method The set of procedures used for gathering and interpreting objective information in a way that minimizes error and yields dependable generalizations.

Self-esteem A generalized evaluative attitude toward the self that influences both moods and behavior and that exerts a powerful effect on a range of personal and social behaviors.

Self-perception theory The idea that people observe themselves in order to figure out the reasons they act as they do; people infer what their internal states are by perceiving how they are acting in a given situation.

Sex differences Biologically based characteristics that distinguish males from females.

Sexual arousal The motivational state of excitement and tension brought about by physiological and cognitive reactions to erotic stimuli.

Significant difference A difference between experimental groups or conditions that would have occurred by chance less than an accepted criterion; in

psychology, the criterion most often used is a probability of less than 5 times out of 100, or $p < .05$.

Social development The ways in which individuals' social interactions and expectations change across the life span.

Social intelligence A theory of personality that refers to the expertise people bring to their experience of life tasks.

Social perception The process by which a person comes to know or perceive the personal attributes of himself or herself and other people.

Social psychology The branch of psychology that studies the effect of social variables on individual behavior, attitudes, perceptions, and motives; also studies group and intergroup phenomena.

Stigma The negative reaction of people to an individual or group because of some assumed inferiority or source of difference that is degraded.

Sympathetic division The subdivision of the autonomic nervous system that deals with emergency response and the mobilization of energy.

Systematic desensitization A behavioural therapy technique in which a client is taught to prevent the arousal of anxiety by confronting the feared stimulus while relaxed.

Theory An organized set of concepts that explains a phenomenon or set of phenomena.

Tolerance A situation that occurs with continued use of a drug in which an individual requires greater dosages to achieve the same effect.

Traits Enduring personal qualities or attributes that influence behaviour across situations.

Unconscious The domain of the psyche that stores repressed urges and primitive impulses.

Validity The extent to which a test measures what it was intended to measure.

oooOooo



PHILOSOPHIAE DOCTOR

ABBREVIATIONS

Psychological Abbreviations:

AMA – American Medical Association

AMS – Altered Mental State

ANT – Automatic Negative Thoughts

APA – American Psychiatric Association

APA – American Psychological Association

AVB – Analysis of Verbal Behaviour

BH – Behavioural Health

BMP – Behavioural Modification Program

BBC – British Broadcasting Channel

CAMF – Certified Anger Management Facilitator

CAPPS – Council for the Advancement of Psychological Professions and Sciences

CAPS – Clinical Administered PTSD Scale

CBT – Cognitive Behavioural Therapy

CCC – Counselling Code of Conduct

CDI Immediate Recall

CISM Crisis Intervention and Stress Management

COPDAC Conference Of Psychologist Directors In State, Federal, And Territorial
Mental Health Programs

COPPIA Ad Hoc Committee On Promoting Public Interest Activity

CP Community Psychology

CPNA Community Psychiatric Nurses Association

CPO College of Psychologists of Ontario

CPOP Committee On Psychology In Other Professional Schools

CPRS Comprehensive Psychopathological Rating Scale

CPS Child-Pugh Score

CPS Community Psychiatric Service

CPSP Certified Peer Support Provider

CSB Compulsive Sexual Behaviour

CSDD Cornell Scale for Depression in Dementia

CSP Casual Sex partner

CWP Committee On Women In Psychology

DANA Defence Automated Neurobehavioral Assessment

DARP Depression Awareness Research Project

DBA Destroyed By Anger

DD Dual Diagnosis

DDD Deep Dark Depression

EDRA Environmental Design Research Association

EI Emotional Intelligence

EIA	Excessive Inappropriate Aggression
EIBI	Early Intensive Behavioral Intervention
EIBT	Early Intensive Behavioral Treatment
ENTP	Extraversion, Intuition, Thinking, Perception
EOS	Exposure Of Self
FCFT	Family-Centered Functional Therapy
FEAR	False Expectations About Reality
FEAS	Functional Emotional Assessment Scale
HD	Hypersexual Disorder
JASP	Journal Of Abnormal And Social Psychology
JCPP	Journal Of Comparative And Physiological Psychology
JEP	Journal Of Experimental Psychology
JPSP	Journal Of Personality And Social Psychology
JSAS	Journal Supplement Abstract Services
NAMH	National Association For Mental Health
NASP	National Association of School Psychologists
NRC	National Research Council
OCD	Obsessive Compulsive Disorder
PADDS	Paediatric Attention Deficit Disorders Screener
PTSD	Post-Traumatic Stress Disorder
PTSS	Post Traumatic Stress Syndrome

Other Abbreviations:

FGM	Female Genital Mutilation
Dr	Doctor (PhD)
KJV	King James Version
MD	Medical Doctor
NIV	New International Version
NT	New Testament
OT	Old Testament
Prof	Professor
RSA	Republic of South Africa
SB	Sexual Brutality
SBS	Shaken Baby Syndrome
UK	United Kingdom
UN	United Nations
US/USA	United States of America
USD	United States Department of ...
WHO	World Health Organization

i.e. – id est

i.o.w. – in other words

etc. – et cetera (and so on)

% - per cent (percentage)

1st – first

2nd – second

3rd – third



PHILOSOPHIAE DOCTOR

TERMS & DEFINITIONS

Abnormal psychology The area of psychological investigation concerned with understanding the nature of individual pathologies of mind, mood, and behavior.

Acute stress A transient state of arousal with typically clear onset and offset patterns.

Addiction A condition in which the body requires a drug in order to function without physical and psychological reactions to its absence; often the outcome of tolerance and dependence.

Aggression Behaviors that cause psychological or physical harm to another individual.

AIDS Acronym for acquired immune deficiency syndrome, a syndrome caused by a virus that damages the immune system and weakens the body's ability to fight infection.

Ambiguity A perceptual object that may have more than "one interpretation.

Amnesia A failure of memory caused by physical injury, disease, drug use, or psychological trauma.

Anorexia nervosa An eating disorder in which an individual weighs less than 85 % of her or his expected weight but still controls eating because of a self-perception of obesity.

Anxiety An intense emotional response caused by the preconscious recognition that a repressed conflict is about to emerge into consciousness.

Anxiety disorders Mental disorders marked by physiological arousal, feelings of tension, and intense apprehension without apparent reason.

Attachment Emotional relationship between a child and the "regular caregiver.

Behavior The actions by which an organism adjusts to its environment.

Behavior analysis The area of psychology that focuses on the environmental determinants of learning and behavior.

Behavior modification (also behaviour therapy) The systematic use of principles of learning to increase the frequency of desired behaviors and/or decrease the frequency of problem behaviors.

Behavioral data Observational reports about the behavior of organisms and the conditions under which the behavior occurs or changes.

Behavioral rehearsal Procedures used to establish and strengthen basic skills; as used in social-skills training programs, requires the client to rehearse a desirable behavior sequence mentally.

Bipolar disorder A mood disorder characterized by alternating periods of depression and mania.

Body image The subjective experience of the appearance of one's body.

Case study Intensive observation of a particular individual or small group of individuals.

Chronic stress A continuous state of arousal in which an individual perceives demands as greater than the inner and outer resources available for dealing with them.

Client The term used by clinicians who think of psychological disorders as problems in living, and not as mental illnesses, to describe those being treated.

Cognition Processes of knowing, including attending, remembering, and reasoning; also the content of the processes, such as concepts and memories.

Cognitive behavior modification A therapeutic approach that combines the cognitive emphasis on the role of thoughts and attitudes influencing motivations and response with the behavioral emphasis on changing performance through modification of reinforcement contingencies.

Cognitive map A mental representation of physical space.

Cognitive psychology The study of higher mental processes such as attention, language use, memory, perception, problem solving, and thinking.

Consciousness A state of awareness of internal events and of the external environment.

Consensual validation The mutual affirmation of conscious views of reality.

Control procedures Consistent procedures for giving instructions, scoring responses, and holding all other variables constant except those being systematically varied.

Creativity The ability to generate ideas or products that are both novel and appropriate to the circumstances.

Cultural perspective The psychological perspective that focuses on cross-cultural differences in the causes and consequences of behavior.

Date rape Unwanted sexual violation by a social acquaintance in the context of a consensual dating situation.

Declarative memory Memory for information such as facts and events.

Developmental psychology The branch of psychology concerned with interaction between physical and psychological processes and with stages of growth from conception throughout the entire life span.

Discriminative stimuli Stimuli that act as predictors of reinforcement, signaling when particular behaviors will result in positive reinforcement.

Dissociative identity disorder (DID) A dissociative mental disorder in which two or more distinct personalities exist within the same individual; formerly known as multiple personality disorder.

DNA (deoxyribonucleic acid) The physical basis for the transmission of genetic information.

DSM-IV-TR The current diagnostic and statistical manual of the American Psychiatric Association that classifies, defines, and describes mental disorders.

Ego defense mechanisms Mental strategies (conscious or unconscious) used by the ego to defend itself against conflicts experienced in the normal course of life.

Egocentrism In cognitive development, the inability of a young child at the preoperational stage to take the perspective of another person.

EQ The emotional intelligence counterpart of IQ.

Evolutionary perspective The approach to psychology that stresses the importance of behavioral and mental adaptiveness, based on the assumption that mental capabilities evolved over millions of years to serve particular adaptive purposes.

Expectancy effects Results that occur when a researcher or observer subtly communicates to participants the kind of behavior he or she expects to find, thereby creating that expected reaction.

Expectancy theory A cognitive theory of work motivation that proposes that workers are motivated when they expect their efforts and job performance to result in desired outcomes.

Experimental methods Research methodologies that involve the manipulation of independent variables in order to determine their effects on the dependent variables.

Fear A rational reaction to an objectively identified external danger that may induce a person to flee or attack in self-defense.

Fight-or-flight response A sequence of internal activities triggered when an organism is faced with a threat; prepares the body for combat and struggle or for running away to safety; recent evidence suggests that the response is characteristic only of males.

Fixation A state in which a person remains attached to objects or activities more appropriate for an earlier stage of psychosexual development.

Frame A particular description of a choice; the perspective from which a choice is described or framed affects how a decision is made and which option is ultimately exercised.

Gender identity One's sense of maleness or femaleness; usually includes awareness and acceptance of one's biological sex.

Generalized anxiety disorder An anxiety disorder in which an individual feels anxious and worried most of the time for at least six months when not threatened by any specific danger or object.

Genes The biological units of heredity; discrete sections of chromosomes responsible for transmission of traits.

Groupthink The tendency of a decision-making group to filter out undesirable input so that a consensus may be reached, especially if it is in line with the leader's viewpoint.

Hallucinations False perceptions that occur in the absence of objective stimulation.

Health psychology The field of psychology devoted to understanding the ways people stay healthy, the reasons they become ill, and the ways they respond when they become ill.

HIV Human immunodeficiency virus, a virus that attacks white blood cells (T lymphocytes) in human blood, thereby weakening the functioning of the immune system; HIV causes AIDS.

Human behavior genetics The area of study that evaluates the genetic component of individual differences in behaviors and traits.

Humanistic perspective A psychological model that emphasizes an individual's phenomenal world and inherent capacity for making rational choices and developing to maximum potential.

Hypothesis A tentative and testable explanation of the relationship between two (or more) events or variables; often stated as a prediction that a certain outcome will result from specific conditions.

Identification and recognition Two ways of attaching meaning to percepts.

Impulsive aggression Emotion-driven aggression produced in reaction to situations in the "heat of the moment."

Independent construals of self Conceptualization of the self as an individual whose behavior is organized primarily by reference to one's own thoughts, feelings, and actions, rather than by reference to the thoughts, feelings, and actions of others.

Inductive reasoning A form of reasoning in which a conclusion is made about the probability of some state of affairs, based on the available evidence and past experience.

Inferential statistics Statistical procedures that allow researchers to determine whether the results they obtain support their hypotheses or can be attributed just to chance variation.

Judgment The process by which people form opinions, reach conclusions, and make critical evaluations of events and people based on available material; also, the product of that mental activity.

Law of common fate A law of grouping that states that elements moving in the same direction at the same rate are grouped together.

Law of effect A basic law of learning that states that the power of a stimulus to evoke a response is strengthened when the response is followed by a reward and weakened when it is not followed by a reward.

Law of proximity A law of grouping that states that the nearest, or most proximal, elements are grouped together.

Major depressive disorder A mood disorder characterized by intense feelings of depression over an extended time, without the manic high phase of bipolar depression.

Manic episode A component of bipolar disorder characterized by periods of extreme elation, unbounded euphoria without sufficient reason, and grandiose thoughts or feelings about personal abilities.

Memory The mental capacity to encode, store, and retrieve information.

Motivation The process of starting, directing, and maintaining physical and psychological activities; includes mechanisms involved in preferences for one activity over another and the vigor and persistence of responses.

Negative punishment A behavior is followed by the removal of an appetitive stimulus, decreasing the probability of that behavior.

Obsessive-compulsive disorder (OCD) A mental disorder characterized by obsessions-recurrent thoughts, images, or impulses that recur or persist despite efforts to suppress them-and compulsions-repetitive, purposeful acts performed according to certain rules or in a ritualized manner.

Pain The body's response to noxious stimuli that are intense enough to cause, or threaten to cause, tissue damage.

Perceived control The belief that one has the ability to make a difference in the course or the consequences of some event or experience; often helpful in dealing with stressors.

Personality disorder A chronic, inflexible, maladaptive pattern of perceiving, thinking, and behaving that seriously impairs an individual's ability to function in social or other settings.

Physiological dependence The process by which the body becomes adjusted to and dependent on a drug.

Posttraumatic stress disorder (PTSD) An anxiety disorder characterized by the persistent reexperience of traumatic events through distressing recollections, dreams, hallucinations, or dissociative flashbacks; develops in response to rapes, life-threatening events, severe injuries, and natural disasters.

Prejudice A learned attitude toward a target object, involving negative affect (dislike or fear), negative beliefs (stereotypes) that justify the attitude, and a behavioral intention to avoid, control, dominate, or eliminate the target object.

Psychology The scientific study of the behavior of individuals and their mental processes.

Psychotherapy Any of a group of therapies, used to treat psychological disorders, that focus on changing faulty behaviors, thoughts, perceptions, and emotions that may be associated with specific disorders.

Psychotic disorders Severe mental disorders in which a person experiences impairments in reality testing manifested through thought, emotional, or perceptual difficulties; no longer used as a diagnostic category after DSM-III.

Reconstructive memory The process of putting information together based on general types of stored knowledge in the absence of a specific memory representation.

Repression The basic defense mechanism by which painful or guilt-producing thoughts, feelings, or memories are excluded from conscious awareness.

Reversal theory Theory that explains human motivation in terms of reversals from one to the other opposing metamotivational states.

Ritual healing Ceremonies that infuse special emotional intensity and meaning into the healing process

Scientific method The set of procedures used for gathering and interpreting objective information in a way that minimizes error and yields dependable generalizations.

Self-esteem A generalized evaluative attitude toward the self that influences both moods and behavior and that exerts a powerful effect on a range of personal and social behaviors.

Self-perception theory The idea that people observe themselves in order to figure out the reasons they act as they do; people infer what their internal states are by perceiving how they are acting in a given situation.

Sex differences Biologically based characteristics that distinguish males from females.

Sexual arousal The motivational state of excitement and tension brought about by physiological and cognitive reactions to erotic stimuli.

Significant difference A difference between experimental groups or conditions that would have occurred by chance less than an accepted criterion; in

psychology, the criterion most often used is a probability of less than 5 times out of 100, or $p < .05$.

Social development The ways in which individuals' social interactions and expectations change across the life span.

Social intelligence A theory of personality that refers to the expertise people bring to their experience of life tasks.

Social perception The process by which a person comes to know or perceive the personal attributes of himself or herself and other people.

Social psychology The branch of psychology that studies the effect of social variables on individual behavior, attitudes, perceptions, and motives; also studies group and intergroup phenomena.

Stigma The negative reaction of people to an individual or group because of some assumed inferiority or source of difference that is degraded.

Sympathetic division The subdivision of the autonomic nervous system that deals with emergency response and the mobilization of energy.

Systematic desensitization A behavioural therapy technique in which a client is taught to prevent the arousal of anxiety by confronting the feared stimulus while relaxed.

Theory An organized set of concepts that explains a phenomenon or set of phenomena.

Tolerance A situation that occurs with continued use of a drug in which an individual requires greater dosages to achieve the same effect.

Traits Enduring personal qualities or attributes that influence behaviour across situations.

Unconscious The domain of the psyche that stores repressed urges and primitive impulses.

Validity The extent to which a test measures what it was intended to measure.

oooOooo



PHILOSOPHIAE DOCTOR

LIST OF FIGURES

Document Logo Design:

<http://www.bing.com/images/search?q=child+abuse+shadow&go=&qs=ds&form=QBLH>

Prolegomena Cover Page:

<http://www.bing.com/images/search?q=bubbles+illusions&go=&qs=ds&form=QBIR#view=detail&id=600D3F51D3A685B89790E367A22B6654EC501306&selectedIndex=15>

Chapter I Cover Page:

<http://www.bing.com/images/search?q=bubbles+illusions&go=&qs=ds&form=QBIR#view=detail&id=2EBD9BD76C7AA79C604F6C121930A9BC731889E9&selectedIndex=94>

Chapter I Contents

Nero 5th Emperor of Rome: http://www.bbc.co.uk/history/historic_figures/nero.shtml

Vlad the Impaler: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Vlad_the_Impaler

King Of France, Louis XIII: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Louis_xiii

Genghis Khan: https://www.google.co.za/search?q=genghis+khan&es_sm=93&source=lnms&tbm=isch&sa=X&ei=uRdVUrK-GMnx4QS064DwAw&ved=0CAkQ_AUoAQ&biw=1366&bih=667&dpr=1#facrc=_&imgdii=_&imgsrc=tlyfPFH2GNpjmM%3A%3Bj it8M 3rDovgrIM%3Bhttp%253A%252F%252Ffieldmuseum.org%252Fsites%252Fdefault%252Ffiles%252Fstyles%252Farticle-original-aspect%252Fpublic%252F Genghis_Khan_ThronePortrait.jpg%253Fitok%253D7Tmj9CfF%3Bhttp%253A%252F%252Ffieldmuseum.org%252Fhappening%252Fexhibits%252Fgenghis-khan%3B393%3B384

Leopold II of Belgium:

https://www.google.co.za/search?q=leopold+ii+of+belgiumes_sm=93&source=lnms&tbm=isch&sa=X&ei=eBhVUp_aMMjKtAaU9IDYAQ&ved=0CAkQ_AUoAQ&biw=1366&bih=667&dpr=1#facrc=_&imgdii=_&imgsrc=Rt_kCEvHpDxMLM%3A%3BYPYO kbq9DwHa2M%3Bhttp%253A%252F%252Fupload.wikimedia.org%252Fwikipedia%252Fcommons%252F3%252F39%252FLeopold_ii_garter_knight.jpg%3Bhttp%253A%252F%252Fen.wikipedia.org%252Fwiki%252FLeopold_II_of_Belgium%3B695%3B1041

Josef Mengele:

https://www.google.co.za/search?q=josef+mengele&es_sm=93&source=lnms&tbm=isch&sa=X&ei=7RhVUp-EOYiMtAbBw4HoBQ&ved=0CAkQ_AUoAQ&biw=1366&bih=667&dpr=1#imgdii=_

Mengele's twins:

https://www.google.co.za/search?q=mengele+medical+experiments&es_sm=93&tbm=isch&tbo=u&source=univ&sa=X&ei=hhpVUuneBozEtAaVxYHoAg&ved=0CCsQsAQ&biw=1366&bih=667&dpr=1#facrc=_&imgdii=_&imgsrc=yFffJW3mJ41cGM%3A%3BfX-sEG8LA7O81M%3Bhttp%253A%252F%252Fb68389.media.lib.glogster.com%252Fmedia%252F717e33c67929bc1d24c2f68448eab95fd517bf8fa37a5093ba3e085d16840072%252Ftwins.jpg%3Bhttp%253A%252F%252Fwww.glogster.com%252Fmaddiealex%252Fmedical-experiments-of-the-holocaust-with-dr-mengele%252Fg-6lmejie1shtam6on62h67a0%3B640%3B435

Idi Amin Dada: <http://www.biography.com/people/idi-amin-9183487>

Aileen Wournos: <http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/File:Wuornos.jpg>

Cezanne Visser & Dirk Prinsloo: <http://www.galloimages.co.za/image/south-africa-gaut-eng-pretoria-cezanne-visser/666641/1>

Advocate Barbie: <http://www.thenewage.co.za/mobi/Detail.aspx?NewsID=10228&CatID=1007>

Modimole Monster: <http://www.news24.com/SouthAfrica/News/Modimolle-Monster-to-know-fate-soon-20130712>

New Delhi Bus Rape: <http://www.ndtv.com/article/cities/gang-rape-on-a-delhi-bus-victim-fights-for-life-police-track-down-the-bus-306378>

New Delhi Bus Rape Victim: <http://www.elayneclift.com/?cat=29>

Anene Booysen Accused: https://www.google.co.za/search?q=anene+booyesen&es_sm=93&source=lnms&tbm=isch&sa=X&ei=vyFVUqHsOliMtAbBw4HoBQ&ved=0CAkQ_AUoAQ&biw=1366&bih=667&dpr=1#facrc=_&imgdii=_&imgsrc=ds1oju7tBrD3HM%3A%3BevmL6zdG2nMdJM%3Bhttp%253A%252F%252Fcdn.24.co.za%252Ffiles%252FCms%252FGeneral%252Fd%252F2515%252Fba69397131a5437695c160dee3b63e6e.jpg%3Bhttp%253A%252F%252Fwww.news24.com%252FSouthAfrica%252FNews%252FAnene-Booyesen-murder-trial-to-start-20131007%3B300%3B370

Chapter II Contents

David Berg: http://www.xfamily.org/images/b/b4/David-berg-tk-SHW_57C.PCX.jpg

David Koresh:

<http://www.bing.com/images/search?q=david+koresh&FORM=HDRSC2#view=detail&id=FFBB4F1BD9CFA37CB6EA9B6DBFA58A058F676A86&selectedIndex=50>

Mormon Family:

<http://www.bing.com/images/search?q=mormons+polygamy&go=&qs=ds&form=QBIR#view=detail&id=C724A3F9F3FFD41D77B6EE2E40538FB7B7645DA5&selectedIndex=13>

The Utah Boys Ranch:

<http://www.bing.com/images/search?q=the+utah+boys+ranch&FORM=HDRSC2#vi>

ew=detail&id=E9B17E038F27E6052F3D85C4DD0B2A4BEA8C651B&selectedIndex=6

Sangoma:

<http://www.bing.com/images/search?q=sangoma&go=&qs=ds&form=QBIR#view=detail&id=D60A177B6629D0653F92ED174C8C38D41D6C34B8&selectedIndex=19>

Sangoma at Hut:

<http://www.bing.com/images/search?q=south+african+sangoma&FORM=HDRSC2#view=detail&id=F0B2CC73D512E371A522C7EDBA8C4A09C694E8B1&selectedIndex=87>

Scientology:

<http://www.bing.com/images/search?q=scientology&go=&qs=ds&form=QBIR#view=detail&id=A30DE8E8E3CF63EF48252252E2979A8C8D88D5C2&selectedIndex=6>

Roman Catholic:

<http://www.bing.com/images/search?q=roman+catholic&go=&qs=ds&form=QBIR#view=detail&id=16E9CB3C4434D537D78C14F7F4AA273960CA5AC8&selectedIndex=8>

Da free John:

<http://www.bing.com/images/search?q=da+free+john&go=&qs=ds&form=QBIR#view=detail&id=7FA40A8402E72EF2DFDE5BC0E4E08C6B55BB38DE&selectedIndex=3>

Twelve Tribes Leader:

<http://www.bing.com/images/search?q=Elbert+Eugene+Spriggs&go=&qs=ds&form=QBIR#view=detail&id=A23F064C99AC28983C752F11C2A2AFD9792B1DB1&selectedIndex=0>

Zeena Schrek:

<http://www.bing.com/images/search?q=zeena+schrek&FORM=HDRSC2#view=detail&id=BE73393C13CF251BCCB288DCEEFFCF9C4367A129&selectedIndex=10>

David Nelson:

<http://www.bing.com/images/search?q=david+nelson+jehova+witness&go=&qs=ds>

&form=QBIR#view=detail&id=B0F45565DE78AD45D167972DBE09F11B56156F00&selectedIndex=0

Muktananda Paramahansa:

<http://www.bing.com/images/search?q=Muktananda+Paramahansa&FORM=HDRSC2#view=detail&id=4F258C6956641551E2E9044068288D774FABB0DB&selectedIndex=6>

Ma Jaya:

<http://www.bing.com/images/search?q=ma+jaya&go=&qs=ds&form=QBIR#view=detail&id=CECC055634A0019920B41FE6B100C2FD107F6C40&selectedIndex=2>

Rev Ike:

<http://www.bing.com/images/search?q=rev+ike&go=&qs=ds&form=QBIR#view=detail&id=226C73D522C987249C363DC8C1564F7924DBB2AF&selectedIndex=10>

Australian Aborigine Ritual:

<http://www.bing.com/images/search?q=Australian+Mardudjara+Aborigines&FORM=HDRSC2#view=detail&id=056DFAD474E9CA97D8698D870E2012010EE27957&selectedIndex=9>

Torah Bontrager:

<http://www.bing.com/images/search?q=Torah+Bontrager&FORM=HDRSC2#view=detail&id=263EABEBC1BE2656B5B8224878A4A2C8C456535D&selectedIndex=3>

Mary Byler:

<http://www.bing.com/images/search?q=mary+byler&FORM=HDRSC2#view=detail&id=B3BBC8BAA7DFE8F381F81F839AF47B2B1C7FB05F&selectedIndex=2>

FGM:

<http://www.bing.com/images/search?q=female+genital+mutilation&FORM=HDRSC2#view=detail&id=9A3E496962AB34E31E4BE5521485235912318A0D&selectedIndex=60>

Pastor Vatterott:

<http://www.bing.com/images/search?q=Father+William+Vatterott&FORM=HDRSC2#view=detail&id=A7EFC49FE611D9EA2F8D6378F8D1DA4726CA847F&selectedIndex=1>

Brent Girouex:

<http://www.bing.com/images/search?q=Brent+Girouex&FORM=HDRSC2#view=detail&id=43C4C8F690C7EA13FE2A2B717B07D171F522F058&selectedIndex=0>

Chapter III Cover Page: <http://www.bing.com/?scope=images&FORM=Z9LH1>

Chapter IV Cover Page: <http://www.bing.com/?scope=images&FORM=Z9LH1>

Chapter V Cover Page: <http://www.bing.com/?scope=images&FORM=Z9LH1>

Chapter VI Cover Page: <http://www.bing.com/?scope=images&FORM=Z9LH1>

Conclusion Cover Page: <http://www.bing.com/?scope=images&FORM=Z9LH1>